

# Reflections on Faith

Todd M. Anderson

Published by Todd M. Anderson, 2020.

While every precaution has been taken in the preparation of this book, the publisher assumes no responsibility for errors or omissions, or for damages resulting from the use of the information contained herein.

## REFLECTIONS ON FAITH

**First edition. November 6, 2020.**

Copyright © 2020 Todd M. Anderson.

ISBN: 978-1386096771

Written by Todd M. Anderson.

## Also by Todd M. Anderson

### **Reflections on Faith**

Believe  
Connections  
Garden of Harmonies  
King and Prophet  
Kingdom Building  
Light Scholars  
Never Give In  
Paradise  
Personality Program  
Super Conscious  
The Light and Filament  
The Way of Man  
Universal Records

### **Theater of Everyday Life**

Mirrors for Reflection  
The Anti-Personality  
The Battle Between Good and Evil

Competitive

**Standalone**

Reflections on Faith





## **Section One - Self and Spirit**

### *Exploring Personal Spirituality*

# **The Filament Above the Waters Meditation Technique**



The Filament Above the Waters Meditation Technique is a meditation technique that begins a slow process through which meditators can connect with the Holy Father in their lifetime. It does not exist as an easy answer to how we can connect to the universes; instead, it reveals how to actively participate in a conversation with the heavens. Connecting with the universes is an upward-pulling feeling that allows the spirit to rebalance itself. The ultimate aspect of this rebalancing is joining God at the universe's center—the apex that is an eye in which no chaos follows, much like the eye of a hurricane. Different levels of alertness and awareness exist outside the eye, but in the apex, there is stillness with the heavens.

*Filament above the Waters Meditation Technique*

- Visualize the potential energy from the nervous system up through the spine and into the brain stem. Pause for 3–5 seconds.
- Once the reserve energy is at the brain stem, visualize lightning bolts liberating the energy in the brain.
- Visualize this freeing up energy trapped in the nervous system, allowing the brain to use it to strengthen weaknesses.
- Shift your focus from lightning bolts to a ball of energy in the center of the mind.
- The ball of energy should grow to a size stable for yourself. This sun is then the *filament above the waters*.

- Visualize the sun in your mind while guiding yourself to the center of the universe.

# Light Scholars

The sun is a source of light. It is a gaseous star that compresses the particles, forcing them to combine and allowing light to escape (depending on the star). The light itself, though, is still a topic for debate since it is not new but ageless. Universes constantly move and change according to gravity, the space-time field, and light. Not only is the resonance of light in the matter it was created from, but also it includes the experience it has had. Stars are not only responsible for the light we see, but they also create it. Light is far older than the stars in our universes or even the whole conceivable notion of a live person's point of view. We have the ability to study light, but it is not easily broken down—it's conceivable that if we were able to do so, the earth would fracture and be heated to scorching temperatures. However, don't be concerned about being destroyed by light or melting away.

You're probably wondering why light, which is eternal and present throughout the universe, would have anything to do with how an individual perceives it. I understand your confusion because people generally don't talk about this sort of thing—it's simply the cycle we live: breathing in and out, day after day. The universe was created through humanity's imagination—God didn't come along after the Big Bang and create us from our parents' genetic material. Instead, we were creations of His own design. You need to look at your life like a person who has been given the gift of choice. Look at it this way: God planned all things, meaning that we have certain expectations for our own lives. It's about how we weren't always around, after all. Yes, it might not give

you the answers you're looking for right now, but when you think about the future of light, you will find those answers. We understand that souls progress.

If you answer to God, then your soul will most likely befriend you. The prayers we offer make each of us have a softer outlook, and the more peaceful we become, the more light we have to embrace God. Do you understand where this is going? God is using light to lead us to him, and we are his children. Perhaps the light took on various shapes before coming here. Humans will progress through God's prayers and light to change us as a people.

Discussing resonating frequencies in the soul is fun. Feelings of immortality overcome us at different points in our lives—forgetting about God because we think we can do this life alone lets us try or fail, and it will be a downfall, regardless. The failure is, in a sense, how Satan began. Follow in those unescapable footsteps and grasp how pain is recycled through oneself to others. This doesn't always work out for you.

If a scholar wishes to understand the soul's frequencies, it is best for them to consider how freedom is given through God. We may not always share the same ideas about who God is, but we can often agree that He brings us relief from pain. This pain blockage prevents us from living and reacting in healthy ways. We often use our free will to prevent pain, but if we can embrace the light, we can eliminate that pain.

People want to have a measured frequency under some control, but they need to give power to God, and he provides the medicine. In this story, the treatment is

laughter or love. However, you must decide to embrace the warmth surrounding the relationship between God and yourself. When you feel that God has a relationship with you and provides this light that unblocks or removes your pain, you might wonder if that's real, and the question is fair. But let us look past this question to something a bit different.

The day is long, and the hour is longer. It may feel like work drags on and on. How this perception of our lives affect anything with God? Well, our evolution comes from the work we put in for building God's kingdom. We might infer that he gives us the time here on Earth to help evolve his kingdom in that space of thought, and with that in mind, how would you use your time today? If you had to develop and help build a kingdom, would it feel the same as working long hours? The perception of how you best spend your day is different with that understanding, correct?

Therefore, we ask a whole different way to understand the relationship with light if we see it as provided to remove pain. Light gives us time. The light and the time we have aren't immortal—they are finite. Additionally, we might think of pain and suffering in a way that doesn't resonate with God. You see, when we ask God to heal our pain, he might provide opportunities, and he will when we offer up the pain to his control. Regardless, he might give us opportunities to heal the pain in a weak and rather crude way to begin. When we think of ourselves as immortal, then we must start healing with other

people in mind. How we treat other people is the way to a relationship with God if we still act immortal.

Other people in our lives then challenge the immortal feeling that displaces us from God. It is not his kingdom you may experience, but none the less it is something of an eye-opener. Trust in the people who are honest with you. That is where you will find the pain you block out. That is where you are recycling pain into the world on other people. That is where God lives in the space of his kingdom at that moment.

The present day is not forever. It is our perception, and that perception depends on where we are in space and how and which light is attached to us. The present is nothing but a sense that time is frozen. But alas, this way of seeing is not correct. Time is not frozen. Consciousness is not solely in the present. That idea seems to support an immortal mindset. Understand that one's perspective is an individual experience—the future and past combine and overlap for you to feel conscious.

God is indeed the beginning of everything. Your perspective should shift to his loving embrace; that is the next idea from the resonance of light. The resonance of light is just a fabric of space-time created within itself. The gravity of the situation is just the shape or topology of light. That said, the peaks and where we are attached to the universes comprise our perspective. That perspective has limitations. God does not. He is not within the light and that domain of space-time fabric. He sees it differently than light. He sees our thoughts and how they

twist around and bend and shift to create a space of our self.

Take a moment and let that digest. God sees us not from the outside, looking at ourselves as light—he sees us as light scholars, bent in thoughts that create the moment. How is this different? How is the present moment different from how it is explained before? God is experiencing us in his love and guidance. That's why it is different. The present is not about us. It is about the bends and shifts of our topologies of thought and the vibration that thought pattern looks like to God.

God can read what we think. There is no fooling God. He knows before we know what we do. He can guide us out of the pain that we create patterns with and find ourselves deciding on. He changes and challenges us to inform us of what we can provide to the world in his kingdom. Understanding the topology of thought from God's perspective is awkward, and we might have to strive to look at and reflect on this freedom. Yet scholars in the future might be able to understand this topic better. I repeat, we imagine the pain in our topology of thought, and we run between ideas like a tract of nervous behavior or links in the neural cortex. Either way, we are chained to our reasoning and feel better when we don't stress the painful moments in life. But the pain can drive us as we bend and twist in our perspectives of life. This is probably why when God enters, he may feel awkwardly distant or foreign to a person.

The new you is being recorded in life's dimensionless heavens by angels. The progress that is made is good. The



light that pervades our thoughts and love is something that reverberates in us. Just think—only a tiny amount of light that comes into our soul gives us enough of a chance to bring us back to heaven in our moment of physical death. The symbolic exchange of life to death frees the constraints of the body, yet we still understand the pain we encountered in life, and it is a memory that still is around in heaven. However, heaven is optimistic about shining through us more often while our souls are liberated.

Now that God is introduced and is working in our frequencies on Earth, life is not entirely extinguished. We can still move forward with the narrative of how to evolve into future scholars. Future scholars will become associated with healing. The healing is in the heart of the vessels that correspond with each other. It is that the feeling of love and transcendence forgives others around those future scholars. Understand we are also here for other people on Earth. If we have begun to assimilate the kingdom of heaven on Earth, we need to bring others relief. I don't understand the need that drives them to do what they eventually do if it is painful, but they do it anyway. Often it is not because they themselves desire the action, but because others suggest or push them.

The knowledge that comes out of this is sacrificial. You will not oppose God. You may feel like you are losing out on fun times, but readily ask yourself and God, your conscious, if in these moments of indecision there is anything to gain. The gains may be small but still worth doing. How can you tell? Ah, that's the age-old

question of life—how to live life with freedom and not be hurt. These ideas are crucial to discuss. I believe God sees us in our thought patterns and allows us growth. He doesn't tell us necessarily to do anything unless it is against sinful actions. We draw a line for God that we maintain healthy boundaries in life, and if there are boundaries, crossing them is not worth it to anger God. Knowing what lessons God wants us to learn to heal ourselves is not from acts of violence. Inflicting pain readily on other people is not in the heart of God. Therefore, it does no good to establish his kingdom on Earth, and he does not tolerate these acts of violence against other people.

The boundary with people is not so significant that no one can prevail. Life is meant for growth. If you follow your conscience, God will befriend you. This is normal. It may take some time to leave the immortal personality to let God control your life. Looking at it from God's perspective and readily asking for future scholars to understand where he comes into the picture, God is asking us questions.

I say that again because it is crucial. God sees our light bent and twisted into a frequency and questions it in his love like we are children. He sees this and that and asks why or how we are to arrange a better lifestyle. Then our spirit answers back. This form of conscious communication is expected even if we do not know it is God talking. If you ever feel that God is not talking back and you're being told angry thoughts in your head, the ser-

pent may be interfering. Anger is easily picked up on if God is in your life.

So, we come to a crossroads. Do we want to understand God and form a relationship? Or are we driven by the immortal ideas of the serpent and cause ourselves and others more pain? This is not as easily answered as you might think.

How does God transform the light by examining our souls and questioning us if we want to move forward to reduce pain and create a heavenly lifestyle? The light that is transformed is of God. He is in us and revolves around each of us. You would think that He would not be a satellite as such, but He is. He is not the center of the universe while we move around it. He is more like a moving idea that shifts and balances the universe to echo spirit between people. Like waves on the ocean, God ripples along the paths of people in humor and laughter. Humor and laughter echo in our light and shift upon the light in us. The light then is immersed in His patterns, yet it is held together in our memories. Why do we not just totally adapt to God's light if he is in the rippling laughter and love between all people, especially if we are created in the light? Why not just make a stable, loving universe?

This is difficult to explain. It seems God could change the universe and explode the serpent into his light. But he sent the snake from heaven into the universes. What lessons would that teach the serpent? We drive out the serpent by listening to God. We battle with others trying to inflict pain where the snake provides to

them to entice us. We provide lessons from God to the serpent to free more people in the kingdom he wants created. So much is clear. The light that the serpent has transformed into memory is not the same light that God readily loves and appreciates. The ripples and echoing back of questions and ideas are not always listened to by people of God. That is where free will is understood. But in a moment of God's excellence—God who wants us to be free—we may shift and transform through him. We may let go of holding ourselves to a painful memory and trying to be immortal and predict how to solve it.

That is the free will God provides to learn the lesson. The light is favored and transforms us, or it is bent and twisted to our liking, which provides our finite lives and deaths.

The fall of Satan is the pattern we typically follow in life if we do not establish a relationship with God. That probably means that life and death are on many people's minds, and the anger that drives them is pain. People who do not question motives but look to escape pain are angry. Do not let that influence your life. God will try to steer you clear of pain. Death, lousy timing, and terrible life events are going to happen. This is angry people listening to the serpent and driving their beliefs onto you. You may not deserve these hurtful ideas, and remember that God is revolving around you and trying to protect you with his lightworkers.

What if life is not fair? What if lightworkers work in us as angels? What then? God questions us and provides ideas, and his angels have mastery over the light

too. They live in both the world of light, rippling and echoing laughter, and in the physical memory of life. But they don't live in the physical memory of light as much as would be expected. The transition between how angels affect us is through the light in our hearts. There can be warmth and light there. When we feel an angel, it is often a way to alert us to what God wants us to know. God may follow the angel's light too. It is a way that the filament of heaven works. The Holy Spirit of God may come through the angels and explicitly warn us to move ahead in our thoughts, change our ideas, transform our light, and work out a severe message of love to ourselves. This is not a rare occurrence, and it is normal. I think people do not discuss these moments often enough. God is personal to many people.

At this point, the transformation of light almost feels like love in the heart that is sustainable. I wonder if this is the case. God does not always stay in the heart—he may arrive and leave and come back. Eventually, the person must choose to escape the personal heart and feel the waves of love and laughter engrained in the universes. This is the freedom you are looking for. This is the painless part of life. Our minds tell us not to leave through the heart, that this feeling of release to God is unsafe.

This release gets wild, and you must not control the sense of waves of love through the universes. To do so creates a lesson that brings you to the serpent. The serpent is causing us to hold the memory of light in twisted patterns. To release us from it is the soul rebalancing it-

self in God's measurement. The judgment is soon to follow. That we make it to our life judgment ahead of death is okay. It may feel awkward to say this, but death is survived through our light. Past religions knew this balance and rebalanced it in the heart. The light is a form of purity. Indeed, this is taken with us into our revival and into God's heavenly kingdom of light mansions.

Through the angels, we learn of the filament and the heavens through our hearts. We are not in our bodies, and our spirits travel by light. It is hard to imagine that a bit of memory of the spirit is traveling through the universal light as being free, but it does happen. The filament is above the domain of the universes. When you fly above the realm of the universes, it looks like water. The water is under the filament. The filament is a state of existence, and it is where you can form an identity of God—God has been around you until this point in the universes. Now you are stepping outside of this domain and can build on the relationship with both you and God present. This may feel like walking on water. You have learned to let God control the situation around you, and He keeps you up in the water above the domain of the universes. The filament is a type of gate to heaven, to the kingdom of God.

Can we look through the waters and see ourselves in the universes? Yes. This is the point of this whole book. We never realized that the spirit of light is partly ourselves looking through the summation of time and giving impressions in life, such as intuition. You might ask when an idea has come that proves to be truthful in the

next moment. By asking these questions and seeing the connection, those events probably led you to faith as a person.

Why can we feel someone loving us from afar? When the time comes to go back to heaven in God's kingdom (the spiritual kingdom of heaven), you usually are welcomed back and release the fears you may have from life. These fears ripple through the waters and find you at different moments in your life. Life is memory, and we repeat it if we are not set free. We can and often do relive our fears in memory. We echo into the waters under the filament with our fears. We learn of these instincts of love to protect us from our past mistakes all at once. The light surrounds us, and the angels identify in our hearts, and God is challenging us to learn from him. Although this might sound quite strange, it is normal. We have faith because of the normalcy of this.

How do we identify then with the kingdom of God as we still live our lives? We might be set free from the domains of the universes, recognize God in his appearance in our thoughts, and still want to live and help the kingdom of God exist. The light, life, and memories all form together, and at once, you might understand. The cube of life, light, and memories is just our heads creating the universal domain—the spirit filters our light from heaven and God is the Father in heaven, giving heavenly advice. That is where we know ourselves as entering an impression that life on Earth can and will be a heavenly kingdom. The fact that this life is virtual to us

now is impressive, and it all echoes life and promises that filament of the gates of heaven.

Can we walk through that heavenly gate? To do so requires that our light ripple with other people. We must use our minds constructively and venture to the ledge of intuition or faith in the summation of light in order to say and act upon messages from afar. The mind is helpful when it is a tool for us. We see, smell, taste, feel, and hear everything in the universe as an echo—the mind is not in control, but God is. That echo makes us feel free and just in our minds as a working personality program. One-half of the mind helps us understand how unique we are, yet the other half of the mind finds commonalities between our friends. Ask God, the angels, and your spirit to exemplify sharing your light with this tool. The right side of the mind will share the commonalities. In contrast, the left side of the mind makes up your decisions to perceive those thoughts from an independent perspective. The two halves of the mind are helpful in different ways, and God is equal in the equation.

I know this may feel like an equation for friendships, and reflection helps the learning process. God realizes everything and still revolves around us in our friendships, and this creation of love and laughter with others is the building block of the kingdom of heaven. You may say that we entered the gates at a promise—the promise was that of a cube of three dimensions of the virtual universes. At this cube, we interact with the spirit of heaven.

How does bringing that rippling light into the atmosphere change people around us? Do you see the pat-



tern of God revolving around us from the previous passages? Do you see that people are affected by the light and laughter from us as we satellite around them and predictably read their minds? It may be a limited version of how God reads our minds, but we are finding commonalities and making suggestions to benefit the other people around us. At this stage in understanding, future scholars may notice that you are not using memory that much. Instead, you are dancing in the light of the people around you. This joy doesn't stem from what is happening in the present moment; it is from understanding the summation of light's existence, here and in heaven.

So now let us look from heaven's and the spirit's perspective. We have a spirit, and the spirit interacts with the universes. It guides us and suggests ideas on how to live our lives. The whole universe disappears at this moment. That's right, to the spirit, our lives are on the balance of judgment with the archangels. What does this judgment measure? It is not our spirit anymore that is judged—we were already set free. So why does the cube of a virtual universe that we perceive in life disappear? Well, the virtual universe is no longer the domain of the serpent. The virtual universes are a fraction of what we believe in. There are other universes, and there are different perceptions of universes from heaven.

All of this leads us to the knowledge that our lifetimes are a progression of the light to join God's kingdom of spiritual heaven. We are future scholars and know that the culmination of the light in this universe is a fraction of the ageless light. The rippling of time

doesn't need to be there—the time that light provides is for our growth. But we outgrow this universe to the point that we must rebalance ourselves from our perspective of the universes. It may sound complicated, but it isn't. We are outgrowing our limiting life beliefs. We begin to interact within the kingdom of the spiritual heavens. That rippling of love and laughter overcomes us. Can you imagine the rippling of God intervening in our spirit? The frequencies would rise and lower as the ripples of love and laughter interacted with our personal rippling light and laughter. What would that do for us? In a dimensionless sense, it improves and strengthens our souls. Embrace this transformation.

Future scholars may not know how to handle the transmission of love and laughter. I think of the filament above the domain of the universes as still water, and it feels like nirvana in the soul.

# King and Prophet

Damon, an error on this earth, had been given life—from a nightmarish universe, the baby was born. Of course, Damon looked and felt like any other ordinary baby, but he was not a typical infant. Humankind would come to dread this newborn because Damon was the spawn of the devil, and hell made demands on this child that he would achieve world domination in his lifetime. Consequently, Damon received his purpose for existence when he was young.

All around Damon, he witnessed dreadful shadows of low-spirited folks in his mind's eye. The baby felt the multitudes of shady followers as suffering. Within Damon, he felt a fury from the shadowy societies of the envisioned hell. Damon broke into outbursts as he witnessed the roaming shadows of miserable individuals' frightening activities. The frenzies were reasonable, though, and Damon erupted into tantrums due to the pain he endured. He cursed the shadows for their end, and the individuals listened to the infant cursing them. Damon soon accepted that he had an advantage over the wicked silhouettes by instructing their dreadful souls. Damon's curses were logical. In them, he displayed his cunning intelligence. Damon withheld his emotions early in his childhood, and he did not feel remorse by cursing the melancholy spirits that inhabited his shadowlands. As he grew up, he learned quickly to resist all his feelings. Damon experienced two universes at once—one a hell inside his mind and one on earth.

Damon struggled to collaborate with righteous people—he was not attracted to cultivating humanity

lessons from all the uproar the shadowlands made in his mind. He did not pray or build on the virtuous side of his personality, and Damon considered developing superior wisdom worthy of his time. He saw and felt that all people had disturbing intentions, and everyone had shadowy characteristics to discipline.

Damon continued cursing the world to reform any disorganized detail, and he continued to scrutinize and advance his role as judge. Within his mind, where the shadow universe existed, he learned to develop his curses, and Damon saw ironically how his curses began to manifest themselves in the surrounding people on earth. The karmic patterns of those surrounding individuals were twisted and folded into real-life manifestations. This was unforgettable to Damon, and the curses were memorable in the world.

As Damon grew up, he had impulses to use his speech, but the youthful Damon rarely spoke. He communicated instead with powerful scowls to direct his desires. People understood his expressions, and the informed crowds of people saw his thoughts through the telepathy that he developed. Damon's telepathy was formed from the discovery that there were distinctive features of the universes. However, he also examined the emotional quality that often-connected individuals. Using these tools, Damon exploited the emotional side of the universes and the emotions of the surrounding people. He would use his logical curses to force the people to realize his desires. This logical rationale was Damon's fundamental attribute.

Damon rejected adapting to the world. He egotistically endorsed himself to be the epicenter of the world, and each person he contacted anticipated they would follow his desires. Damon keenly witnessed that surrounding people worked in patterns of their designs, and behaviors physically retained the surrounding people's memories. Therefore, Damon did not praise himself. He sought to train people into his obedience, including discipline for people. As a child, he admonished and ridiculed people who overlooked his authority and rewarded those who persisted in meeting his expectations.

As he developed, he rejected emotionally adjusting to life and was defiant. He manipulated the people around him according to his emotional desires. His piercing outbursts dramatically reinforced his wants. The other individuals, in turn, developed a sickness of his tantrums. With much enjoyment, Damon taught others to behave how he wanted. The child marveled at how simply his tortured shrieks swayed people. For the folks surrounding Damon, their memories of the cries became complex composite prisons. Their memories were not inescapably of Damon but of avoiding their pain.

Damon soon imagined himself a king, viewing himself as dominant to everyone. He reinforced his very greatness with his impressions and words. As he communicated his statements, he continuously analyzed neighboring peoples' emotional expressions, articulating his tailored words and directing them toward people's behavioral patterns. His intensity matched peoples' emo-

tional patterns because his breath left them hypnotized by his inherent suggestions. Within these exceptional methods, Damon instructed their behavior.

He became incredibly motivated as he assumed the universes' rationale and emotional characteristics were coupled with such techniques. By age eight, he outmaneuvered the population. In instances of anticipated downfall, Damon arranged chastisement of opposing rivals through his art for war. Habitually he presented two options for enemies, and both possibilities tended to limit and distract them from any meaningful prize. Any individual who refuted his command was damaged in his games of the competition.

It took little work for Damon to mesmerize and direct the thoughts of his opponents. At age ten, he grasped his role of decision-maker in games of warfare. Often, he watched neighboring people excuse and forgive another only to soothe their emotions. In this knowledge, Damon understood society was weaker than they acknowledged. Other people wrestled with their hostile feelings and responded to understand their forgiveness. Damon enjoyed studying the emotional mistreatment that individuals subjected themselves to. In Damon's wisdom, there was a feebleness to humanity. With any punishment, people struggled to continue to fight. Damon viewed their frequent failures in logic as personal damage to their power.

Damon experimented by hypnotizing people, suggesting they unconsciously accept their flaws toward their disorder. He positioned himself as their protector

and educated himself in their battles, requiring their loyalty. He handled their morbid conditions as king of hell. Damon assumed what society could not—he understood that evil was part of the mastery of the mind. Nevertheless, Damon saw tremendous evil when people provided themselves with exceeding freedom to sinfully combat their emotional weaknesses. Damon considered himself as the holder of the world's mind and soul.

During his upbringing, Damon made additional statements that he would govern the planet. Unquestionably, his war campaign was not enough—he desired to control the earth and affect everybody in existence. As Damon influenced the world, the population reacted. He comprehended rigorous truths that other people could only anticipate. Often people dreamt of living better lives, and Damon knew the masses feared not having those better lives. But unforeseen discomfort and pain pushed them along. To explore that pain, Damon drew in his cursed breath and deeply exhaled into the universes. His cursed breath altered the universes, and the planet was entranced under his command. Damon found this hypnosis amusing. His breath would draw in and let out the pain everyone received. Indeed, it drove the masses on earth. Acts of combat became symbolic points, he argued. Even if his chief fight was not straightforward, he continuously competed with adversaries with his logic. He understood his challengers were emotionally restless and expected them ultimately to collapse. Therefore, he saw painful conflicts as occasions for the creation of loyalty for himself. Damon hypnotized



the public through an unconscious state and drove their behaviors, and he controlled them to fulfill his desires. Simply put, Damon was amused when the public conceded to his tactics.

This continued until a simple man considered stopping Damon. The man's name was John. John understood that Damon had gathered tremendous wealth, and John thought Damon also held great secrets from the public. Ultimately, the modest fellow believed that he could obtain these secrets for himself, and he set out on a path for war against Damon, believing he would trick Damon into revealing his secrets of wealth.

That was until God mediated the situation. Bathed in light, God said to John that he should do no such thing. God introduced Damon as someone more adept and aware than John, explaining to John that Damon would use his power against him. In that instant, God assigned the Holy Spirit to John. God revealed to him that Damon had ghostly horns that were his precious weakness, and He exposed Damon's mysteries to John. John desired to use Damon's secrets for God's divine reasons—secrets that were a wisdom that could be prosperous for God's heavenly city. God replied to John that he had faults like all humans and that he should pray for his solutions. That impression was conditional to faith. John was driven to realize Damon's falling.

Damon's believed his destiny was to rule the universes. Damon had little difficulty obtaining wealth in the world, and he was often given what he desired. He never injured anyone for superficial impulses and only initiat-

ed pain for his rivals in moments when it was necessary. Damon was also captivated by women, indulging many in his lifetime. Yet Damon's passion changed swiftly—he understood his ideas of love conveyed little weight with his ego. Damon had a soul, but he did not observe any such thing. He had very slight lenience for mistakes, and his exactness with words made crowds of people comfortable with his lead. He influenced masses with his breath as people craved to hear Damon's thoughts for them. Often, it was how they could amass money and power for themselves. For any generation, Damon assumed these lies did not change. Emotional people wanted power. Rationale people sought fortunes and lust. Damon relished his great perspective: People wounded each other for achievement in life. This perspective improved his own desired ends, and over time, he used his philosophy to build an empire.

This aim was to block the progression of religion. Damon often lied to people concerning this point. The snake was his father, and he wanted to expand the serpent's rule on earth, seeking the world to revere the serpent's wisdom. The art of dark magic involved manipulating people's unconscious to make them feebler in their faith. For Damon, worshipping the heavens could not equal him being revered as God. He built his hell in cries of torture he had from the misconstruction of emotions—his underdeveloped emotional self was spiritually blocked since he was born, cursing the world.

In his damnation, Damon appreciated what his serpent father demanded from him. The serpent was a mis-

chief-maker, and the serpent sought to end the world's light for the shadowy eternity he controlled. Damon's spiritual block was an example of how darkness could obstruct light. He expressed the darkened part in his memory as feeling numb in life. Damon could not recall what light felt like or to have emotions, so his mindset did not reflect on love. All he had was the determination to realize his father's obsessions. Hell was a creation for his serpent father to direct and rule as God.

Damon assumed why he was born into the world—the world was skewed to the sensitive and emotional, and he was the epicenter of rationality, the solution to time. What Damon believed was to be eternally true. If there were to be a time or place for Damon, this would be his universe as God. Damon grew in prominence with understanding the fascinations of people. He was a facilitator—someone who knew people's desires. He gave a price or some pleasure, and the people accepted him as the God he anticipated to be.

He went through these motions of daily life, and Damon began to understand something new about himself—he forever had unique wisdom. He knew his curses became true within this reality, and he understood that his hypnosis was effective. But the place from which he operated was nothing short of fantastic. The space he worked in was memory. With unconscious focus, he manipulated people within their memory. Damon recognized himself in memory and found everyone around him acted like idiots. The masses always sat in agony, hoping to be spared or protected. In memory, Damon

rested prosperously as he saw individuals as pieces in his game. When he assumed that his strategy was to destroy religion, he played people as pieces across a game board. In the end, he gave each person's soul to his serpent father in hell. He sucked pain from the world and expanded into the shadowy souls that were part of this game.

A prediction of Damon's began when John entered the game. Damon saw a brilliant and overconfident man who knew little of the secrets of wealth. John was too ambitious to find out about Damon's mysteries. John had been enchanted with the women attached to Damon, and he heard stories from the women that Damon was a creator of spells. Damon was wise in his concern for John. Damon evoked specific lessons from his art of war and positioned John to be a piece in his game. First, he gathered the women entertaining John and noticed their love for him. The women said John had integrity in his heart that set him apart, and Damon was intolerant of such replies. He felt the loss of the idea that he was God to these women.

To Damon, John was a meddler in his affairs. John brought delight and peace to people, and his unique gifts allowed him to be a father figure to others. He set people free in self-confidence from their own realized free will. John delivered hope, and that was all too powerful for people. John blessed people without cursing them, and he was gentle and slower than Damon. John did not predict the distress Damon was to inject into his life.

By this time, Damon was a great king and had many soldiers who guaranteed their loyalty to him. These sol-

diers fought in significant measures in compliance with Damon, giving him a definite reach to hurt John. While Damon's supporters began to damage John's character, Damon was meticulous not to be directly involved with the public and John. Instead, he accomplished that John stayed unimaginably poor in his livelihood. This contrast to Damon's wealth was astonishing, but to Damon, it was an essential part of his art of war.

John did not foresee these hardships in his life. They started with a politician named Swindle, and, as his name foreshadowed, he was a fraud. He was a scapegoat in many political events that helped Damon achieve power. And yet, Swindle's position in politics was undeserved. His thirst for power drove all actions, and he made friends at the topmost level of politics, influencing their decisions. Swindle thought he was flourishing in Damon's game and was often mesmerized with hypnotic thoughts by Damon. The politician often stood amongst a crowd and shielded Damon. The king had come under fire from a group quarreling over his interference in politics, so Swindle and his partisan cronies turned the subject of such quarrels. They argued to the crowds not to trust John as he was an outcast. They told the multitudes that John sought to offend women and take power from men. All types of gossip developed from the masses about John. Understandably, John's credibility fell. It was surprising that Damon offered such a small incentive for Swindle to continue the assault.

In his heart, John recognized that he did not wish sinful thoughts against his neighbors. John understood

something unconscious from the crowds—within the crowd’s fury, John realized the masses were mistreated from the control of the politicians. This miseducation was a chance opportunity for him, and God told John that he could turn the crowd’s wrath into constructive ideas. However, John was not working to correct the crowds—his goal was to enlighten society on Damon’s motivations. Damon was driving treasure into their minds, and society had become excessively gluttonous. Greed underscored almost everyone’s thoughts those days. The crowd’s hatred became a catalyst for John to express how individuals could gather to benefit from heaven’s principles.

However, Damon didn’t want the people to hear the Word John spoke of. God placed these opportunities for John to correct Damon’s situation because God trusted John as his faith was resilient. John’s tongue was magnetized to express only honest and righteous thoughts. These thoughts were hypnotic, and they inspired hope in all who heard John address the crowds. John spoke, contradicting the malicious ideas Damon and his political allies made. John told his thoughts in stories that his followers could relate to, and his followers believed John had discovered the Holy Father from the light that shined from him. On those occasions, when people heard John speak, they favored him as a good and righteous man. Somehow what John believed became a reality. It was as if he was a pioneer of knowledge that the universes conformed. Of course, his words made sense to

the followers' unconscious. John told them to have faith in his talents to make predictions.

John started a miraculous event of manifesting his followers' light within Damon's heart. For Damon, the minds of all men and women were prisons, and their cells were full of shadowy narratives which they recalled in memories. Yet some of John's followers were free in the light held within their minds and hearts. John extended hope to followers who were part of Damon's shadowland, and that hope showed for eternity.

At that moment, Damon pursued another course to injure John. Damon watched as the public judgment rebalanced between his political friends and John. The outcome was unforeseen as John had been unpredictably resilient. Ultimately Damon facilitated the discredit of John's reputation. John was frailer than Damon assumed, and Damon misjudged John in numerous remarks because the king could not understand how John functioned. John operated in the unconscious. His interaction with God and the spirit of people motivated him. John was not psychic but comprehended signs from God and his unconscious. He experienced the world as an empath.

Damon did not decipher John's movements as such an empath and projected John to be much more intelligent than he was. One thing Damon was confident of was that John was generating solidarity within the city. And this was true. Damon saw John as an adversary gaining attention. Unfortunately, this made Damon reflect upon his weaknesses, and torturous shrieks of

his past came to his mind. John provoked the underdeveloped and weaker emotional part of Damon. As John continued to speak as a prophet, Damon began to understand the hell he kept secret. Damon sought to move on from his perplexing and disordered perspective of his situation with John. Damon hunted for control for John's future, and he screamed to his powerful soldiers to find and contain John in prison.

To carry out Damon's wishes, his troops went into the city to catch John. The city's population understood that many soldiers were inspecting homes for John, and many in John's fellowship prayed for his wellbeing. This was a new attitude for resistance and protection from the residents. John's reputation flourished as Damon enforced his order, and the residents in the city came to see John as a prophet. And yet, he was a man who carried himself in the crowds as one of them—his lead was as a servant leader. Even the soldiers heard foretelling tales about John from the masses. They understood that John was superior to Damon in particular behaviors, yet the soldiers would not stop pursuing John due to Damon. They accepted their assignments with the justification of allegiance to such positions. Even in admiration and curiosity of John, they continued to work in contradiction of their spirits. The soldiers blocked out what their hearts told them and, impeding their emotions, continued their undertaking. In any case, John heard the soldiers enclosing on where he resided, and he left his home to move closer to Damon. Damon lost all location of



John, but he recognized John was still nearby, given the chatter he heard about John in the city.

The talk of John's prophetic insights never increased Damon's curiosity to befriend him. Damon was not motivated by any of John's intelligence. Damon thought people would logically revolt against the prophet because he gave them orders. In this instant, John became a prophet-king and not Damon. John attained the souls of the people without Damon's consideration.

Two weeks passed from the day Damon commanded John's incarceration. John was living in a nearby residence of Damon, and through the words of the soldiers, John knew of the orders to imprison him. John had done exactly the opposite of what he logically should have done by moving nearer to Damon, and the freedom he experienced from his previous business was immeasurable. John was now seen as divine, and the people knew his vision all over the state.

Damon was annoyed because John's speeches implied consequences against himself and because he saw nothing worthwhile come from his orders for John's imprisonment. Damon could not avoid hearing of John's declarations throughout the country's social fabric, and he began to wage war with misinformation against John. The misinformation was a deceitful claim that John had a warrant for a crime he committed, and Damon said he would reward any citizen who had knowledge of John.

The most influential person in the country, Damon was not a prophet, but he was the king. Therefore, Damon set himself apart from ambitious targets and moved

toward supremacy. Damon knew that his pressure created substantial danger for John to address his citizens. John knew if he reappeared to express his prophetic messages, Damon had opportunities to learn his location.

This remained true until the Holy Spirit harmonized the situation for John. For each movement Damon made, the Holy Spirit helped John endure. The Holy Spirit helped John perceive the Word of God to the next experience. God told John the prophet not to speak of Damon's inevitable downfall; instead, the Holy Spirit told John to explain the frustrations of Damon's collaborators. John said that Damon was leading from his dark motivations and that Damon was not to be trusted, and he spoke of additional ideas from the Holy Spirit about Damon's characteristics. John was strengthened by following the Holy Spirit.

With such news, Damon could advance only so far ahead of the questioning population. The Holy Spirit identified Damon's activities, and in this way, John fought the misinformation promoted by Damon. He also rejoiced in the acknowledged good news. In the weeks that soldiers chased John, he felt a sense of peace. He was calmer than he had ever been in his life. He lived now as a speaker of great certainty, and the people saw the light from each Word he spoke. Light filled the crowd's hearts and minds when they received the divinatory news. The good Lord showed through to the masses. While Damon struggled to impede John's magnificent words, Damon's misinformation was doubted by the population.

Therefore, the supremacy that Damon pursued was greatly hampered.

Damon was vulnerable to the Holy Spirit living within John. As much as Damon was sure of his curses, John had faith in prayers. The Holy Spirit residing within John used the prayers to communicate a wealth of knowledge to the populace's unconscious. Damon continued to curse people for hearing his tantrums within his hellish world. The ideas of pain flowed out of him and became real as they reappeared in the world, and Damon played on the feelings of the surrounding people.

However, there was symmetry between Damon and John. Many individuals in Damon's business empathized with John. Only in front of Damon would they betray him to protect John. John's rise with runaway success occurred right in front of the king. There was a girl who knew the location of John who lived in Damon's chambers. She eavesdropped on Damon to convey intelligence back to John's resistance. She informed only her friends that she had firsthand seen and heard John, but Damon observed that she was a traitor, and the games began for her. Damon was irritated by this dissent, and he secretly followed the traitorous girl into the streets to find John.

Damon came upon John talking to a crowd gathered around him in the city, and this became the morning he interceded in John's speech. Approaching the crowded location, Damon felt growing moral pain in his spirit. He reflected on the cruelty he caused in the world—the

games of war and the manipulated inducement of others to receive his desires. These reflections never occurred before to Damon, and he never sat inside his soul to understand the pain he caused. This was the corner Damon turned as he approached the crowd surrounding John.

John was talking about how nature's energy unites all people. In his karmic wisdom, John explained how the forces of evil and good were always balancing. As Damon listened to John speak, he examined John's body language to find faults. Damon discovered that in John's heart lived passion. At that moment, God prohibited Damon from understanding John's burdens. Instead, John's light brought distress to Damon. Damon's suffering was the start of his fall from power, and he unintentionally cried at John's words. The king fought his overwhelming emotions of anger and frustration. While Damon's teeth gnashed, he raised his arm to point to the prophet. John noticed him and momentarily smiled. Damon had come down from his tower while John had risen from the city's streets to meet in the middle. Damon heeded the judgments of John's crowd and anticipated that the group believed him to be evil.

The masses thought the king was going to terrorize their prophet at that moment, but Damon knew better than to be unguarded in John's crowded resistance. Damon proclaimed that there was no other wisdom than the kind that a prophet offers. Therefore, Damon asked for a complete understanding from him. Damon asked John why the world was unfair. He proclaimed they

lived in a hellish world that was gloomy as the animals ate one another. Damon wanted to know why that was.

John knew where Damon was directing the conversation as he tried to establish credibility with the crowd, but John was interested in Damon's inner world. The prophet understood Damon's inquiries were feelings that everyone has, and instead of going to war with Damon, he began his response by welcoming Damon into the fold. He said it was good that the king was part of the discourse. Damon laughed at the situation. Never had he been welcomed to a setting in which he felt so unfit. This was especially true while Damon sustained the imprisonment orders on John. Damon remained alone without soldiers, and he knew John to be great at escaping capture.

John fathomed Damon would include many questions about the evil that had no response from God. This evil would consist of the king's refusal of faith so he could cleverly emit pain into the world. Therefore, John surrendered to ask God how to respond to Damon's questions. There was little the prophet on the earth could say or do against Damon, yet Damon's hellish shadowlands were his symbolic repression. Therefore, God spoke to combat Damon's questions. John could adapt to the shadows through his inner visions, and John had faith that God would influence those visions. God showed the prophet Damon's hellish universe and all the men and women Damon enslaved there. The king felt distant as God displayed John this truth, and Damon suffered greatly from the Holy Spirit.

This was how Damon realized John was, in fact, a prophet. Damon thought it was precarious to ask John more questions about God since he could have answers. Damon again changed his strategy. Instead, under an appearance of friendship, Damon admired John and welcomed him into his home. Damon thought keeping his enemy close would make it more possible to capture John in the future. In Damon's universe of shadows, John saw the equivalent of heaven but as hell. John saw tortured individuals roaming the shadowland. The suppression of emotions from those melancholy spirits had John in disbelief. God's protection provided the distinction between the miserable souls and John.

Back in the crowded streets, Damon thought to provoke John's silence. Damon marched toward him, and John stammered out the wrath he experienced from Damon's shadowlands. The shadowlands were isolating and maddening, and John found being there was uncomfortable, yet he continued to examine the shadowlands from God's perspective. The Holy Spirit guided him. John saw inside Damon's heart to witness the shadows of tortured men and women. He told Damon that inside his father, the great serpent, there was no religion. Damon had little spirit to guide him, so John said he would act as Damon's spirit. Damon gnashed his teeth, stating that John had yet to answer any questions that he asked. The king had asked multiple questions from John's realm of expertise, and Damon felt that all John delivered were incriminating suggestions about him to the crowd.

John did not waver from his perspective. The prophet told the king he was unaware of where the serpent was within the shadowlands, but he exclaimed that God was good and holy, and the Holy Spirit could wake Damon up from his wretchedness. Damon's sadness was apparent to John. Damon had lived a melancholy life, and he embarked on world domination for this reason. John felt this neglect was what truly mattered, and Damon's truth was that the serpent was consuming him to advance a religious war on God. John desired to show this to Damon and questioned Damon if the serpent was in his heart. John realized at this moment that Damon could search for God in his heart and find him—even in his hellish shadowlands. This was because God was still in the shadowlands guiding John.

In that moment of powerful hatred for John, Damon grasped that something was different—he felt like forgiving John. The shadowlands were a torturous region with nothing but dark silhouettes lumbering around. These shadows looked like distorted animals—some had snouts, some had beaks, and some had multiple eyes. Damon confessed that he cursed every dark spirit living in the shadowland. He would think for the cursed individuals, and their shadows would react. Damon thought for a moment and answered John that he set in motion the serpent's desires. John, in an impressive manner, understood the desires of Damon. The king had been a puppeteer in a universe that no one physically visits, yet it was a universe that influences our universes. Therefore,

the prophet empathized with Damon because he lived in a cruel eternity.

For the prophet, this glaring understanding came as a surprise. The king was nowhere near as devilish as the serpent was. The king manipulated shadows and put them in motion to do his father's bidding—the prophet clarified to him that he was something of a shadow himself. But God warned John not to underestimate Damon's lust and greed. Damon had two horns that he wore for spiritual upheaval. He used those two qualities of lust and desire more than any lies he tells the shadows.

When John found Damon's shadow in the shadowland, he told him that if he felt insecure about losing his fortunes, that God would celebrate him more than he had ever been recognized before. God would glorify him more than any other individual in history. Damon would have authority to do any of his desires, according to the angels. In this blessing, God told Damon he could turn stones into bread. However, this was only on the condition that Damon leave the devil's control and walk into God's light bridge.

God provided the bridge of light as means for the king to leave the shadowlands. Originally Damon was a great angel for God, and God wanted to take Damon away from the clutches of the serpent. As Damon walked into the light bridge, the shadowland universe ripped into different polarities. The poles that Damon had unified diminished into several contradictions to any of the remaining shadows in hell. The serpent was injured and angry that Damon chose to move into the light bridge,



but the shadowlands allowed the light of the heavens into the land. For a moment, the shadowlands looked and felt like an Earth, and God's Word lighted their world. The universal constant had been that evil fought well, but now the shadowlands were re-energized with the Holy Spirit. The serpent left the earth and roamed into another universe, seeking to prey upon other life in the universes. The snake knew that this planet would now forever be in the hands and heart of God.

# Paradise



# Chapter One

With my whole heart, I was praying for my lost paired love. Her vision emerged to me as elegant as I had ever witnessed in my psyche. It was as if I were living a beloved memory from my previous life, and the diverse universes were blending and coinciding to generate such a stunning moment. To my astonishment, I recognized her lovely fragrance in the air. Every logical idea went through my mind during that peaceful evening, and I decided that this instant occurred from my euphoria. The fruition of this moment gave me faith that I would eventually join Sophia again in heaven. Inspired, I launched into remembrances of the two of us intertwined with our friends and families, and I begged Jesus that I greet my dear beloved ones in paradise. My imagination became so energetic and intense!

With creative power, I thanked my loving companions for cultivating my worthwhile life. My lifetime was described to them as a fairytale, and that enthusiasm for my life had lasted until Sophia departed for the afterworld. My heart became sad as my grief for Sophia overtook me and the impediment of feelings blocked the beautiful memories I was visualizing. I lost myself in these dormant feelings of remorse.

In a crucial moment at this twilight, a delightful presence permeated my room and recovered me. This affected how I understood my vast potential, and this divine spirit from heaven raised the energy in the room.

My positive response to the apparition, extraordinary and profound, was to submit in appreciation. I felt this winged seraph was helping to improve my gloomy mood. However, as the angel's illumination unfolded, I couldn't help being in doubt. My sanity was debatable, but the divine messenger still lived in my senses. The seraph softened my suspicions as I was overcome with enjoyment. It was an extraordinary event that this heavenly helper communicated to me.

I asked what was required of me for the angel's endeavors to overtake my imagination, and the strength of the seraph's voice in reply went through my torso and into my soul. The Word affected my consciousness. The divine being extended her arms, and I knew her love and light were virtually identical. I understood my existence was to be a story of passion once more. All aspects of life start with the fuel of love, and the love this angelic messenger communicated was in pulses. That love reached my heart, and the sorrow that kept my heart shattered was now healing itself. The fractures in my heart were mending.

The message from this angel was the exact loving Word of Jesus. Therefore, Jesus breathed new life into my soul. That love fed my heart and intellect, reviving my confidence in paradise. My wishes for the company of Sophia in heaven felt very reliable. I gained such fondness for the angel in that minute that I started praying for her as well. The winged spirit drifted around me, delighted with the interaction. Then an unmistakable voice overpowered my senses, and it occurred to me that it was

the voice of Jesus! My body started to tremble. His announcement was so substantial that my soul felt revived. I opened myself to what Jesus announced; the message was like a force rather than dialogue. My understanding was functioning at another level of recognition.

At that moment, the seraphim built a tunnel of love and light I could see because of my gifted spiritual senses. I saw my companions in heaven at the other end of a passageway of love and light. My dearest friends exclaimed that I was saved. The angel asserted that I listen and accept such extraordinary news from Jesus. The blessed messenger announced I was to dedicate my life to my friends, family, and Jesus. I reflected on this to the point of detachment within that light. I begged the angel to allow me to enter the gates of heaven.

I was convinced that Sophia was on the other side of the tunnel in paradise. I pleaded for grace at this instant, and I wished to recall her majesty. I humbled myself as I listened for any answers. Love is the power that strengthens two spirits within one another and is a bridge that links our souls. This tunnel of love and light had evoked memories in my consciousness. I felt my heart pound in an instant of chaotic truth—my life was being restored by Jesus, evolving my destiny. Was it feasible that my soul was newly atoned? Had I finished my Lord's last judgment in the event? I felt like Sophia reconciled my existence with Jesus, and my heart was filled with wonder. I wanted to hold an endless discussion about the heavens, and I wanted to share my abilities to prove I was in such a paradise.

The exchange that I had craved occurred. I was mesmerized as I perceived Sophia, ever so enthralling, appearing at the horizon of the bridge of love and light. Sophia acknowledged that all authentic wisdom was held within Jesus, which impressed upon me that I was incomplete without them both. In her gentle approach, Sophia said that angels would lead me through the rest of my life. I was delighted that Sophia had found angels to guide my soul. I felt Sophia centering my heart, and we were in blissful communication with one another. My heart led my intellect and deemed what was genuine. I believed her touch was real—even if the experience was not sensible and I understood it as supernatural.

I lifted my hand and reached to join Sophia. In our bond of love, her hand caught mine. This transfer of contact was rare, and as our hands pressed together, her irreplaceable spirit was distinctly unique. Because her soul had been liberated from her body upon death, the grief was crushing me and I tried to regulate my anguish as we maintained this connection. As I looked upon Sophia, the flaws in my heart were repaired. I knew that the passion for my life was entangled with the love for Sophia; we had been steadfast in our devotion together. Therefore, I was awestruck at the message Sophia handed over to me: I was to show my favorite and most memorable friends that I could reach her in my prayers. Once more, I was eager to exceed my devotion to vibrant life.

At that instant, my Lord's powerful voice reverberated in my heart's chamber, and I caught his Word. The divine message was that I was projecting grief onto my

friends in everyday life. A stark realization was clear—I could not control the life around me, and this ego-centric mood was not adequate to sustain the Lord's eternal purpose. Jesus asked me to develop our friendship to help correct my projected emotions. I beamed I would as my heart's light increased immensely. As Jesus come closer to me, He felt all-compassionate and all-forgiving. I learned I was in his masterful hands. I had a role in his creation. There was a purpose that wove all things together, and the power of design held me in harmony with all of nature.

Influenced by the extent of this message, I could scarcely compose myself. My heart overflowed with enthusiasm. I wanted to talk about the idea of creation. Creation is the essence of heaven that is breathed into nature. I was his creation and therefore raised on my Lord's love. I equally felt passion for my existence and fascination to appreciate Jesus. As life interacts with nature, the vital spirit of heaven is foundational to all universes' elements. I understood that suffering in life exists when the creative message between one another is resisted. I was now awakened to my Lord's judgment. He judged that I had limited my praise for his artistic nature. Jesus was peaceful in this moment of meditation. I realized how my intellect and my heart both narrated the idea of losing Sophia. The idea of her passing was breaking my heart, and I was resisting the creation story in my soul. By living for only myself, I had stopped relating in prayer with others. I confessed to Sophia that she was ex-



traordinary harmonizing my life with my Lord's eternal praise.

Then the spirit of Jesus departed and the angelic tunnel disappeared from the room. My perceived reality with Sophia and friends also disappeared, and I wondered how this all occurred. This instant of spiritual connection had come so intensely and finished as quickly. An angel entered my house, and the Lord led me into the heavens. I welcomed Sophia and friends likewise into my heart. As I reflected upon this sacred moment, it dawned on me to applaud Sophia for her achievement. I opened my heart to recall loving stories between us. I appreciated that I was reconciled with her.

Although I prayed intensely, I heard only silence. The feeling of transformation shifted from around me, and my love went into the universes. My soul re-centered in the tranquility of the occurrence. My understanding of the story of life and the creative spirit was very peaceful.

I felt my purpose on this planet was to share my Lord's loving compassion, and I knew I would have this dialogue with many loved ones before departing to heaven in death. The exchange was not only for their spiritual development, but also for me. I knew that my whole spirit led to this awareness of paradise.

## Chapter Two

Many meditations followed the evening that I had awakened to my beloved Sophia. One of my favorite visions was when I saw the throne of Jesus for the first time. There were countless examples of how Jesus affected my life in the preceding days, but this meditation resulted in an incredible amount of insight and wisdom. The prayer began with an angel tunneling through the love and light, entering my heart. This was characteristic of how winged deities travel through the universes. Angels live in the heavens and bridge the enormous gap to perform miracles within us. They mask their entry with a view of the sun. My awareness shifted to accepting the angel's company, and as the seraph came into focus, I felt rapture in my heart.

I saw Jesus at the culmination of the seraph's corridor of light. Jesus appeared generous and welcoming, and I desired to move into the tunnel to his throne. In this initial acceptance, the angel permitted my spirit to move through the channel of love and light into heaven. I was in admiration and astonishment as I moved closer to the throne of Jesus. Nearing the throne, I became part of a group of heavenly spirits who assembled to praise Jesus in triumphant applause. The masses were cheering for Jesus as he crafted love in the heavens. His creation was parallel with his profound celestial consciousness—the whole crowd accumulated at the throne of Jesus to reflect their delight for providence.

As I progressed through the crowd, I felt my soul in extraordinary merriment. This heavenly account was surging through my soul. Drawing near to the Lord's throne, I was stunned by how gigantic it was. The splendor of the Lord's throne completed the heavens' expanse and overflowed into the galaxies. In this glorious moment, I requested to speak directly with Jesus. Jesus gazed upon me as I neared him, and a stellar alignment began to operate in my soul. Christ aspired to bring peace into my nature. I felt the sin in my spirit drain into nonexistence. As this purification developed, I marveled at how Jesus had accomplished this miracle.

Jesus echoed the look of curiosity I conveyed. Maybe this revealed how he had transformed my light—I could not decipher the extent of his efforts that worked in my nature. As I watched the Lord increase my capability, I gave him my appreciation. Jesus provided illumination in spirit. He shared a message of karmic truth, and I absorbed it. The karmic equilibrium that shifted positions within me was connected to all material energy of the galactic tapestry. This kind of harmonic music was a genuine understanding of the Lord's extraordinary miracles. I appreciated the compassion and wholeness that rebalance the heavens through Jesus. The light presented in my spirit also carried a direct message—the Word of Jesus examined how I related to loved ones on Earth and in paradise, and I felt the core of my soul reveal my original lineage. The essence of the message was how to send light to my loved ones.

Filled with love, I quickly communicated Christ's message with my family and friends. My thoughts transmitted the stability of karmic balance that would provide them great enjoyment. I assured my companions that Jesus would offer his grace and that the true essence of themselves was not flesh but in spirit. The remarkable divine spirit of heaven allowed me to realize another aspect of love. I began to sense my family and friends at the center of my soul. Absent of any spiritual mastery, I naturally created bridges of love and light into their hearts. I started multiple channels from my origin into the universe, finding my loved ones.

The most magnificent spark of love I built was praying for Sophia. This compelling vitality was my affection for her. I opened up to the absolute harmony that bound our hearts together. Our passion was complimentary, just like the karmic energy that joined us. Karma directed her love, and that influenced my understanding of how to live. Our power was woven together with sacred divine consciousness. Her love instructing my existence was my life's blessed education. As a path of love and light formed between Sophia and me, I marveled at walking with her in heaven. The tunnel joined our spaces in spirit; I let my soul glide toward her vision as I passed into her stunning kingdom. The extent of my devotion was to match her love. It occurred to me that how the light transformed my conscience was, in part, leading my journey to discover her passion.

A mansion that I perceived to be Hellenistic in style stood before me. In genuine enthusiasm, my heart re-

centered, precisely like the stunning evening when I held Sophia's hand. I was sure of Sophia's existence in this palace. In front of the mansion were Corinthian-style columns that extended into the sky. As I walked closer to the entrance, I reached for the elegant marble door, and before I could touch it, it unlocked and opened before me. In awe, I saw my beloved within the entrance of Sophia's mansion.

In a spark of karmic energy, our eyes met as we gazed upon each other. I realized Sophia was affectionately leading my life toward her spirit. This love was so extraordinary and peaceful that I found her to be my guardian angel. As Sophia discovered me at the doorway of her holy palace, I realized that her favor had only increased for me. I complimented her enthusiasm with my delight. Our bond was like Sophia and I had not missed any bit of time apart, and passionate devotion had returned. In my inspiration, I cheered for Jesus in his celestial city. I passed the words along that I had come from honoring the Lord at the foot of his throne. My heart sprung out of my chest as Sophia declared how remarkably such moments could broaden our knowledge. I questioned if this affection was what the city of the Lord always felt.

She pressed upon me with a welcoming embrace and exclaimed that heaven radiated like nothing, everything, and what was created from in between. Sophia addressed how she watched over me with concern and had spoken incalculable times to me. The message echoed that she had accompanied me in my lifetime. Her mes-

sage was a gift to my soul, and I never anticipated such a wondrous and timeless idea for this moment. I wanted desperately to stay with her in paradise.

However, I noticed my spirit was wrestling to get back my earthly body. I recognized the tunnel of love and light was opening for my soul. Sophia accepted that I was being pulled back by the angels, and I assured her I would arrive again with a loving embrace for her in heaven. Her fond warmth overwhelmed me. In a time to come, I foresaw that my soul would perpetually stay with Sophia. However, the passage of love and light was now collapsing. Sophia whispered to remember how happy she also felt. My soul left behind her incredible warmth, and I retreated from a mighty divine consciousness back into my earthly body.



## Chapter Three

Infrequently, I lamented how Sophia and I were separated universes apart. However, I realized the immateriality of the distance between us. I knew that Sophia's radiance dwelled in my heart, and she accompanied me from the kingdom of heaven. My gloomy mood improved, thanks to the changing attitude with Sophia. Sometimes my beloved appeared and instructed me with God-given purpose; sometimes I would ask Sophia to explain the nature of my surroundings. Sophia had my attention to alter my life's mission. It truly felt like an eternity living on Earth with Sophia in heaven. I strived not to yearn constantly to rejoin Sophia and thought that I should be honestly nurturing my relationship with Sophia at a natural speed in life.

Once I relinquished my unrelenting drive of self-determinism, Jesus began to guide my conscience. I loved how the Lord's majestic hand would completely transform my perception of life. In meditation, I sensed extraordinary tranquility at the center of my soul. Jesus was providing answers for the path in my life. As Jesus connected to my heart through a bridge of love and light, I wanted to follow Him again in the heavens, to enter the same bridge of love and light back into paradise.

To my amazement, I was led once more to his throne room. Sophia was there to receive me, greeting me with attentive love from within our heavenly domain. As I saw Sophia, my heart melted, and I let go of my grip on



self-control. By restraining my ego-centric authority, the connection between Jesus and Sophia became intense. It occurred to me that I was the limiting factor that impeded our relationship. As I allowed the Lord and Sophia to handle my worldly concerns, I felt a freedom in my spirit occur. Our lively conversation began as Sophia transferred a message bathed in brilliant light to my heart. Her enchanting Word surged from her position in the throne room, through the chaotic cosmos, and into my awareness. Sophia sent me messages, developing my understanding of the spiritual presence that was fundamental to all nature. I felt the message was clear that spiritual energy disseminates to a natural level. Sophia's Word was for me to increase my affection with my earthly friendships. She said that I had become preoccupied with getting back to her in heaven. Sophia observed that she could pass along messages from the heavens; she also wanted to guide me to prosper in my earthly life. It was undeniable that I overvalued having control of my own life. Sophia extended her love to assist in the mastery of my life's plan. She asked me to see how symbols and signs in nature were examples of our shared vision.

I looked forward to Sophia's intervention within my natural stage. Just as nature takes time to bloom, my perspective took time to let Sophia's love and light affect my life. Again, I relinquished control of my life, deferring to the guidance of my guardian angel. It dawned on me that I was controlling myself, which was blocking my spiritual growth. It didn't take much time to learn that lesson,

and I began to instinctively experience signs and symbolism in nature.

In an example of how my interpretation of life was being created, Jesus allowed me to construct bridges of love and light with my worldly friends. I began to compliment the Lord's moral compass within my devotion to family and friends. I skillfully crafted bridges from my heart's center to the hearts of each of my loved ones. As my spirit abided in their core, I invoked Jesus from his throne to join my loved ones. I strived to free my control of the experience and defer to Christ's rule. It came to fruition that Jesus created a measurable grace in my network of bridges of love and light. What impressed me was how I began to gain glimpses of Sophia when connecting with my loved ones. My spirit would increase in devotion when Sophia was present, and as she stayed current in such friendships, I took her presence as a mystic sign.

At the throne of Jesus, Sophia encouraged me to trust in my friendships. She said that Christ would strengthen the bonds of love and light in my network, so the instruction to build trust was supported by faith. My devotions were uncomplicated, and I maintained an abiding respect for my friends, letting mutual esteem exist between loved ones during these prayers. The friendships were unique with each person, and I maintained a sense of honesty to an extraordinary degree in each relationship. I was conscious that my behavior would align with Sophia's guidance from heaven. I committed myself to be genuine and dedicated in my prayers with friends,

putting their interests ahead of mine to strengthen our mutual reverence. Sophia warned me not to control and judge my friendships.

From his throne room, Jesus explained how paradise's holy grounds are the foundations of the planet Earth. I understood how my loved ones could also follow my Lord's celestial messages. As they interacted with Jesus in their hearts, their spirits would increase in their consciousness. The mood in the atmosphere was shifting toward absolute jubilation. We are all entangled in the Lord's grand plan, and we all affect one another. Jesus brought a calmness to my surroundings, and he helped me realize my purpose was to enhance the relationships between other people and him. My spirit evolved as Jesus dwelled in my nature, and Jesus mirrored his messages of love and light in my surroundings. I was immersed in the Lord's graceful joy, and he was my Celestial Lord.

The tunnel of love and light that kept me in the presence of Jesus and Sophia started to dissolve, and I felt that my spirit was withdrawing back into my heart. I spoke to Sophia. Without any reservation, I said the heavens would welcome our love. I told her I was ready to begin my divine purpose, and my spirit let go of the moment. Essentially, I knew my purpose was to spend my entire life relating to loved ones. I committed to Jesus and Sophia that I would earnestly pray to the world. I left the throne room and went into the tunnel of love and light.

As I recovered in my body, a wave of self-confidence overcame me that I could grow my relationships to include Lord Jesus. I promised that I would not force the pace that nature needed to take, and I acknowledged that trusting and cooperating with heaven requires time. That day, my lesson from Jesus and Sophia was to have a strong belief in love for my surrounding friendships. I was impressed by how their love reflected and influenced my existence and the surrounding atmosphere shifted with the tone of their vibration. I mirrored the Lord's creation story in nature. Once more, I lost myself in a love story for the living world.

## Chapter Four

At dusk, one incredible night, I was part of a harmonizing prayer group of friends in heaven. I saw this group as spirits in a circle around the throne of Jesus. I grasped the brilliant news from the Holy Spirit; my friends and I were part of a newly organized consciousness. My perspective began to align with this heavenly pattern of love, and the summation of passageways that we shared between our souls was irrefutably grand in scale. My deep devotion to loved ones and to Jesus was now a celebration. I recognized the familiar faces that gathered, and I treasured this feeling of achievement. My friends were influential in my life, as I helped shape their place and purpose in a glad return.

In contemplation, I was curious about this circle in heaven. How did we affect one another in the Lord's divine heart? I pondered to what extent this event was going to inspire my choices in life. The group consciousness that unfurled through the heavens forged with a desire to show mercy. Our unified feeling was an uplifting of joy, and we proclaimed that together we had affected providence. Each of our viewpoints for the universes shifted firmly together in unified thought. Around the throne of Jesus, our spirits prayed with an intensity that resembled excitement. The pooled consciousness extended to each person and made us one. In this way, the Holy Spirit impacted my friendships. The many spirits understood that the collective consciousness had an

overarching goal. The Holy Spirit's motive was to realign our behaviors on Earth, and each of our souls began to appreciate their fullest potential in life. That was the cause that brought us together around the throne of Jesus. We desired to pray together to acknowledge a higher purpose for our families and communities.

The group felt a vigorous shaking of the vibration of love within each soul. This was how Christ introduced himself into the combined divine mentality! Each spirit realized that a pooled consciousness could awaken their soul to the Word of the Lord. We began to communicate with Jesus with our own individual talents—I grasped the Holy Spirit in vocalized words, some spirits saw Jesus with illustrious imagery, and others tactically felt the real meaning behind Christ's words.

The underlying message was that we were all a part of his creation story. Our divine consciousness helped us cooperate as a devoted group in the heavens. We became conscious of our created purpose and our evolution in spirit. Evolving helps illuminate each of our souls and this opportunity to develop and realize how Jesus works in our lifetimes was golden. The heavens rippled through the air, and I understood that my heart's tranquility was within the afterworld—but at the same time, it felt like my soul was vibrating in such a way that the rest of the heavens shook! My peace and tranquility were amplified afterward. In that moment of awakening, our collective spirit solidified my close connections together on Earth. My mystical understanding was that this rate of vibration was acceptance with the Holy Spirit.

It was as if the Lord was talking to me personally and us together simultaneously. Before I understood the collective consciousness, I had heard the Lord's voice but could not discern the voice patterns. This movement created a starkly different relationship with Jesus. The Word was to love Jesus and all my friends, and we all heard it and all began to applaud enthusiastically. It seemed Jesus was now a living identity in all of us. Our hearts overflowed with youthful love. Collectively, we had nurtured a passion that opened the fountain of youth to us. I felt deeply in debt to Sophia for this account. In the Word of Jesus, the limitations of our souls expanded. It felt like the chains that kept us locked into living patterns just released us. Mercy overflowed into our spirited consciousness from the Holy Spirit. Together we were rejuvenated, the filament of heaven existing as a shining light within each soul. I let go of the vision at Christ's throne.

Why were we given this freedom? I am unsure. What I am sure of is that our collective consciousness decided to accept heaven into our worldly existence. The compelling symmetry between spirited friendships echoed in the universes. Had Sophia guided us to become aware and evolve spiritually consciously? I hoped so because a permanent bridge now existed between the heavens and my network of loved ones, including Sophia.

## Chapter Five

As I listened for transformation to spring forth from my heart, I reflected over what I had seen in my prayer. In my spiritual sight looking within, the light of multitudinous angels shone as these seraphim encircled me. The angels were part of the honored consciousness within the spirit. I looked upon many spirited friends who were also in that divine arrangement. Within these defining lessons, I could always count on a new nurturing standpoint for my life. In dedication to strengthening my character, I pledge to act on Sophia's purpose and the Lord. All through the day, these heavenly seraphim continuously manifested themselves with love and light, and their nurturing signals serendipitously showed within my surroundings.

Gusts of wind blew about me as the peaceful environment transformed my soul. The atmosphere pulsed with the divine consciousness's energy. These heavenly messengers left motivating impressions, leading me to observe the grandeur of nature. The seat of my soul slightly shifted to a new center, and my spiritual vibration was rapidly increasing to adjust to the angels in my surroundings. Such a shift in my loving attitude was from the group's expectations for my life.

I intended to communicate with Sophia that afternoon. As my thoughts gravitated to her, I remembered her once saying that the soul had an ever so slight weight one could feel. Conceivably, Jesus built the physical



body on the spirit. She had concluded that our sacred soul was an extension of the filament of heaven. Sophia would have affirmed that my changing energy level was the foundational spirit intervening in the physical space. The heart is first aware of Jesus Christ's love, and the kingdom of heaven grows within the light of Christ.

The spiritual world helps to naturally arrange each person on Earth to fulfill the Lord's divine plan. The transmission of the celestial messages arrives within the glorious rays of light, and the communication of the Word is codified for our unique comprehension. The news from Jesus is and forever will be benevolent love. With faith, I accepted that this transformational message was from Sophia. Love is the essential ability to communicate. As I recollected myself, I witnessed Sophia in my mind's eye, and the breath of her soul was genuine. I realized that my reality reflected what Jesus helped us achieve in our lives. He holds this love of us in a kind of physical memory. As Sophia confirmed, our souls have an imprint in the heavens and the universe. The celestial light gives nourishing love and divine messages to all living bodies—this emotional connection in nature is an extraordinary supernatural occurrence.

Sophia revealed that plants growing on Earth have a healing quality because of their transformation from light into food. I understood that there was a shared harmony between plants, Jesus, and humanity. The loving connection between sun, vegetation, oceans, and natural surroundings is an example of why Christ is delighted with his creation. In the light, all life shares an imprint

within the whole structure of the cosmos, and that imprint helps compose tunnels of love and light that beat in the heart. Sophia held a flower up that was like her love shared for Jesus, and somewhere in her passion was a shared connection that harmonizes us with the planet. I understood and acknowledged that the Lord's love forgives throughout the universe, and he is willfully all-merciful.

In reflecting with Sophia that day, I understood how that spiritual light could transform the atmosphere. She reiterated that the nature of Jesus is healing mercy, and I felt her loving forgiveness was not only in my mind but shared between all existence around me. Sophia insisted that each life is unique and contributes to the overall memory of the moment. The divine consciousness of the angels, spirited friends, and Sophia was a collective shift in nature—my entire sacred network helped elevate the atmosphere surrounding me, and the feeling of emotional love was seared in my memory. For Sophia, I began to realize her unique soul was providing mercy. Her love absorbed me and resulted in a summation of possibilities that I adapted into my patterns. It was like we had a shared outlook, both harmonized and distinct. That energy of the group consciousness went through the Lord and became part of the Word.

Through the tunnels of love and light, the angels prepared a discourse for all our higher consciousness. In this communication, my heart began to explore the spiritual individualism of my many loved ones. Within the heavens and on this planet, I worshipped Jesus. The

prayer began to define my relationships at a level of the spirit. Formerly, I understood a shared harmony to glorify the heavens; however, now there was a significant change that the heavens were acting within the Earth. The realignment of my soul's position and vibration let the heavens enter through the filament of heaven into my friendships. The communication of love was utterly spectacular.

The angels read my thoughts. I learned that the imprint of love also has a shadow side to memory as Sophia mentioned the shadow side of my memory projects into many earthly relationships. I comprehended that I sin with unusual ignorance. Sophia showed examples in my memory where I judged the faults of others. This mirror projection of my ignorance kept me in a kind of harmony with the surroundings. My corruption damaged the spiritual relationships in my life. Sophia explained that we are a collective together, yet I could not separate all my good and evil. She insisted that the sum of everything is in memory, which is why it is prudent to be merciful.

Primarily, the heart understands love; the mind logically understands light. Many heavenly angels were examining my intentions and impressing on my conscience. They insisted that I improve on my sinful projections into the world with their contributions.

I admitted to Sophia that in this moment of reflective prayer, my love was within the Lord. Sophia was departing through the tunnel of love and light. She helped me understand the divine impressions left on my con-

science. The definition in those messages was my unique personality related to my loved ones' souls. Those surroundings would predict my future. Nature provides mercy, corresponding to the Lord's love. However, my patterns had to transform to match an elevated soul. Mainly, I understand that I live in harmony with my heavenly, connected, loved ones. My nature reflects the worldly shadow I expect to remake. My lovely Sophia shared her impressions that day. I knew she wished me to find mercy in the world around me, and I began to forgive the people who were continuously in my heart and myself. Sophia shared the Lord's all-merciful nature in her discourse.

## Chapter Six

The Lord's revelatory promises were directed to me, and I attentively listened to my higher consciousness. One instance occurred when I was praying before the world with mercy as my motivation. My devotion was to heal our grieving planet, and I believed that grief was the world's spiritual barrier, keeping it from reaching a higher degree of consciousness. I admittedly was worried about asking Jesus for his help to abolish civilization's hardships because of the enormity of the blessing—freeing so many individuals from their sins seemed such a massive burden of Christ. However, Sophia gave me confidence that Jesus was listening to me at that present moment, so I began to envision the light of the Lord through my spiritual sight. The surrounding atmosphere harmonized with a symphony of pulses of love and light.

Sophia savored this phenomenon. My concerns diminished as I believed that the Lord's divine message of love could reach everyone and that His light could reach the hearts of an abundance of people. With Sophia as my guide, she told me that our planetary conscience's great awakening could occur during my lifetime. The Lord's message became evident; there is a need to find a heavenly presence in the world's daily events.

The story of creation enables each life force to have its home on this planet. Like my connection with Sophia, life has a tapestry of energy that networks love within all life. In this very brilliant beginning of the af-

ternoon, Jesus's mercy began to fulfill my prayers—the Messiah gave his vision to realign many people's hearts in the world. According to Sophia, with my ambitious hope, humanity would have extended time. Some individuals who never adapted to the heavens now began to evolve through the creation story in life.

The Lord increased the world's timing of conscious thought. Every living being was working at a different rate from their relative positions within Jesus. All life was choosing for itself to grow and transform in this worldwide higher consciousness because Jesus had given mercy. With an accepting thanks to Jesus, I built a tunnel of love and light to his throne. I expressed admiration to Jesus for the shared inspiration within all life on Earth. Jesus acknowledged that the timing of the living spirit sped up. I worshiped Christ for nurturing my world to prosper in his grace. The Lord had answered my prayer. Now was the world's time to believe in the vitality of Earth and have a useful purpose. Earth cycles, and so does time. Time is not always linear, and the sequence of moments on Earth is a response to Christ.

Sophia explained that global consciousness moves ahead when abundant life glorifies Jesus's love in a creation story. The shared harmony of mercy erodes the spiritual barriers for everyone. The angels told the human population to heed this period. Sophia said the world might never know a decline from this pinnacle—that is if the humbled servants and leaders support the masses by moving them in devotion.

Only Jesus can understand how the planet shifts in consciousness and moves us into different dimensions. Jesus thoughtfully asserted that evolution takes time for the balance of all creation to be kept. Love is the unknown quality that will develop humanity through this complicated growth period, and the patterns of life will be continuously challenged and then mirrored in the surroundings. This transformation of development will affect all life, and it is to be glorified consciously. The expectations for humankind will be lofty, and in our refined development of consciousness, humanity will stay aware of the heavens intervening within the planet.

Sophia excitedly said that the realignment of human consciousness would also alter how we interpret science and faith. As our timing fluctuates, the world's modern paradigm will explain science and spirituality as complementary. Sophia exclaimed that the oft-spirited debate between the two sides of science and faith would converge into one topic. Science will lead to our heavenly beliefs, and our cosmic Word will interpret our strategy for science. As we begin to understand the intertwined bridges of love and light, the centralized subject of science and faith will become strongly reinforced. Sophia promised that Jesus would divulge how to organize the problematic beliefs of our era, and she whispered that by heeding these revelatory responses from Jesus, civilization could heighten the transformation of conscience. Sophia professed the answers would appear, and we must stay aware of our hearts as we jointly pray. The Lord's answers might not be what we expect to hear;

however, as we attempt to understand his response, the correct message will arise. She confided in me that the truth would set us free.

The tunnels of love and light will develop in civilization. The exact messages communicating from each soul will originate at a level closely related to the filament of heaven. Jesus will realign our souls within our hearts. The tunnels of love and light diminished in the prayer, and I walked back into the earthly plane of my body. I sensed that Jesus's guidance was helping humanity toward a new and higher degree of complexity. Sophia assured me that the world would appreciate the Lord's kindness, and humankind would abandon society's implicit judgments. And from that prayer, I learned that loving heart, harmony in mind, and an awakened soul stem from the merciful hand of Jesus.



## Chapter Seven

We reap what we sow in life, and I understood that my story was almost complete. My search for love with Sophia was to culminate in the elevation of my soul to heaven. It was time to revisit her with infinite joy. With my last breath in my physical body, I realized love was consistent with the submission to the judgment of the Redeemer. With that thought, death freed my spirit from my mortal body. Between the worlds of Earth and heaven, I found the wisdom of Jesus. In the same grace that Christ had always given, the Holy Spirit transformed me. I was finally allowed to pass through the gates of heaven.

I had a recollection of my spirit saying goodbye through the mass of linked tunnels with friends. I was blinded by the collective brilliance of this light until the appearance of Sophia's outline formed. With a shine only Sophia could possess, she welcomed me into the eternal city. Her spirit glided over to me as she squeezed me with a sweet embrace. At that moment, I was aware that my respect for life developed from our pursuit to be with each other. I felt relieved that together we would explore the abundant everlasting spiritual life.

I was in tears as I thanked her for becoming my guiding light. Sophia had led me to believe in myself. I told her that she raised my higher purpose in life to match her unusually endearing expectations as she reassuringly brushed the tears off the side of my face. She said that

there was boundless time to develop our relationship together with Jesus. Sophia alluded that our love story included family and friends still on Earth, and was a story that would impact their spiritual understanding. She earnestly wanted me to continue to tunnel in love and light to help them solve the mysteries they had with Jesus.

Sophia let go of the embrace in which she held me, and, in that instance, the love that bound us together also connected us to Christ. The Lord emerged to provide his final judgment. He offered me memories of my life on Earth. His voice echoed into the four corners of the universe. I had never felt such joy. My savior created my life so I could develop to my fullest potential, and I began to remember what potential meant in a great consciousness. I acknowledged that I evolved in abilities with the efforts of many souls.

Thinking of Sophia, I realized that she was why I understood how superior love and light were in the world. I acknowledged that Christ influenced all my loved ones in my natural surroundings as I saw remembrances of how nature healed us in a reflexive atmosphere. Sophia beamed that in this divine consciousness, the world had started to realign within the Word of Jesus. With a captivating look, Sophia admitted that she was honored to be my guardian angel, and I answered that she gave me the resilience to lead and serve friends in my lifetime.

Jesus placed a prayer in my soul. In special attention with Sophia and me, His Word inspired us to assist the Earth as angels. As my earthly memories faded, the Lord

spoke of the highest purpose of life, which was for humanity to serve as part of his creation story. I realized that the Lord's final judgment investigated how life relinquished its spiritual blocks to evolve. Jesus referred to my prayers as passageways strengthening all life. Sophia's and my prayers helped Christ's message of love travel through the tunnels of love and light into many hearts. In life, devotion is the secret to building on all friendships. My final judgment was almost complete. Jesus provided the feeling of an influential impact my life had created for others, and his wondrous phenomenon gave me an appreciation for collective awareness.

Sophia reassuringly said that she heard my prayers for her. Her love increased as all our loved ones had stayed in connection. Part of paradise was knowing that the divine consciousness that we helped create was so influential. Sophia smiled. Together, our purpose was to assist Jesus in healing the grief in the world.

I reacted to the miraculous judgment of the Lord. He was always creating in our relationship, and I had faith in his mercy forever. Jesus shared signs and symbols in life to evolve together through him. My prayers expanded to include the whole of humanity. I thanked Jesus for my unique presence in the interwoven tapestry of his creation. As promised, I found my way back to my paired love, Sophia—heaven had joined us, and our unique spirits influenced all life. Jesus Christ's heavenly karma allows love to connect us all.

# Personality Program

# Chapter One

Newborns experience Earth as fresh and original and begin to get involved in their environment by their senses. These senses are almost everything they understand of the world. As the baby's historical experiences develop, the child builds intuition from the past. Their capabilities are the basis for their emotional selves. Within these emotions, the infant will experiment and create their present choices. At that point, the child's behavior has begun to be understood, and the darling infant involves themselves in their world. They utilize their senses to experience the world through sight, smell, sound, touch, taste—and the sixth sense of intuition. The child develops sense-making capabilities to code and decode thoughts for these perceived sights, smells, sounds, touches, and tastes. These perceived experiences from the baby are the basis of their personality. The child's brain generates electrical signals that recognize information and instantaneously produce chemicals to manage emotions. Emotions become so strong that the child is not aware of the depth of their feelings. For the child, life feels like an exploration of their present moments.

A child has a soul. The soul is how the child knows themselves apart from other people, and the soul is experienced by the child on the z-axis of spirit and memory. To understand a child's memory, we first must appreciate that the child is bounded by their senses. It helps to think of the brain creating the child's surround-

ings—sights, smells, tastes, touches, and sounds. In this case, the child lives inside their mind. What is understood from the environment is limited to the recognizable information to the baby's brain. In a sense, the child lives inside their brain, and this is virtual reality. Because the reality is virtual, each child experiences their own perspective on life. Concerning memory, a child can understand four basic levels: sensory inputs, short-term memory, long-term memory, and abstraction. For example, when the child recognizes their blanket in front of them, they understand how the blanket looks, feels, smells, tastes, and sounds. After experiencing the blanket, the infant becomes familiar and does not need to recognize the sensory inputs of the blanket. Thus, they have the memory of the blanket and move to short-term memory. Short-term knowledge of the blanket is day-to-day knowledge for the child, and if there is a memory accessed from long-term memory, it is something worth saving for the child.

The mind creates the perception of time and environment, and the brain is a computational system. Therefore, if the child lives inside the mind and experiences a virtual reality, the child builds a computational personality program. The child's memory—like all of ours—includes abstraction. Abstract memory is like the sum of everything known. Therefore, in memory, on the z-axis, we vertically tunnel our way to light. We can compare abstract memory to achieving intuitive awareness. While memory is comprised of these sensory inputs, short-term memories, long-term memories, and abstrac-

tions, the spirit is outside the mind, and the virtual reality is lived in by the child. The spirit reflects the child from heaven.

The spirit is where the child exists. However, the child is limited to the concept of space and time in reflection due to the memory axis. Regarding the spirit, it is a part of the child looking into the three-dimensional box the child lives within. From the origin point, the baby looks out toward the soul, and the spirit looks back at the cube of virtual reality wherein the baby lives.

In abstract memory, the spirit is in heaven's light and sees everything accumulated together—a history of all things known. Yet the soul chooses to intuitively send messages into the child's life to help them make decisions. Among others, these ideas are known as fate and *déjà vu*. This concept is harder to comprehend and is related to the created virtual reality the child lives in their brain. They see, smell, hear, touch, and feel the environment within their minds, and therefore the child is a virtual character in their mind. Since children live inside their brains, they never understand their brains from outside their virtual reality.

In fact, they live in a universal mind—a universal mind that is unseen. The universal mind is the computational system that is greater than the child can perceive. Think of the universal mind as part of the universe. This universal mind processes the universe's physical quantities, such as weight, time, space, etc., and is how the universe may subjectively be aware of our thoughts. The universal consciousness is also a nurturing part of the

universe that responds to the child. Since the universal mind is between the origin point and spirit, it computes information. The child understands the natural workings of the universe due to the complex arrangement between the universal mind and the child's normal brain. The computation of information between the universal and regular brain has a ratio, and it is likened to IQ. We can also review the balance holistically, noting that the universe has emotional values.

In the child's virtual reality, the perception of the environment is unique. For example, their blanket may have significant meaning to the infant. The universal mind for the child may react with the child with their sixth sense. The child may think of the blanket before the mother or father offers it to them, unaware the child wants it. Because of the child's desires, the blanket and the mother or father may tune into the child's willpower. Emotional intelligence is a unique term to apply here to the sixth sense, and we will use the words interchangeably. There is an intelligence quotient or ratio for the universal mind and emotional intelligence for the universal mind. Equally, the theory is that the child's normal brain is where thought comes before emotions, and the IQ comes before the emotional intelligence for the universal mind. There is very much to theorize on how the universal mind works.

In addition to the spirit and memory axis, there is the right and left-brain thinking axis. As the child's problem-solving abilities flourish, they formulate ideas within their brain's right and left hemispheres. A child usu-



ally will organize information in the left hemisphere of their brain, and this organization pattern is structured and systematic. Another word for this organizational pattern is the schema. The schema understands concepts in a self-represented system. The child can also organize information using the right hemisphere of the brain. I think of this organizational style as the theory of mind. The term theory of mind means the child can put various random points into the big picture realizing how the topics are related. For example, a child may see the color of their house, the street name, the neighbors' address, but not the exact location of their home. Chances are the child can find their home again from knowing the various clues and relate those to their address.

Another axis that makes up the child's being is one of extroversion and introversion. The infant's perceived sense-making and awareness have limitations from listening to feedback. The child can only cognitively experience and consequently listen for so much. Therefore, the child can only determine and control their own behavior. It is nurturing to help the child decide how to react by instructions, allowing the infant to understand their independence. This introversion is likely to produce a mind strong in analytical reasoning. Therefore, introversion helps the child problem-solve.

The mirror opposite idea of introversion is how a child understands relationships, including other people and the items around them. The child's identity builds from having associations and is called extroversion. Developing extroversion helps the child understand pat-

terns of social relationships. The child's brain will grow to allow for the generation of abstract ideas. From understanding friendships, the infant can develop a social intelligence to empathize with other people's perspectives. The developing infant will identify with a social view of introversion or extroversion from people's attitudes.

Understanding the emotions and intelligence of other people or life experiences is crucial to this child. The universal mind and regular brains are applied to comprehend other people and life in their environment through their senses and intellect. Given time, the child has thoughts, experiences, and emotions to guide their behaviors, allowing them to build complex emotions into their lives based on whether they like or dislike other people or life events and experiences.

To summarize, a child has an origin point, three axes or dimensions, and limitations to the recognition of space and time from the constraints of their brain. The brain has a center, and this point can be thought of as the origin point. As determined by using the three axes, the child can move inside their minds—up or down, left or right, and forward or backward. The child shifts in introversion or extroversion with movement, right or left hemisphere thinking, or memory use. For example, if a child favors using their minds from an introverted, right brain, and sensory memory perspective, the baby will initiate activity theoretically in the back visual and motor regions of the right side of the brain.

In subsequent sections of this chapter, we will explore each of these axes, elements, and perspectives in more depth.

## Chapter Two

A child responds to the universal mind with their willpower to intuitively conform. Their intuition is like the spirit advising their regular brains. It is not always easy to understand the intuitive universal mind of the child, and this is because it is abstract thinking. Most of life is a series of decisions, and the child often makes pre-programmed decisions from their genetic blueprint.

The child will often give their attention to life in the environment. The child adapts; they will not relive their genetically imprinted lives repeatedly. The child's genetics then capture some of their decisions in memory. When children react and perform like people around them, it is called modeling. Short-term and long-term values are persuaded in this phase of memory, causing behavior modification. The extreme of abstract memory helps the child adapt to the environment. Therefore, the child understands the modeling of other people's behavior and creates new patterns.

Within the regular brain, there are mirror neurons. The mirror neurons arise from genetics and how the child reflects on their actions. The child works with other people through these mirror neurons and come to understand their modeled environment this way. The abstract memory aspect of mirror neurons is that the child can imagine their thoughts. In the short term, this self-awareness helps the child create their values. The child can store these imagined thoughts in their long-term

memory, and this abstraction in the memory helps form each child's individual personality. The child selects who to follow and how they want to be, eventually growing into the person and character they will become.

God is the model for the spirit, and the soul is the child. Heaven is in the light. The child will be primarily a product of the Holy Spirit as it brings some of the heavens into the child's virtual reality through their will. When heaven is directly affecting the child, these are revered moments. The Holy Spirit, through the will, can affect the child at any time. These moments are the miracles and epiphanies of everyday life. These sacred moments arise as the universal mind interacts with the regular mind and the child's thoughts alter their perceptions. In science, it is called a neural feedback loop. The child can understand the will and will see such animation as having an impact with cause and reaction. When the child becomes willful, they express themselves at the origin of their virtual reality—enacting a self-frame of reference. When the child seeks to impact the environment, they must understand that other people are alive and different.

The child calmly witnesses the motion of redistributed energy in the environment and questions the cause and effect of nature. They learn that life animates itself under its own power and that other lives have souls. When the child understands that life moves itself while objects do not, they realize willpower in life.

Since the child has a self-centered frame of reference, they will filter their emotions through their surround-

ings. Depending on the child's perspective, the other's life may seem happier, sadder, and angrier, more scared, disgusted, suspicious, or more ashamed than their own. The child will read the other's moods with their normal brain, and they may read emotions from the other person's body language. Depending on the individual, some children are gifted at seeing themselves in others and bringing out their moods. If the child can make someone happier, then they often receive recognition. When children reflect on another person's feelings before their own, they are exercising compassion. They develop tolerance and understanding of others' emotions and can recognize these feelings in the body language of other people.

Individuals learn empathy, and it is healthy when a child turns toward other people rather than only themselves. When children only view their own thoughts and do not recognize other people's emotions, they may become ill. It is known that a working memory and recognizing emotions are needed to develop friendships. Emotionally healthy children read other people's feelings; they must be emotionally stable enough to be active in their environment. The child must enjoy friendships to be compassionate. Parents should listen when the child indicates that they feel their environment needs to change for their emotional stability. Maturity often accompanies a child's dynamic requests by being given responsibility.

In the long-term memory, compassion is part of the child's learned values. The child may also learn from oth-

er people in honest conversation, picking up such values as loyalty, honesty, and empathy to differing feelings. Overall, the child must be held accountable for values in their memories and choosing correct behavior in the present moment. Emotionally insensitive children are often cold and fail to interpret the world, instead staying hidden within. This child is hard to engage. Such children can be helped by being given opportunities to work on their memories through play therapy, utilizing toys, or playing together with other children. They may be able to learn to focus on others' emotions and read the body language of others.

Thoughts and emotions are captured from the past to help an individual anticipate the future and utilize working memory. Every moment brings about a chance to expect what the world will create for the child, interpreted in terms of emotions, memories, and sensory inputs. Virtual reality for each child is based upon their past as memories are learned from a buildup of experiences. The child anticipates the future based upon the past, basically because they experience a similar history of emotions and surroundings. For example, a child has celebrated a first and second birthday with cake. On their third birthday, when the lights go low, the child's body grows hungry in anticipation of cake without conscious recognition. Or if they do consciously want the cake, they are assuming emotionally that there will be cake. The values learned from other people are similar. When the same people show up repeatedly, there may be a feeling of hope produced for the child. If this is

the case, the child's personality changes and they become more hopeful when recognizing those people.

Abstraction in memory was introduced as part of the universal mind. The child is growing in understanding and the unconscious processing of information. With their sixth sense of intuition, the child understands the congruence of the situation, which makes them happier—the child is delighted to get the expected birthday cake on their third birthday. If they didn't receive a cake, they would be unhappy and ask for it, wondering what happened. This congruence to expectations is part of the child's unconscious processing of information.

The spirit sends us people in our lives, like the previously mentioned neurofeedback loop, and the universe sends opportunities for friendship. The child may model positive behaviors and learn what is right and wrong through their senses and intuition. Life is what the child chooses. They are willful agents, learning compassion to act more positively in their surroundings. They are actively encoding, storing information as values, determining who they will be and how they will act.

This is a fundamental part of their personality, and it also is an unconscious process. Using their active sensory inputs, they gather emotional information from others, and the child who has more active sensory input seems to have more personality than others. Unfortunately, if the child has no sense of another's life, it is unfavorable. This child's character would only know themselves, and they would only listen to the intellect behind their own



emotions. Because of the value of having empathy and emotional intelligence, the spirit wants us to have a social understanding.

## Chapter Three

The x-axis is about problem-solving. The brain's left hemisphere organizes information like a schema—a broad representation of the child's environment. The child may understand what a cat is, and the term “cat” may be understood by the child under the broader term animal. The child may narrow down the term cat to various subgroups of cats, like Persians. The schemas are how they model information and how the child stores it. To give another example, children learn through experience. The larger reality of the world may seem confusing to the child when they experience something different from their small sample size of the world.

It is essential to understand classical conditioning when discussing what happens when the child discovers the world. In classical conditioning, a child may respond to the environment and encounter a sudden stimulus, and the environment and stimulus get paired because reinforcement and motivation are often paired together. If the child is starting with a frame of self-reference, they may understand the stimulus through that self-reference. The child may grasp the connection between stimulus and reinforcement, helping the child understand their environment. The child models the information, stores the story, and codes the data. This schema is typically done through language. Thus, the child is affected through culture, language, and environment on the x-axis.

While the brain's left hemisphere deals with organizing information, the right hemisphere assists individuals to adapt their mental models. A child may understand the schema to mastery and then re-interpret the model of definitions. For example, the child's blanket may be thought of as a blanky. The child may even want a picture of a giraffe on it. The blanket is defined as mastery, but the child would like the blanket to be altered. The blanket composition is therefore rearranged in the child's thoughts, through parts subtracted or added, with the giraffe picture. This is the right hemisphere of the brain working.

Essentially, the child's right hemisphere of the brain is based on culture. The concept is much like the theory of mind—the child may know many points about an item, and they collectively relate to understanding the whole idea. The more facts learned about the concept, the better the child can refine their knowledge. Therefore, the child will have more opportunities to rearrange the relationship of the idea. With the theory of mind, there is a choice to arrange the information provided for a concept.

A child can examine their thoughts to solve problems, and when they are discussing ideas, they are drawing on their understanding of their culture. There are two types of cultures, individualistic and collectivist. Individualistic cultures measure self-referenced "I" thoughts as free will. Collectivist cultures count self-referenced "I" thoughts as belonging to the group. Suppose the child understands themselves with an "I" opinion.

They begin to perceive the universal brain crunching large amounts of data known as their consciousness. Therefore, imaginary ideas are hypothesized to understand the world. For example, a child may believe in imaginary friends. They may talk and assign qualities to them, and they are the only one who knows the imaginary friends or ideas. Children understand their own “I” thoughts of how the world works, or they relate their “I” thoughts to the world through relationships.

In my experience, emotions are not linked to language and problem solving on the x-axis—problem-solving is cultural. With experience, the child can assign values to those experiences to work out patterns, and in these patterns, the child will measure meaning. These meanings are how concepts work in the surroundings. Language and problem-solving are affected by schema and theory of mind. The child’s meaning of concepts in the environment is a natural outgrowth of language. The child may define these concepts into mathematical quantities, and these measurements impact how the child understands their environment. The child can ask the questions of who, what, why, how, and where, and with each measure known, the curious child will seek more information to attribute to the concept. The child’s subconscious will also measure concepts in the environment. This was thought of as the universal mind measuring natural laws. The subconscious also provides the child’s ability to imagine.

The child begins to theorize and explore situations apart from reality. These imagined ideas for the child

are a lot like daydreaming. The child will have a mental representation of their social world—all the terms, measurements, and meanings are causally tied to that social world. For example, the child may want something added to or removed from their perceived world. The child can make ties, cancel connections, or repair relations with different people based on their measurements involving the social world. The child is manipulating the situation in their mind to understand their motivations. Problems seem to be solved when the imagined and the natural world are in conceptual harmony. When the problem does not seem solved, and people do not react the same as anticipated, the child may feel the world is unfair. However, the child can become more realistic in their social personality. Within the child's "I" thoughts, they seek patterns to understand the surroundings within which they can apply their language. These patterns are often known to the child in the culture's norms, conventions, or values, and this is when problem-solving in the social dimension occurs. As the child learns more about their environment, the better off they will be. If the child masters their environment, they likely will lead in some aspect of life. This is how the child develops a dominant personality. If the child is dominant, they will probably see their perspective reflected in the world.

Life is a field of interactions on a social level. A child does not just have a past and future. They live in the present moment, and the present moment is filled with patterns. But people change all the time in their attitudes

and values, and the culture slants the present moment. The child will understand their surroundings differently depending upon the language used, the symbols seen, and the culture's values. Introversion and extroversion also affect the perceptions of the child, which we will look at in the next section.

For the child to understand fairness, they must fathom honesty. Laws and religion are created based on how we act socially, and ideas of justice and punishment are formed in these cases. Ideally, a child models great people and sets their values in place for their belief system. The child understands laws and punishment for being willful. Here also the child manages relationships and offers compassion from the perspective of other people. They have friendships and learn who are good people to befriend. The child understands the role of their friends. Group dynamics alludes to the child's social cognition.

If the child is a leader, has a strong ethical belief system, and has good friends, they will be drawn to set ambitious goals. Friends will benefit from being part of the group, and as time develops, the exact nature of the group roles will increase. In offering and asking for advice, each friend becomes aware of their position. In time, these friendships should bring love. This occurs through the spirit.

After the child learns a holistic answer to their reality inside and out, they may begin to grasp the spirit. The spirit is watching from their heaven, and the child has always known and acquired information from their souls. The spirit most often interacts with the child from the z-

axis. A brief epiphany on the spiritual and memory axis is how the spirit shows us beliefs from outside our virtual reality. Remember, we are but a projection—a concept of spirit.

The next chapter about the y-axis will discuss how the child seeks out knowledge when there is a lack of information. This is metaphorical, but a mathematician named Gödel provided insight that this lack of complete knowledge is knowledge. This means that the child is aware that there is more information in the environment than they can fully realize, and the child has more wisdom by recognizing their limited knowledge. This idea then encourages the child to look outside their virtual reality. This is also known as soul searching. This may be mental rule-breaking and freedom in their spirit. Again, arithmetic and knowledge are like neurofeedback loops—the child defines meaning as measurements. If heaven is in this context, the child will bring some spirit into their virtual reality. Gödel's concept is also known as the proof of God.

## Chapter Four

Most children are somewhere between rational and irrational in their behavior and understanding, and for the child to succeed in life, they must maintain some perception of reality. Often it is the case that children leave their conversations with illusions about their own identity. The child may see themselves in the person with whom they talk, and they may understand the other person has emotions and then can empathize with the other person. Thus, the child needs to judge feelings with outcomes to understand how emotions fit into the surroundings. For the child, their emotional experience lies within themselves and other people. This introduces the y-axis with logic and social identity—introversion and extroversion. The difference between introversion and extroversion depends upon the relationship between the child's inner logical awareness and their external social behavior.

A child will experience logical fallacies—errors in reasoning that reduce thoughts to be incorrect. Children often make mistakes understanding their surroundings when they can't get past their own emotions, projecting those emotions onto people in their surroundings. The child's faulty logic may cause weaknesses in personality if their emotions are mishandled for a long time. For example, a child could get angry with a person that seemed mad at them. This anger would wreck the relationship between the child and that person in the future, and the



offense might ruin opportunities for friendships with others who even remind them of that person. Unfortunately, these mistakes happens all the time. People create faulty logic every day—instead of being realistic, they emotionally follow the flawed logic they believe is needed to keep clear thoughts.

Extroversion is being reliant on one's surroundings. When the child challenges themselves to identify with their story, they may see different viewpoints on how they think people view them. The extroverted child looks for clues to understand their unique ideas, and they use deductive reasoning. Conversely, the introverted child logically investigates their thoughts about life by first verifying it is true. This child lives by a code of how or why such results about life occur. This learning is introverted because the child is investigating their own judgment. Additionally, the introverted child will find logical reasoning in abstract sequences.

Logical faults begin with the extroverted child's own bias. For example, extroverted children may find flaws in other people more than in themselves. This bias is personal optimism. With this bias, extroverted children may feel they performed better at something than they actually did. They also often blame other people for the mistakes they make, especially in relationships. This is not logical, but the introverted child learns it from culture, family, or friends. Emotion is less likely to sweep the introverted child away in fallacies when they can review behavioral patterns with rational thought. For the

introverted child, seeking the truth may include examining people's habits.

The universal mind does have ways to handle faulty logic. The extroverted child may have joy and hope. The extroverted child hopes that they can manage their relationships in life. The extroverted child is more outgoing and able to rearrange their lives. The universal mind of an extroverted child helps them understand the transitions in their lives, using these transitions to recreate themselves.

The introverted individual also has tools to exist comfortably. Many great introverted people helped build their worlds by being in tune with their universal minds. The universal minds receive clues to revolutionize behaviors. Great introverted people defied the odds of logic because the universal mind is more advanced and "sees" further into logical processes. If the introverted child enters spiritual thought processes, they may communicate with the universal mind. The child may have many epiphanies during their lifetime—times when spirit is involved in the rational redirection of the introverted child's life. For example, if the child is in tune with spirit, they may be more advanced in their thoughts for that moment. A recreation of their life may result from a conversation within the soul. These moments can inspire a faith in themselves, service to others, and the interaction that some event will be valid. Conversations with the universal mind to understand faith is known as living the dream. An introverted child also may just want

to understand the systems in life and the environment, and they tend to be more individualistic.

All children are on various levels of logic and social identity as they deal with their present moment. They may not have previously defined the decisions the introverted child makes in life. The introverted child will have logic for themselves. Logic is an answer to why. The introverted child may answer the question of why they acted the way they did by reasoning. This is different from the problem-solving discussed earlier. In logic, the introverted child explains why by reflecting on themselves. Therefore, the mirror made is a trait—a logical pattern the introverted child will repeatedly use in social situations.

The extroverted child's understanding of the surrounding life is typically used to describe their personalities, and this is because character is often modeled from social relationships. When extroverted children can think abstractly to question why, they can make up their minds and demonstrate trait behavior while the introverted child will inherently measure the logic of another person. The social environment is filled with dynamic behaviors that people act out, and introverted children may understand this and perceive themselves as an actor. This is how other people can measure personality. The introverted child will remember the social interactions and repercussions of these interactions. Therefore, an introverted child may calculate the other person's values as trustworthy, hurtful, helpful, etc.

The extroverted child is very involved in finding out how their influence affects others and their social standing. These social interactions and the supporting details are fascinating to the extroverted child. They may seek logic, but, in a way, it is not as crucial to the extroverted child. However, the introverted child looks at social interactions as abstractions, and these abstractions help them understand from a distance how people work. The introverted child may measure and evaluate those they meet in order to understand the social interaction. The introverted child often values ethical and responsible people; therefore, according to the introverted child's values, they give or take away the credibility of other people.

This mental math of social interaction may be well suited to building on a healthy work ethic. The extroverted child may stress other people's behavioral patterns, and they use mental math to estimate from whom to ask questions, who is responsible for a situation, and how to use their resources effectively.

The parent's role is to bring up healthy children. However, no one way to train a child exists since every personality is different; what is not unique is that the parent monitors the child as they freely explore the environment. How the parent monitors the child is from their rule creation and what the child can responsibly handle. If the rules are logical, it creates social maturity and responsibility. The ultimate parenting is to love the child the best way they can. Parents set an example for the child's success, and parents who repeat their stan-

dards will affect the child's future behavior. The individual will likely make good or poor decisions based on the rules they are brought up with, and if parents reinforce those decisions through example, they will have more substantial results. Therefore, support of love is best.

## Chapter Five

Love strengthens behavior. Love is also classical conditioning. The child understands their virtual reality and stimuli to events or items. Their virtual reality contains the environment, the uncontrolled element. In the environment, there are different levels of stimuli, from unconscious to conscious. The child's ability to control their answer is the variable. The child has an emotional reaction to the environment and does not typically choose those emotions—the emotions of love, fear, sadness, joy, suspicion, disgust, anger, and shame occur consciously or unconsciously. Primary core emotions, such as love, are closer to memories from previous experiences through uncontrolled stimuli. The controlled response is a child's attempt to solve the effects of the stimuli given their colored emotional state, limited problem-solving capabilities, and extroversion or introversion. The child's reinforced behavior lets them feel attached to loved one, and their understanding of core emotions can be complex. The child tends to adjust to successful past behaviors automatically. Therefore, for the child, the processing of emotions is affected by their past. As tricky as understanding emotions and history is, it is even more challenging for the child to retrain themselves for their future.

In certain situations, the child may not want to relive their past. In that case, the child adjusts for the future for healthy fun. Making emotional repairs is like chang-

ing the language the child uses for the past. The child changes their thoughts about their memories, and once the child retrains their minds about the experience, they can reframe their logical perspective. This means the child can choose how their lifestyle is congruent to old beliefs. This retraining is more challenging for an unmotivated child. The child should be responsive—a quality where they are flexible and can change. If the child is unwilling to listen, they will not reframe their logical perspective. The child must also adopt teachings from the environment. When the child hears and learns from their surroundings, there will be errors. Therefore, the child must love themselves with compassion. The child will understand how to tolerate these errors if they are well-meaning and their guiding principle in life is the logical truth. Overall, the child learns new behaviors with trust and love. New emotions help reorganize the child's perspective on how to behave. The child may seek to listen to trusted guidance, looking for that guidance to understand how to heal. It is up to the self-actualized child to listen to their truth. The child will block emotional healing if they lie to themselves. This is denial.

There is a mathematical scale to quantify the child's emotions and observe their past, and this can tie into decision-making. The child trusts their decisions after accounting for the risk involved to develop new behaviors. To understand how the child emotionally reacts, we can measure the chemical stress hormones secreted in the body. This way, the child's anticipated feelings and what they feel can be measured and determined. The differ-

ence between anticipated feelings and honest feelings in stress is due to fear.

An example of this is a child's phobia. When a child has a phobia, the anticipated fear commands their attention, but they can learn to experience less fear through relearning. This process requires new experiences, and the child must be motivated to change. After the fear and damaging emotional behavior are confronted, it is the child's responsibility to overcome the behavior. This is a tricky thing to accomplish. The child must be willing to rearrange their language of thoughts, and they can solidify this new decision-making process with compassionate ideas. The child demonstrates love for themselves in these moments. Although it is not entirely necessary, talking through frightening experiences is an excellent exercise for their healing. In this way, the compassionate child can gain inspiration and hope. Compassion helps us get through difficult past experiences with our environment.



## Chapter Six

Children will play when they master their environments. In this play, the child experiences imaginary and real-world surroundings. The fictional world is within the child's thoughts, and in this imaginary world, risks are assessed, and learned behaviors are believed. The child finds it is worth investigating the idea of evaluating risk and making predictions. The child is estimating their virtual reality while predicting the forces around them. To indicate their behaviors, they must conceptualize their own identity. This willpower is different from simply following instructions to behave. The child willfully acts as a social actor that has dreams and goals that are profitable to them.

For example, the child measures how to dispense income at the risk of enjoying their vision. They have the opportunity to measure how much time or effort they will need to expend to make their dream a reality. The child assesses the chance with a promised result, and they evaluate those risks, given that promise. Something interesting occurs here. The identity of the child varies in response to their dreams in a unique way. The drive the child needs varies and is different for long-term goals compared to immediate satisfaction. There are risks, and the more valuable a child senses their dreams are, the more they are willing to risk. The plans are continuously reassessed given the stakes. The child will constantly assess how much time is sacrificed to progress to their new

updated dreams. If the child characteristically avoids risks, they may never accomplish significant goals in their lives. The question arises, how would a risk-avoidant child transfer skill from one area in life to another if they have no accomplishments? Children with skills for many subjects can transition in life with much more ease, employing common sense.

With much common sense, the child's behaviors are transferred from one skill to another. The brain's development significantly improves due to multiple accomplishments in different areas of study. However, there will always be strengths and weaknesses for each child. But a child's strengths can be their weaknesses. The child will make mistakes. Their variety of skills will help support their language to reestablish their goal or dream after a defeat, and there are methods available to avoid mistakes. Learning defeat is not the end of a plan or drive; it is suitable for problem-solving. Risks are indeed inevitable. The ultimate risk is death, and the idea of death is essentially spiritual. By bringing up risk and spirit, the heart warns the child to appreciate their intuition. The more tolerant and compassionate the child is, the more aware they are of their intuition, and the more likely they are to search for other with those same virtues. The child may be drawn to positive, goal-oriented people who have practices or behaviors that help them achieve in life. Unity is like specialized or learned knowledge.

Leading and teamwork are critical to developing personalities. Children naturally establish teams. On those teams, there are individualistic tendencies, and

language is a result of these conversations. The group will succeed or fall apart, depending on their direction—the way forward to dreams or goals. Each child will have needs that the group can meet. Thus, each child impacts the group. Resources are allocated based on what and how the group plans to achieve in its work. Conditioning the group is assessed.

Groups are created for various reasons. The group's purpose may hold for a long time, depending on how long the dream or goal is wanted. When the plans change, children will alter their personalities to fit the group behavior. If there is a change in behavior that is uncomfortable and emotional, the group culture must respond to the new dreams. This is a highly fragmented way to look at group dynamics because in actuality, the whole group must continue to develop. Goal setting must be oriented around the group's values, values learned from experience.

The group must agree on the safety of their goals. Each member of the group has a voice for the team's outcome. However, each voice alone is not the spirit of the team. The specialized knowledge that drives the essence of a group is necessary, and the nature of the team is a result of each member being valued for their wisdom. Each member is appreciated when they put in more effort to know the group's goals. The group's collective spirit encompasses soul, voice, and action plans for the group. But there is a logical fault in groups—if a member feels they do not fit into the group, they may be logically at

odds with the overall goals. For this member, they may blame others for gossiping or bullying.

This example is why the spirit is so essential to be recognized in a group. The goodwill of group members and goals should be idealized as much as possible. Group members should foster friendships, and within those friendships, mistakes should be met with tolerance. Thus, teams should be compassionate. Being compassionate requires teammates to be mindful of other group members. If team members hide negative emotions, they will hurt the group long-term with frustration or grief. Group members may harbor ill feelings about one another. Blaming like this creates a culture that hinders the emergence of self-respect. The spirit is the group's orientation—goals are praised and inspiration is funneled into good work. Leaders can recognize how to channel resources to inspire members to make dreams or goals come true.

Resources are the fuel to a group's dreams. Resources are likened to emotions, and the team's goals are compared to the group's thought process. To make a group's dreams come true, the group needs resources and strategies. Resources help fulfill the measure of work by team members. The ability to meet the needs of team members is likened to being emotionally balanced. The ability to identify and use each individual's resources will determine the orientation of a group's dream. In conditioning the group, the stimuli are the utility of the members' resources. Decisions are processed by work or the condi-

tioned response. Enduring processes provide success in goals and dreams.

Communication is key, and groups that talk clarify their procedures. These processes are systems that are likened to brains in which decisions logically flow. The group must assess the feasibility of goals. Thinking realistically can quickly outpace imagination. If a group believes in the collectivist culture, then what's best for everyone can hold because the highest form of appreciation in a collectivist culture is to serve each other.

The language inside a group can influence its goals. For example, heaven is like this. Each soul is understood to have a place and function. God, who is like the executive part of the mind, depends on the branches of the body of heaven. He alters the courses of humanity with his Word.

For the group of humanity, the spirit is fundamental. The earth is a land of limited resources, and society requires strong leadership to direct goals during a crisis. The body works together to serve each member. Humanity encounters risks and opportunities in the world, and leaderships need to give resources to specific processes for humanitarian goals. Groups experience opportunities where resources are lacking, and these groups where resources are limited can communicate to other groups to understand how they accomplished overcoming minor mistakes.

Diversity in a group will provide new awareness. Serving humanity is a great lesson, and it helps establish compassion and redeeming qualities. Opportunities ma-

ture, and networks bridge people together. This creates hope as these relationship support positive outlooks. Looking outside the team's group helps build cultural awareness into their ideas and identity. Learning more about other groups' symbols and ways of expression could shift the immediate group's thoughts, norms, and laws. Refusing to learn from different cultures is ethnocentrism and is not likely a tolerant or compassionate position to take.

Leadership must voice compassion in the group. A group must think of rigidity and flexibility in dealing with other cultures. Leadership must understand opportunities to establish new friendships within different cultures require a group effort. If the group wants to involve themselves with a humanitarian goal, leadership can utilize this alliance. Humanity is to be defended, and the purpose of extending life is fundamental.

Group members move into leadership positions when they give their maximum effort to help the group's dreams come true. This is from their dedication and responsibility, and everyone can volunteer effort in this regard. Team members can volunteer to find out where they would like to work. Volunteering is experience gained, and it is best to volunteer where other cultures are involved. Seeing multiple perspectives can help solve problems more effectively. When volunteering, it is good to learn about how the group values justice and fairness. Nothing is easy when providing work for free.

Volunteer where life is rich and don't worry about personal gain. The outcome of volunteering may not be

to gain employment with the hope of being recognized as a leader—leaders develop relationships with the practice of fairness and mercy. A leader must also fight for life, and battling is a small part of the fighting. Enduring is more the message for a group to survive. One can begin to understand the importance of volunteering as they realize sacrifice is important sometimes for a group to survive. The trial of volunteering is to stay. Recognize that there is a history to the group that includes culture and patterns to be valued. Understanding these answers to volunteering will make a good leader. A leader will allow rigidity and flexibility as they understand what will impact groups from another culture with a humanitarian goal. A leader must know when to be rigid and when the group can change their groupthink and talk.

When changes are made in groupthink and talk, the group's culture must adapt. Team members are conditioned with resources for multiple roles. Group members may also have their roles redesigned. In conditioning, the new responsibilities of a team member must be reinforced by the voice of leadership. Leaders must communicate resources and how the members can access them. The reconstruction of group processes is at a leadership level, and once the branches and procedures are decided upon, there must be voltage to make decisions and actions.

Spirit, voiced by leadership, has more voltage than someone at the end of the chain of decisions. This is because leadership is at a high level in processing goals. What a leader does includes listening with their intu-

ition to what the spirit says. Leadership would worship the soul. Included is problem-solving on this global scale, and reality can become dream-like very quickly when enough scale is applied. Goals are like personality traits, and any extrovert ideas are society's culture (e.g., music, learning styles, art).

To witness our society's culture, we must leave our virtual reality and visit other cultures. If money is a problem, reading about different cultures and reflecting on our nation is okay. When visiting other countries, recognize how a culture puts its language together with its concepts of norms, rules, and laws. Also notice how different cultures handle humanitarian crises. Measuring answers could help solve the immediate group's cultural problems and reflect comparative values. Reevaluating values is like reassigning roles. The team member must become familiar with language and place. They need to know which resources are available to them. Great ideas can emerge from epiphanies after learning from other cultures.

Great ideas can also occur from personal experience through intuition. A person may intuitively connect to the universal mind to compute enormous ideas. Understanding the universal mind and the speed that it transfers is incredible to achieve. However, by doing so, the person may access the ability to change the fate of humanity. This is meditative through the spirit. God shifts the future of society through the rate of ratios of decisions made by the universal mind. Suppose one person meditates and keeps up with the universal mind and in-



teracts with God. In that case, God interacts within the lives of society.

Miracles are like waking from sleep. The new day is found, yet we have already received the communicated fate. Suppose the person is intuitive enough and can achieve a level of universal computation. In that case, they begin to understand the spirit of humanity's duality. It is like being a member of heaven and connecting with heavenly subjects and God. With such substantial universal ideas, the person may give clarity to society. Suppose a person keeps up with the universal mind. In that case, they may get a jump on significant ideas coming to fruition for humanity, such as a cure for a disease. I do not know if this is the definition of a prophet, but I do know that spirit works, and it tends to benefit others. Thus, a logic system can be taught through repetition from the group's culture to influence humanity.

## Chapter Seven

We can find an idealized society. Through education, a community can learn about anything it wants. We can acquire resources with cost, which gives society an understanding of a certain level of freedom. Limitations include laws and norms of etiquette—rules are in place for humanity’s sake. The dream for an idealized society includes being more culturally aware because tolerance helps society’s perspective. However, there is a need to motivate citizens who are not putting forth tremendous amounts of effort, and the community needs to get everyone on board with the dream in order to inspire that effort. Where spirit exists and dreams belong, compassion must be awakened, too. When compassion is awakened, society begins to understand different perspectives. Society’s unity belongs to a new social story, and the theme of this story is to be compassionate.

A new experience for different cultures could arise from this society. The idealized society could train given traits from different cultures, and knowing these different cultures and how they work would offer emotional stability in the idealized society over time. In instances where differences occur between institutions, humanity needs to be observed. Tolerance within the society’s perspective is challenging due to the culture’s momentum; however, without the flexibility to change mindsets, protecting mistakes is like training phobias in society. To determine risk and reward, we must look at goals from

a historical and cultural perspective. Society must determine why negative traits exist. Finding the reality, or connecting the dots, does take some math for the community, while understanding cultural cognition helps develop new habits. Emotions are like resources reinforcing actions in society. As decisions are made, the reasons for those decisions must be reinforced with appropriate stimuli.

Changing another culture when there is a problem is not easy—it requires diplomacy, and that includes alliances and friendships. Sharing resources with other countries is necessary. But even when relations are strained, leadership worldwide often changes, providing ample opportunities to reunite with partners that had been estranged. All parties need tolerance to recognize the crisis, and resources are to be offered where logical outcomes are agreed upon. It is a position of security to make alliances new or stronger where change is occurring. A society should estimate how far resources will go toward a crisis for security concerns. If the goals are kept, these associations will be vindicated as humanitarian intervention must have its reflection in our society. Influential leaders review how our community understands the world.

Leadership works within society's vision, laws, and judiciary system. The logic is that leadership should work at a level down from the spirit. Their effort may have as much voltage, but their voice is not heard as much. Judiciary fairness is first in the decision-making chain, and it passes processes and reviews the current

language of problem-solving. Leadership can look toward other cultures where solutions to the issues of limited resources or mistakes have occurred. Errors do happen, but we need to be fair in judging the leaders. The decision-making chain has an enormous cultural scope with spirit, voice, resources, fairness or justice, and order. Leadership justifies a large chain of decision-making and listens for stimuli or conditioned responses. Repetition must occur to ensure action is learned.

Given that there will always be a new crisis occurring globally, the executive leadership decides to allocate resources toward the problem. Other alliances help the society in trouble to heal. The executive leadership develops policies to make successful goals, and education is needed for proper orders or problem-solving. If no suggestions seem suitable, a learned group may meditate on the universal mind for a successful strategy. Hopefully, this actualized society takes time to pause and listen to intuition. Repeating the questions from the same decision-making chains with no answers is insane, but it is possible to ask the same problem from a different chain of decision-making. Possibly it would take a few additional resources to come up with a solution. A review acknowledges the best solution within the parameters that would accomplish the humanitarian goal. Diplomacy can be regarded as how to voice the newfound strategy to achieve the executive leader's goal and policies for the chain of decision-makers.

Going forward is like organizing information in schema and theory of mind. The ordering strategy is

problem-solving, and there should be a consensus in each chain of decision-makers' systems that they have an effective way forward. The executive leader would decide which approach has the most goodness and sustainability to implement. Strategy at this point is fixed of sorts. A policymaker should understand the cultural history and how to adjust the culture now to the new plan. Resources are probably needed to finance the project, so we must accept cost parameters, and where those resources are allocated would be determined for society. Decision-making and strategy are about scale, and if those things could help humanitarian missions, then we could use technology to survive. Technology can help make decisions to protect ourselves and our land.

The grander the scale, the larger the ratio of information a universal mind would operate. There would be a more complex personality program, and the universal reason is like many people working within a group. Discovering many universes or virtual realities would help understand the more extensive and complicated personality program. We will see if the personality program becomes found based on this paper. It may help us understand and forecast the future. In doing so, it would mimic a reflection of the universal mind in our culture. This would be a more natural way to answer decisions as a society. We would get outside of our emotional selves to extend spirit to the culture of the community. The spirit is Word and light. I believe if we truly understand that, we can understand society's dreams.

# **Super Conscious**

The unconscious is a primal realm, and it bears a superstitious resemblance to what we are told early in life. The ability to describe the initial feeling of touching that consciousness is similar to that of a soul searching to assign characteristics to the unconscious. Yet our unconscious is not any more than the energy that lies behind the words we manifest for it. The emotions we present are mysterious. Feeling secure within our bodies is not anything we are taught, and this flexibility inside ourselves to understand pictures and feel comfortable within our memories is false security.

Primal energy provides feedback. If we choose to create language on the input, we risk creating a structure based on rules and code. The primal energy of the unconscious shows us answers to our imagination—it is based on our abilities not to absorb the feedback into our memories but instead to think abstractly to further put our efforts into accomplishing tasks. The primal energy then works on a binary system of thinking: motivation and acting upon suggestions. It is in this way that we must evaluate this initial power. So how do our ideas energize us? To put it simply, we must break the language of our own rule-making and break free to enjoy life.

The other factor in working out suggestions is that humans tend to personalize these images into memories. These ideas conform to our comfort, yet we must allow ourselves to listen and appreciate how to answer the feedback we receive. Here are the ways to stay motivated by and listen for answers from the primal unconscious. One of the common reasons solutions for new ideas are

repressed is that people are unmotivated and untrained. You can train your mind to stay motivated to understand the primal energy's logic by observing nature—processing the signs in life and the environment as early energy communication. However, these signs should not become superstition or false gods but rather be used as signals from the environment to create the layers of rules you live by. The abstract world is very different from everyday ritualism. As you learn to take your signals from the environment, you will begin to be motivated to hear and enjoy the conversation between you and the unconscious.

The other half of the binary system is to listen for answers. Asking for assistance to manifest solutions to problems is very personalized. We often ask for guidance only to see images that tell us exactly what to remember. This mental busywork on the suggestions we receive is in opposition to the primal unconscious. Let your imagination relax and find comfort in emotions that may be foreign to your body. Examine these emotions. Generally, it is less about you and more about being involved with the circles of life around you. Open your eyes—not to memory, but to the active communication expressed in the unconscious around you.

This listening and eye-awaking of the primal energy is only the foundation. We must observe life around us and listen to what vibrant symbols of emotions our observations express. Can you learn from others' lives? Are you in control of how you are willing to respond? Does the unconscious's imagination take over in providing



more feedback when we allow it to manifest in these communications? I believe the answers to these questions are yes.

Thus far, we have learned to tune into the primal unconscious and listen or observe the world. By doing this, we turn from being caught in our self-centered ideas to regulating our fears and allowing the first unconscious the willingness to enter into these conversations and observations. As easy as it might seem, the people you encourage with the answers you receive from the primal unconscious will be drawn to you. Allow this. The nature of the first unconscious contains the beauty of resolving dilemmas. I believe that wondering about other people's needs may be likened to prayer. Understanding that you may see signs and symbolic abstract answers in greater complexity allows the unconscious to filter your prayers for others in nonhuman ways. Sometimes, imaginative dreams will provide immediate solutions to problems, but prayers are typically answered through an unexpected connection.

Finally, the person or life you want to work with through observation and communication must possess a general willingness to work with you. Understand the unconscious does not or will never ask you to force itself into your actions. You will likely feel the unconscious repress itself if you do this, to the extent it will almost disappear. This repression may result in difficulty remembering your actions.

The simple unconscious answers are between a dream stance of reality and the suggestions we remember

to act upon through the realization we have when we listen. The unconscious is primal energy—it creates reality or at least a perception in existence for each person listening and praying with its presence. Take, for example, the analogy that we have been created through our parents' likeness. If we do not realize the sameness, we would never be different, instead choosing to live in the same genetic patterns. This is like the language we learn as children and the memories endowed through our DNA genes. The picture of life struggling to take a different path only enhances the bind to make many similar patterns between each parent in their life. The person willing to remove patterns and forget why they are fighting these ideas may resolve the differences in their past opinions, including who they are in the grand scheme of life. Relaxing into this noble conversation can help you become a historical figure of adaption.

How do we determine the level of opposition we face when speaking with the primal unconscious? How much do we get in the way of knowing the unconscious in a personal relationship? It is like understanding yourself as a bully. If you force decisions onto the unconscious and your interactions with other people involve telling them your frustrations, you may also be a victim of habit. The result of awareness is that you can isolate your problems and strategize how to become someone better. In this regard, bullying others for fun or out of frustration is about desiring power. The power that seduces all is that of control, yet the patterns we choose to

face are often familiar. We fight through fun and frustrations only to be in similar problems time and time again.

It is important to notice the state of victimhood we experience when we internalize power against ourselves. If you repeatedly ask the exterior world to stop hurting you or blame others for your frustrations, you will experience yourself as a victim time and time again. Internally you cannot get angry at others for how they feel about you unless you think there is malicious intent. Better yet, what if the harms someone intends for you were against the law? If not, your internalized upset may make you fight even harder against being a victim. This pattern only brings out more problems—as people watch you, they may get frustrated with you and bully you repeatedly for fun or from frustration.

We see the motivation of control in external and internal implications. As noted earlier, we learn specific ways to handle these power and control situations from our parents and from our DNA. The idea that we can listen to and observe the primal unconscious as a method to resolve these emotional patterns that shackle us. Do not feel frustrated by power, and control your situation to communicate with and act to befriend your enemies. Your life becomes one that follows the golden rule. There is a lesson in life where the unconscious interrupts your patterns to leads you to a life of notability. Choose to befriend the masses that would cause ill will, and the power dynamics will be played out with your enemies in this life. You will face many adversaries, and through the unconscious help, this can be enjoyable. Your fearless at-

titude might surprise you, and people will be in awe of your wisdom.

You can learn how power and control can work for you instead of against you. The emphasis is on understanding others are helpless—they are mindlessly acting upon their patterns and go to great depths, using the resources they have, to show themselves they are correct. Learn from that helplessness by refusing to be a victim.

Do not hang out with enemies to please them, but show them that you appreciate their assistance in pointing out your faults. Even more, understand that they want to be in your company for a reason. They liked you for a reason and found that reason attractive enough to investigate. Find out where they are coming from. Ask them a few questions and lead with the results if you can. This wisdom leadership is a blessing, and it shows you care enough to help them in their lives.

The anticipation that the bully will begin hurting you may be genuine, and their patterns may be confused to the point that they try harder than ever to bully you into *their* familiar routines. Remember, they are mindlessly following only what they know about you. This is where you can show bravery by living the golden rule. Tell the bully that you are happy to advance the conversation or say you appreciate their fun attitude, and then do not fight back. The bully wants you to fight with them, providing a defensive approach for them to attack you. Remember that fighting is being the victim unless you must defend yourself because of malicious intent. Instead, play along with what they bombard you with

and befriend them by praying for them. Remember that there is a difference between a criminal and a bully—a bully can be led along into friendship. The ability to be brave in the face of fear is power. Living by the golden rule is a specific ability to understand the other person's habits.

How does the unconscious have an ability to interweave your moments of breaking old patterns with living a better life? In the same way you have repressed your youth and genetic patterns—the repressed patterns will seem like habits you used to play out *but will seem foreign*. You learn so much from the lives around you that playing a new person will eventually lead to different opportunities to strategize your life. The opportunities to break old patterns occur when you get along with yourself and other people. By living the golden rule, you will pray for others and learn to investigate unusual opportunities to solve radical problems. By never playing the controlling card, your life will be adaptable. To solve problems in abstraction is a lesson in learning how to handle your life in balance.

I believe that seeking opportunities in life is the same as looking for signs in the environment. Solving complex interrelationship problems then is like prayer. Before becoming a great person by forming a direct relationship with the unconscious, you must work on various levels, and you will begin to become a great communicator and leader within your culture. This is where history may challenge and change you.

There are many names for the primal unconscious. Many involve a spirit of sorts. My understanding of the first unconscious is something much more observational. We cannot think at a level abstract enough to understand all the universes. We strain our brains to understand just what occurs around us. The unfiltered ideas that arise around us may view some unconscious suggestion entering our souls. It's a law of events that occurrences happen with or without us being where we are. The amount we process is a conscious effort. But what occurs in a different, more abstract thought process is unconscious. How that relates to the primal energy is something to be explored.

The consciousness is happening whether we want it to or not. We use patterns to put up barriers in our attitudes. These patterns are both helpful and unhelpful. We likely know how we deal with practices if we determine our ways as applicable. Often we talk to people about what we enjoy, but what if we do not want our lives to be as they are? Is this then unconscious? Do we eliminate from consciousness the things that bother us?

Simply put, there are many reasons to befriend your repressed consciousness. This is called your shadow. It often plays out in your life and hurts when you continue to fight with it. It is like you are playing the victim of patterns to repress your conscious attitudes, and then the shadow bullies you to confront these ideas in very motivating ways.

But what of the abstraction that the primal unconscious suggests to you? The world is not hurting you,

and the spirit that you have loves you. The idea is that when we move opposite to this condemnation of our conscious patterns, we get in our own way. It is then you are in opposition to the primal unconscious. The shadows and demons of your past are haunting you. The way to understand what blocks you is to live by the golden rule of life.

What bothers you most, or has an emotional quality that is very unpleasant, may be your shadow. The presence of what you don't like and your repressed conscience will draw out pain and agony. Often these are the emotions that cause you to neglect examining the suspicious patterns themselves. For instance, if you had a tough time with friends teasing you and began spending time alone, the shadow of being teased might stay with you. When you see this pattern play out in life with other people, it may personally offend you or strike a nerve even though you are removed from the actual teasing. The emotion of being offended and hurt is the same, but you are repressing or blocking the answer from the primal unconscious.

If you falsely agree with the behavior you dislike, you are detaching from the damaging patterns and feelings and keeping yourself from the possibility to awaken to your understanding of the primal unconscious. You must confront the bullies you feared in your youth and understand their side of the issue. You must look at the topic of the disagreement with a detached personal point of view to learn from it. This soul searching allows the primal unconscious the ability to suggest reason

from what has occurred. It does not mean that life is always fair, nor do I imply a karmic force at work. I am suggesting that being in reserve and appreciating the moments you may disdain for a genuine reason. Once you follow the primal unconscious through broken patterns, your mind, body, and soul can filter what was blocked in your understanding, and you will awaken from dormancy.

The greatest challenge to the unconscious is to have people reside in temporary silence. The unconscious may or may not be willing to solve problems and will work to solve more present issues instead. The thought of conscious will leading the unconscious is a popular idea. We get these roles mistaken all the time, and we should reverse this conscious and unconscious balance. The unconscious has the answers that work in the far background of your mind. It can provide creative and miraculous thoughts. There is little need to be as willful as we are in a world where creativity and miracles are needed. An example of will is treating a day as oriented by morning, afternoon, and evening, and while routine solves a few problems with decisions, it may take away time for the unconscious to help guide our lives.

For the person who allows the unconscious to guide their lives, the balance enjoyed includes more fantastic fun and provides more energy. Observe people as they go about their routines—routines which may help or hurt their balance—with how willful they are. Introspection is always acceptable, yet it's important to remember to serve others' needs in finding solutions to



their problems. This then can be thought of as fun and play. Time does not determine a game, so relax and accept the innocence of enjoying the primal unconscious.

How do we know which force has become something of a foreigner to us? How does the unconscious allow thoughtful dialogue? This influence can be the same as hypnosis, but you're not totally under a trance. The unconscious is limited in its ability to be alert enough to see and understand foreign prayers—it is up to the person to understand that outside influences are part of life. The world reacts and flows together. No one is free of other people's power, and we must understand that we see the instances in our thoughts similarly to the way people close to us see them. Remember that we are no longer fighting the people around us, and we can still enjoy other people's behavior. We can also begin to think of who is praying for us. If that thought that may seem foreign to us is of another person's qualities, or the idea matches the other person's feelings, then enjoy the prayer or reflection. We must challenge the thought that we are alone and unconnected to the influence of the people around us.

Therefore, when you pray, understand that prayer has an effect, too. Do not feel that leading a prayerful conversation is complicated. If you appreciate a person, then listen for their voice. Listen to their emotional qualities. Listen for a moment in silence to lead them along. This has nothing to do with your wants. Prayer helps others solve problems. We do not put people down nor do we force our thoughts onto a person. Understand

that the unconscious guides us, and feel free to let the unconscious into a prayer. It is only there to help.

The whole world is your audience. Our entire surroundings, networked through the unconscious, can still only understand prayer in limitation. That is how minimal our understanding of worship is. When we begin to observe the slightest movements and hear the tiny inflections in another person is when we become aware of their emotional capacity. They will often say something contrary to their emotional state, and in this contradiction, use your intuition to understand their intent. Our unconscious provides us intuition when we maximize the knowledge we receive from it. Being flexible enough to see our reaction to the other person's emotions and words allows us to respond effectively. We should be careful not to disagree too abruptly—to begin to administer judgment is moving too quickly. Let us slowly gain insight into what our surroundings tell us. The assessment is already provided in a response that resonates with us in our emotional capacities.

Do you get upset quickly with yourself? If so, work to understand why through questioning the unconscious. Let its massive problem-solving capacities work for you. Then give your conscious mind time to become aware of the solution.

Do you understand how this mirror works? Do you see the resistance in front of you through someone's emotional capacity or body language? They give their thoughts, logically based on the conversation, and we give our answers to them. This helps them solve their

problems and allows us to become aware, very slowly, of our own beliefs. To reject or accept the other person's logic without observing their emotional state forces us to agree or disagree consciously. Understand that the unconscious is more inclined to watch you as you follow others and pray for them. In time, you will see a mirror shatter, which is in recognition that you have processed your life's purpose. You will see that the person you were is something entirely different from the person you will become.

To this new self the unconscious mind will speak very rapidly. You will move through life with new knowledge. You have acquired the flexibility to respond to situations based on suggestion, intuition, and the verbalization of the vibes you are aware of. It is much like seeing someone, a foreign influence, in prayer. Instead of in a prayer, you will become alive in the primal unconscious. The mirror of self-reflection and your ability to fall into narcissistic behavior will be obsolete. The way you perceive unconscious thoughts will be very small or subtle in movement. You will see how people ignore little imprecise gestures or inflections, but you won't miss noticing these tiny movements. All conscious people will begin to seem like oddities. Your observations alone of their actions will alert you to how they genuinely feel about a topic although they most always will consciously be talking within the current ideas of public thought—most people grapple with and reflect popular trends even when they resist certain logic in popular ideas or beliefs.

Witness the strong current that moves through the people around you. Sit and enjoy the slightest imperfection. The little details make you aware. You will see the mirror come crashing down when you reinvent the new you. Conscious attempts to crack this mirror will only make that maze more treacherous. Instead, pray. Pray always. Allow the currency to hold your actions when the unconscious suggests no movement. This is the art of being one with your surroundings. It flows through you like electricity. Never force this feeling and just let your awareness be small and slowly accept your intuition. Own the mirror.

I believe that there is a whole system corresponding to the unconscious. This conscious system is often divided from the unconscious, yet we are aware of the details and emotions in our lives to the extent that we feel the unconscious flow of life energy in each moment. The next step of understanding how to integrate the unconscious into your life would be through relaxation of mind and body.

Do you often hold stress in your body? Do you feel like resisting ideas and still go through with those ideas anyway? How do the actions of others make you think about your own body? Body and mind awareness can help you become less stressed in life. Remember that the energy that flows through life goes into and out of your body also. Allow yourself to be in the moment. Allow yourself to feel accepted by yourself. Know you can withstand the forces acting with or against yourself by agreeing and disagreeing. You can love others.

This dwelling of thought is one of supreme intellect. Giving yourself the ability to slow down and see details is excellent. Slow down to understand the physical emotions that your body harbors. This self-awareness is entirely worthy. You need to allow the unconscious the time to provide feedback from the world you encounter. Things change, and you also will. You will excel in confidence because you will be in tune with your surroundings and your limitations. Investigate your purpose and relate the concepts to others through prayer or writing them out. These inspired ideas will take the conscious by surprise when it sees the opportunities in life to fulfill your dreams.

This is all about accepting that you are not consciously driving the behavior. Let the unconscious solve these ideas and let yourself dream of being in balance with your environment. This self-acceptance is a route to success and stress-free living. You will live out fantasies. Remember that something may be in the right place, but you might feel it is the wrong time, or vice versa. The conscious is the idea of time; the unconscious is the feeling of an appropriate place. It takes time to understand your place in this world. You might live your dream, but only if you allow it to happen. It is a matter of confidence and comfort.

The people that communicate in prayer are, therefore, easily determined through listening. As they become more familiar, they may stand out in your thoughts and you may develop a curious affection for these people. The unconscious will recognize these people in your

thoughts over a given amount of time. Therefore, prayer will become more comfortable as it will develop a specific space in your thoughts, and it may feel like these people have a position within your mind that is fixed. They may have different characteristics and a different feel compared to others, and the people around you will be a bit more transparent. You will be able to pick up on how they talk and understand their body language. As you focus on these people and their respective places, deep energy bonds will be more evident. Your relationship with the focused person will become something of a fusion between the interests of both people.

The conversation's resonance will then be between thoughts and prayers, and the bond will grow stronger. As you focus on their position in your thoughts, connect the prayers they provide back to yourself. Interestingly, this is a foundation skill in communication, and many people have not achieved it. Observation is crucial in estimating what our senses tell us, and this skill is fascinating to have.

As we come to expect suggestions and answers, we also find the timing of events to become a bit less coincidental. As the events occur, we are in an unconscious attitude where we almost realize what can happen. Serendipity is real, but it is something we understand by training the mind and unconscious. When we have these moments, we should just allow ourselves to be amazed. The wonder of events is then what I call epiphanies. Epiphanies are the wisdom of the unconscious. Relating to the unconscious through grateful answers is some-

thing beyond living a purpose, and you are becoming whole again. As these things manifest, the wonderment graces our lives slowly as we begin to realize that time is cyclical and not a schedule. Living within cyclical time means some ideas have precedence over others, and they often return throughout the days. Many different ideas return to us throughout the day, and some return in various levels of priority. I believe we can try to understand these ideas with the same amazement as the moments of serendipity.

How do some people have answers before a subject comes up? Have you ever unconsciously prepared an idea only to realize that an exact moment happens to allow for your response? This is much more than hinting at a topic with others. These are your cyclical moments being trained to elevate your primal unconscious into a superconscious. Allow yourself space in your mind and allow others their places or positions. In this case, you will reflect less on the idea that life is magical, and you will probably see it as a training lesson. Here the unconscious will continue to provide ideas and then present them to you in the world.

Whereas we had previously thought of ourselves as a single person, and as time is broken into cyclical sweeps, we recognize that what we had thought of as individual emotions may be inherent in others and vice versa. This leaves room to understand the non-intentional effects of being in a prayer circle—each group has people who allow others to believe. This belief is an understanding of an unlimited consciousness or superconscious. We then

begin to understand together psychic phenomena such as imagery or dreams. The unconscious is something interacting with us in the prayer circle, and it has energy that is unlimited. The more we pray together, the more meaningful our lives are, and the more each person will feel inclined with external unconscious behaviors.

Is it mystical? Perhaps not. The idea that we create something more than what is given is false, so we can explore the shared energy. Through the unconscious, we believe in helping others. This charge from the prayer circle is an interaction with an unlimited resource because more people can always be part of the ring. Unfortunately, it seems that each member individually interprets each sensation—some will have clairvoyant ideas whereas others will feel at peace. Understanding a peaceful feeling is coming in line with nirvana, and clairvoyant thoughts feel extra perceptual. In any regard to which can be understood adequately, it is probably less about an individual and more accepting that you are in a large prayer circle. The person with the ability to code and decode such prayers holds a gifted talent, and they often meet other spiritual masters along the way to guide their travels.

Sometimes we find we have emotional blocks. What does it mean to have emotional blocks, and what does that matter in the unconscious? Do we ever receive permission to believe in ourselves to get past emotional blocks? It is typically thought that we use our own will to get past specific ideas that hold us back. We use our will to overcome the problems we encounter and survive



for another day, hoping to have learned from the experience. Yet the unconscious does not often provide these opportunities, and the unconscious is not forceful.

The idea that we grow in strength from understanding that time is cyclical is very intriguing. How do we realize our patterns, and how do we resolve patterns? We cannot take the world by storm just to demonstrate our willingness to be superior. It is easier to reduce the desire to change and understand our perception of opportunities created by our unconscious.

You observe the world, and you see the needs of others. This opportunity is an exciting part of the process. You will see in time which opportunities you shy away from and which you embrace. The unconscious could suggest how to help make an opportunity into a reality.

You are blocking your emotional responses if you understand this topic. Emotions are helpful to feel confident and regulate our bodies, but they can stand in the way of opening to opportunity—an emotional reaction may block an opportunity to live a healthier life. We realize through memories and DNA how to act in the present, how to emotionally react to a situation, but it is helpful to let our feelings soften. As we reduce the judgment of others, we will ease our emotional reactions of ten time.

One example is when we experience fear. We can move one step at a time to be less fearful. The fear we experience is most likely from the past, and the unconscious pulls on that memory and is trying to maintain healthy relationships in life by avoiding the situation.

Therefore, if the unconscious senses fear as a problem, it may suggest overcoming the situation.

This is not a quick process—take everything at a pace you can handle. The amount you can soften the emotion is about the time it takes to overcome fears. This, then, is the key. If you are afraid of some problem, then take minor steps toward overcoming that fear. In time you will learn to adjust your emotions unconsciously to prepare for the issues that arise. Techniques to visualize the results can help your willingness to understand an outcome. Just learn to be observant and allow for play to occur. It sounds backward to let problems into your life, but it is through your ability to experience and interact positively with these problems that you can have a healthy life.

The superconscious is an idea that goes well beyond a prayer circle and is tied to the concept of identity. Even when everyone is well and good, you will increase the joy in the surroundings. In the case of causality, the effect does not occur unless you allow the mood to regroup without interjecting your personality. Societal groups are helpful if a person can demonstrate actual natural characteristics of the superconscious yet bring the energy of others ahead as well. The superconscious in a group, then, is the ability to feel how others respond to one another. Your personality is not there to control but help. The ability to acknowledge fault correlates with the ability to forgive, and accepting the faults of others is something that prayer shows about loving others. These so-

lutions are not something people necessarily need but want to listen to.

The most significant part of leading with a superconscious personality is that you will be significantly accepted as a team member and seen as superior through the love you show. This love is evident through the help you provide and aiding others to understand their situation more clearly. To prepare for interacting with people and relationships, you must care for them. The knowledge of the superconscious is necessary to grow stronger in relationships. The ultimate way to share your ideas from prayer is to discuss others' strengths and sometimes their weaknesses. This allows personalities to develop and goals to be set together.

The unconscious is overabundant, and new ideas are put forth that are neither great nor horrible—a person needs to remain in balance with their conscience. This adaptation from being made aware of consciousness is one instinct to resolve past mistakes and break patterns to avoid these mistakes going forward. It is in the rebuilding of self-aware patterns that we choose to identify in our friends and families. Thus, if one should behave in a strange new way, prepare to be a stranger. The identity you will morph into is unfamiliar to others because they struggle in their old patterns. If you just allow the remodeling to continue, you should create friendships from a new perspective. Do not hold back—those prayerful relationships will grow in familiarity. The people you trust who give you the feedback you need to

grow as a healthy individual are necessary, so ask for their time.

This is about realizing who provides valuable feedback; therefore, you must consciously recognize whom to befriend. It is easy to fall back into old patterns with older friends, and it is the same way that all people fight to stay unconscious in deep sleep and natural patterns. Avoiding this must be recognized consciously. You are becoming aware of the natural inclination of being a new person—you must help yourself in this life as well. So take time now to examine two roads—one filled with more familiar people or the other where you find yourself getting along with new friends and opportunities.

In the heart, there remains a balance. This is hard to acknowledge, but we have specific unconscious energy in the heart that drives us. It is not typically shared, and it is often felt in the emotions we experience such as pain, happiness, and anxiety. Thus, the heart supplies the intelligence that we desire in many moments. It's challenging, but the idea that I'd like to share is that many relationships can provide a beneficial effect on the unconscious. As earlier said, prayer circles help influence an unconscious to become superconscious. You allow many people into your heart in prayerful experiences with these friends, and this balance in the heart shifts its center. The mind decides the minute details of our lives, yet the heart changes a person's overall direction. Your minute superconscious decisions will reflect their goodwill also. A single person does what is best for themselves, yet the prayerful person, with many loving relationships, can

guarantee they will do what is best for their friends and family.

Many relationships can affect our superconscious. It's not always easy expressing to a family or friend with whom you feel a strong relationship what prayer looks like through the heart and that sincere prayer changes the heart. The feeling that you are guarded with them probably fits with past pain. Let love cure that pain. The heart is sincere, and it will address future possibilities with those friends. Tough decisions that are big decisions must be made with a heartfelt conversation. Leave the details for later, and express the anxieties, the hidden passion, the new qualities in confidence with those you trust. Admit to yourself that prayer can change people and that you will find a home in your heart for your fondest friends. The discussions with these friends can take many shapes. Depending on how your home feels and is regarded, heaven can be a place where people freely come in, and through the heart you must restore your balance with the right superconscious attitude.

People do not believe everything they hear as honesty, and they may listen to threats or other negative emotions when the truth is present in a heartfelt conversation. Of course, genuine conversations are exceptionally delicate, and one must always pray for the other person in a sincere discussion. The challenging idea that each person will enjoy feedback or possible solutions to problems for a life-changing moment is almost impossible to predict, so why have the conversation?

I believe that each person may end up enjoying these ideas in a difficult-to-understand way. Having a heartfelt conversation may help them realize a trait that makes their own life difficult, and they may realize that the person who is making their life difficult is not you or someone else, but possibly themselves. Feedback may be crucial, and remember that these hard-to-hear ideas are never about the person's intellect or attributes but that certain habits or traits maybe impede their progress to happiness. The growth then is to reduce the self-sabotage that presents itself as suffering. Do not be a victim. Do not create two sides to a whole conversation. Pray together and know that each will be willing to inspect their part in the relationship.

The unconscious tends to help maneuver the conversation in a positive direction, so if there is any solution, the unconscious helps the process of growth along. Take your time and continue to work on the relationship. This is not always easy work, and it is difficult to know when to be completely honest with the other person. It is not a pattern of helping someone discover what is right for you—it is the knowledge that suffering helps us understand prayers to be realized. What does the other person want, and how do you acknowledge their suffering?

The surroundings play an integral part in your unconscious attitude toward yourself. Realize that many limiting beliefs surround you. Those limiting beliefs are training you to what you can achieve. However, you can tell yourself self-truths while the surrounding people are teaching you to have limiting beliefs. This contradiction

in relationships is difficult to navigate. You must either agree or disagree with those limiting beliefs, and how you respond to them trains your conscious attitude.

But could you also train others to match your self-told truths? What if you told other people that you understand their concerns yet see how they want you to succeed? You might take the unconscious approach and allow yourself the attempt to say to others, from their position, just how you'd like them to think of you. This then helps the discontinuity of your self-told truths and the alignment of the surrounding people's limiting beliefs for you. If anything is possible, tell others how they have the ability to open their mind to change's real possibilities. Challenge those people to see your viewpoint. You have the right to live your life without accepting failure.

In addition to beginning to train others to your self-told truths, you can begin to develop a rationale of compassion. Empathy for others should have become a strength with the amount of prayer already invested in your approach and perspective. We honor people who live out their word and respect those who are honest. Thus, we must allow flexibility for the understanding of why limitations exist. Learn from the inside. What are your impressions of the genuine people who have had hard times or good times in life? What lessons did they learn? The superficial conversations may deepen into an understanding of the path to living an extraordinary life.

Your surroundings reflect your new level of existence, and its excellence gives you the courage to care for

yourself even when in the company of those who don't acknowledge it. This leads not just to your own opinions of yourself; you show the unconscious to new levels around you. The gift that you bring is a shared empathy for others, yet you move in a way to acknowledge their love in life. Your opinion of what is loved may become a movement for the unconscious to grapple with.

Spur on the love that the masses have and find yourself at the heart of what desire means. This is to build a life in the world in which greatness is accepted. Know you are worthy of this love. Realize you are a beacon of light in the nighttime. The worth of your efforts to observe, pray, make friends, and support the love around you is the foundation of your life. I promise you will get the purpose. This is the purpose—you humble yourself to support others and they will accept you. Their graces will have an effect. The conscious must be provided for, but always give the unconscious its belief.

The examination was to sacrifice your time, and effort is key to supporting others. The necessity that comes from answering to your faith is calling. Many will require your time, love, and support, and you can harvest a relationship this way. Yet we stretch only so far, and the group might need more than we can offer. How do we acknowledge our limits to others?

This then is hard to imagine. Saying no to people we love is not unloving them, and it is still supportive. Yet that support must include how to train others to be self-sufficient. The ways to do this are many. We offer individual personal attention, or we can write out our rules.



We can create a class, or we can demonstrate the skill set in other ways. It is not too much to help others along if you need to take some time for yourself. The buffer in this help and personal time is physical space. Know you are allowed to give yourself personal time. This seems counterintuitive, but the love you share must be harvested and reflected. The person most needing time could be you, or it might be the other person, or it could be the relationship itself. Reflect on ways to relax, and at the same time you are reflecting, enjoy your life. The main point is to provide support *now*. People are willing to share their love with you, and this also opens those other needs, patterns, and requirements that are needed from you. And be careful not to extend too far too soon.

I want you to know that at the end of life, we continue to live. Our souls do not disappear, and we strive to live in a way that makes suffering less pronounced. This is for the glory of the afterlife. When I allow myself time to reflect, I choose to reflect upon the mass of angels in the afterlife. I decide to settle in and offer to my time to this. I believe this is within the scope of meditation.

The conscious, unconscious, and superconscious are not as important as these ways to pray. The best prayer is for love from God to survive. His is the greatest love for all and anyone. So, I say this: If you need time alone and want to feel rejuvenated, speak to God. Speak for strength. Speak about your troubles. Hold nothing back. Let his power guide you to an answer. Let the whole resources of heaven provide you grace. Let everyone know what is essential to you. In heaven, the solutions are not

so improvised. I believe in heaven we love and receive love. Thus it is harder to falsify feelings or emotions as something we can hide from ourselves.

Many answers go back to heavenly help. The hand of God is partially invisible and what is seen is the rippling nature of his love for you. We don't see the mercy given, but we feel a happy and tranquil heart. What I'm describing in this chapter is, in many ways, of a progressive nature. What I'm providing is a look at the mindful ability to use meditation for the good of everyone living around you. You may notice that love has given you more to discuss with those same people.

God will have you in his hands. The purpose of love is to create heaven on Earth. If you find your life becoming more serene or extra perceptual, give this mercy to others. Let God work in your heart. The wings that he provides are fantastic. Earn those wings today, tomorrow, and maybe for the future. We all benefit from each day you provide his love in your relationships. Your friends and family will become endearing to God as well, and thus you will genuinely work his words into your life.

# **The Light and Filament**

God said, “You are not in the world currently. You are within my love. Your soul is gathering my emotions of love for each person. You believe in my nurturing hand, and, in this world, we know how frustrated you were with a lack of respect for other people. You judge too often, and it keeps others apart from you in relationships. You, the author, need to respond with a softer outlook on life.”

Then I felt God ask what I judge from others. The judge himself, Jesus, stepped in and replied that I was often in pain and not necessarily wanting relief. At that moment I saw my judgment, and I saw the way I would typically respond. Because of remorse for what my life turned into, I would usually justify closing myself off from God’s loving embrace.

But God replied, “Forgive thyself as Jesus had done for many ages already. It is to feel the comfort and sweet grace he has in your admiration for others. Yes, where you, Author, have praised others, Jesus has helped encourage that mindset. It is from this education to love others and yourself that we begin.”

I felt incredible love from the praise revealed through the Savior of other people. It was not just a miracle that I began to want relationships in my life—it was something of a celebration for me. That God would like me to reach his extension of heaven that came into our universe is unreal. It’s incredible to think that the one true Father felt he could help me reach heights of awareness I never understood before.

“You should understand that God is represented in life as well as in heaven. You sought out the inferior as you walked in life, and people kept emotional congruence with how you viewed this flawed self. You want others to know the real, healthy you. How is it frustrating to understand your opposing self in other people? This asymmetry is well defined here already. You choose to feel good in love and praise other people, yet you judged. And that which you judged kept appearing as a shadow in yourself. That shadow was him—the serpent that presented himself.

“For you, Author, what you judged to be unholy became your perversion in thought. That perversion was fear of your fundamental desires.” It was an elderly spirit who spoke to me, an archaic voice who possibly sought the reckoning himself. “Judgement involved your ideas, true? It is in that you need to listen to God the Father.” As I felt the spirit leave my side, I wanted to ask him for more guidance. I wanted to ask, *Where should opposition surface for my submission to God? Where would I help others by sacrificing my judgments?* I was curious about this because I wanted to learn from the visiting spirit.

He continued: “Please remember that the universe is of your mind. You see, feel, and think out the reality around you because you reside within your brain. I would love to set you around the universe. You may understand the willingness of the serpent more than you understand me, and he influences your every move. Please allow my words to influence your perception of reality. The holy good is involved. The people who love

our planet are here, and, to an extent, there are formidable forces that wait to help you understand these lessons—understand the right move with a total spiritual depth of personality. You do not just believe and act right.

“We are a part of you, so we must share the basis of living here. All the universe is a perception of the marvelous light of heaven. The tainted view you have of yourself judges you and takes your fictitious idea of control away from the Holy Ghost. It is then that God wishes you whole with him. The judgment is returning to you in a mirror opposite to remind you of your feebleness. Never give this sacred lesson to the world. Your feeble attributes and attempts are not accurate, and the Savior’s love creates the future.”

I assumed that this spiritual presence was from heaven, and I listened closely. “The heavens dawn tomorrow. The night is currently processed. And in the world where many things are created and controlled by the serpent, the world often feels ugly. If at any time the universe feels too grand to take on, just breathe in the words of Jesus. That breath is like a flowering scent or aroma in oneself. New life is good. His perception is then working inside you. He allows the fight to understand his words to be accessible to your reality or universe.”

My mind’s eye jolted from my spirit. The world detached from my viewpoint, and the spiritual voice continued. “Do you see now how the vibration feels different? Be astute in this vibration because it colors your thoughts. You felt alerted through all the ideas of the life

you have had, or, to put it differently, the light of your judgment is a discoloration of the world, and you fought it when it was described as a mirror. Yet the truth is clairvoyant—a feeling of subtle hints given to us by the forces of greatness. The good in life becomes the way we live. Your driven purpose is to let others know that life's greatness is external to their spirit. Do you understand? Life in the world often reacts to your fears, and this amuses your sense of war. The spirit must live in a way that fear is mainly unknown."

"How do we do this, though? How is it possible to be secure enough not to push fear away?" I asked. Winged seraphim appeared from the heavenly kingdom, and they took my perception of colored life, the mirrored self, and gave it to my Holy Father in heaven.

The seraphim said, "Let the Lord allow you to have this knowledge from us, the angelic fount. Let the world understand they have been living in a cruel universal way, and repeal it as we have now with you. God can lift the spirit to heaven. To put one's soul into God's hands is a literal idea to fathom. Why should one understand anything else?"

This good and pure angel left me with my ideas of self-reconstruction. He said, "Do not wish yourself here. I do not want to be in life on Earth. You can be a force to challenge the perception of others in need and desire. Change the attitudes of your friends. Let yourself be nourished through us in heaven. The fount that you are to be part of is the power God creates through a messenger in love. You are divine. You have spread your wings to

feel exposed to God's invisible hands. You wear the purity of the heavens out into the world. This is not to be witnessed but to be *lived*."

Then the seraphim asked me how it felt to be nourished in everlasting goodness. I responded that it was more straightforward, much simpler, and less confusing to love others like a child.

"Youth, the fount of perception, is, in a way, the way to live. With eyes wide awake. Let me tell you." The seraphim reached for my childlike spirit and hugged my soulful self, and then added, "Let me say that God is all. He is all-encompassing to your knowledge, but more exists between that of the mind and your love." The seraphim gave me time to pause and reflect over this and then continued, "A new identity is created. This is one of holy purpose. This then is how your childlike love for all comes back to you. The angels appreciate your passion and fearlessness. In this, you can work miracles—in part by addressing what the spirit wants. You are never in control over yourself again. The soul will find itself admired for the assistance from your self-submission to heaven—the self in heaven will help you find your purpose in life."

The seraphim continued to teach me more aspects of my new expanded approach to life. "Now, let us study the sacred texts of the living. This is your wisdom. The purity of knowledge allows you to understand knowledge and personality attributes, but it is never an understanding of wholesome goodness. Instead, it is an understanding of the forces out there. That God knows us is



typically the answer given. However, there are forces not of the serpent and not of God. These are programs away from the understanding you have sought. The grandest master will appreciate your attempt to live away from a binary perspective of life.”

The seraphim allowed me to understand life and how it works in different ways. He noted that a God for all is better than none, “It is for the worlds away from your understanding to master the concepts of ancient understanding. Other worlds have existed. The method of training to receive other life was a priority. On Earth, you fought the judgment. You will accept an alternating universe beyond what God promised.”

The abilities came in abundance. Talking to angels was something I had a capacity for, and the conversations penetrated my thought patterns. The seraphim, this mighty angel, was introducing me to his brethren in heaven. I learned that the heavens were a great place full of places in deep divides. These poles, as I named them, were different places. God’s ability, then, is not to be questioned as much as it has been. God knows all is fine to say, but, in a different land, the people worship various ways. He is influenced through meditation or prayer. To invoke something other causes a behavioral change. Invoking the God of light is safe. The serpent is not. So do so in the way that God intends for you.

Then the seraphim said, “Now,” he whispers, “is the time we tell of angelic lore. The fathomable masters left the world and have known us alongside their council. The view that worship belongs everywhere until we de-

cide otherwise is false. There is a gift that always belongs to the universes. Reality is the gift, but we decided that this reality wasn't enough. See the worlds that surround you through a different mind and perception." The seraphim talked in a whisper because this was past the biblical reckoning. It had a different essence, and it felt like it deeply contradicted my nature of fighting for survival. It felt holistic. This view came from a polarized view of my life where it is divided into several different poles. It seemed that we could have multiple times and great ideas enriching our thoughts at once. I felt that some poles or lands in my awareness spun in one direction while other poles spun on a different axis. The spinning was a rotation, and the ideas meshed between the rippling time. The awkward voice that I felt confident in was to change. I saw the ideas grow out of the gravity between poles, and in those ripples were communication. I was not alone in the universes.

It was awkward in that I dared not attempt to speak. The silent consciousness was formidable. The masterful abilities of the members of the council of heaven then began to talk for me, and the axes and poles that I had seen soon began to spin, self-starting into the panel of the angelic masters only by their invitation.

They said, "You will belong here quickly. Do you feel like there is another universe yet? It is true. You are not brainwashed by the serpent now. You cannot believe only in your sole God, though. The Father is grand, but you must understand consciousness in the worlds or spaces

between universes. If we knew of this lesson, we could communicate slightly better.

The world's views are grand. The places between us and the angelic masters, the power of understanding these lessons, were inherently focused on their wants. "You know we believe in the rippling of spaces between the universes," they added. "Yet do you believe? Can you believe in what you only have a limited experience? Then you believe in us."

I listened to all they said, and I had some questions. I asked, "What about the filament? Was that the space I worked within before?" I asked this because I had little to share in the conversation, and I thought the filament was how God the Father began to attribute his words to us, our souls.

"Yes, in some ways, it works even better than a direct line of words," said the voice from beyond the universes. "We know that you imagine and see through an eye of your mind, but it is better to tell it like it was a perception from the stillness of your soul. You mainly see your thoughts, and God pushes through his identity to guide you in your reality. That purpose is functional. It makes you honest with something of a heavenly understanding.

"Now, look inside the same mind. The image of spiraling galaxies is something you see as a land and a pole, correct? Understand that land has light, but not all lands are alive with conscious thought. Some are precisely opposite or resemble something like the center of the pole that the land spins around. While God is merciful, the serpent wants to lie. Yet in some lands, the pole holds the

essence of the idea that conscious perception should be happiness. The evil in that land may involve sabotaging a life for their limited resources, and it may be exemplified through an experience. It may just be a dot or material that comes into place. It may be something like the light. Or sometimes it is something of a rippling conversation between the worlds. These ripples are like glue between us. If you call it a bond, you may have some interest in chemistry, but I would advise you to describe it as glue. It is all very much the laughter in our lives.”

I thought back to what communication was, and I understood a rippling emotion of joy to be a widespread conscious feeling in the universes.

“This joy,” said a voice from an angelic master, “is that we begin to belong. You know that we loved it, even though you are the first to experience this love in a stand-offish way. You trust yourself. You see the universes rippling along the poles, and the rippling ‘waters’ are something you do not dive into.”

The angelic masters waited for my conscience to test the waters. The holy assignment was not something with which I identified. *How do I see myself do this?* I wondered. *How do I move? Was this an allowance to join?* It was a bit frustrating to know something without a body was able to reflect what I believed.

The angelic master said, “Calm your ideas here. You must join a mastery of believing in us, too. It is not to prove to yourself that we, the heavenly spirits, tell you something and then wait to watch you in approval. No, it is for your consciousness to expand into reality. You

have no control over us, and you influence us with your ideas. But please do not or never be blatantly lying to us to deceive our warmth. Do you see how we give you power? That resource is not to be taken and used against us, as masters.”

I felt powerless. It was humbling. Yet, I was moving from my voice of consciousness to the universes’ living spirit. The spirited understanding was great, and I attempted to join in the ripples between worlds or universes in the heart. I saw a pure reality that could flex to those ancient believers. They believed that everywhere was something to transition between miracles. I began to think of the angelic masters that came before. The ancient master, the one who inspired my text, was the one who made his invisible force known.

You see, we believe that we know something similar. You know what I feel because I shared it with you. In the spirit, reality will change. I said that was something to anticipate, and I looked forward to feeling and trusting the reality of his words.

He responded by saying, “Not words of light here. You see and experience something much different from light, but the material world may still be influenced.” I strangely accepted that I could influence the universe, too. I understood that I did not need to say words of light to do this either.

“And you have influenced the spirit as well. It is that we are of glue, you and we. We see and experience the universes, and this is not between the universes, moving like being on a checkerboard. No, that was something of

a game for a binary thinker. We *move* through the universes and are one with each other, yet we pick out how we believe.” An idea of a deep spiritual thinker came to me as he continued. “You know the life you live, but you will know of the planets moving through us, the glue of life.”

“Imagine a pole or the points that the universes spin upon—they are the center of those spinning universes. Yet between the universes is the glue that shrinks and expands in ripples, depending on words. These words are the sounds, and the ripples are like light—but not always. It seems that we may be losing the idea here, but remember that thoughts are possible answers.

“Here it is; the glue has zero temperature. It does shift but is unaffected by the universes themselves. Conversations spark the lives in the universes. Those aware of the light’s conscious may be familiar enough to understand the sounds between reality and that glue, and that understanding then makes for added ripples. Why has little been said about the amount of glue and conversation between worlds? Plenty are directed toward you.

“To be aware of the ripples, a person must understand themselves as a receiver. That is just the way it is. You must feel the words and enact a definition for the impression you imagine. The purpose is not a spark to life, though. You must understand the difference between the mind of the soul and the soul itself. We will welcome you into heaven to understand this difference. The soul in space carries an unusual energy weight, but the mind does not. The idea of a ripple in the body seems

strange enough but is true. Your vibration is something earthlier than some others. Relaxing into the passing the time on Earth is fine, but once you come to heaven, you will guide others.”

I asked if the weight or ripple of my soul remained in heaven. They continued, “The answer is not practical because it can and will change. Understand that if you were to revisit Earth, you’d be given something of a different body. This is an interesting question though. The weight and the ripples are two and the same, such as the poles and the glue. It seems confusing, but the identity is similar. One has a very different style yet works with the other to provide a dimension of the world. It is likely you can understand some physical dimensions easily, like depth. Yet the imagination of yours is something the mind of the soul has a depth to as well. That goes to glue. The conversation will begin than here.”

“The conversation between ourselves?” I asked.

“Yes, Author, outstanding. The mind feels a latent physicality. The ripples and words are thought about while you feel the actual mood shift around you in the spirit. It is easily understood in a trance here, but it may not be easily understood for most people. You are stilling the mind and focusing on conscious perception, if not even in an altered state, to talk to us spirits. It is harder to understand an in-depth conversation with us. The rippling then occurs when your conversations begin to show in your reality. Then the influence of your perception will change. Understand it is that the body shifts after the ripples. In some cases, it is not easy to know

how the physical soul works. The soul you see in your imagination vibrates or ripples. The 'fluid of the casing' is something between the glue and the soul's weight. It's difficult to know, but it can be like a sense of water that parts from the filament. Now that you understand this, we can move forward, and we can investigate the track that fascinates you.

"That is, that you are challenging the serpent as we speak. You know him, and you have worn a crown received from him. You will often challenge this mindset, yet deep down, you challenge him in more appropriate ways. Is it your way or his?"

Angel Haniel, who had discussed the universal poles, said, "When you reach for the rippling words, you come to discuss light with yourself. The light that the serpent understands is something like streaming photons and iridescence, yet light has been explained to spark conversations. The ripples between the universes are then something we cannot control due to others' love and boundaries, yes? The serpent will acknowledge this set of boundaries, surely, but will it admit its faults?" Haniel said that he understood my newest decisions to match what understanding I had with the serpent. I said I would like to provide the snake with a certain feeling of confidence for God.

Then there were many masters in my presence. In many voices and different patterns, they began to motivate me. My physical body of the soul relaxed to the extent that I saw their images in my thoughts. I attribute



this to a fair thought process and my awareness in silence. Yet, they attributed it to their will.

“How can I help?” I asked.

“Don’t punish yourself in your mind. Your submission is good, yet you fight because of the stillness and desiring our favor. You know we are helping you in this identity to fight the serpent. His light is overwhelming to some, but look past the answers he provides.”

I looked at Angel Haniel, the master who had helped me, and told him, “I feel a different feeling within the soul. It feels like a ghost is present, and the feeling shifts the surrounding energy levels or ambiance around me.”

“This means that I am with you in prayer,” he answered. “I know the meaning and will help you understand your ability. Just do not think I control this.”

“The ghost,” I whispered. “Am I able to speak to it?” The ghost was not perfect for me either, and it was hurried and darker than the master’s light when I spoke about sin.

“Remember,” said the Angel Haniel, “I do not yet know as much as the Father either.” This left me unsettled. I faced such a the progression of myself. To know and not know so much. It seemed that the knowledge was of a particular light, and the shadowy soul was of something without a body.

The ghost spoke, “Yet we can believe. The shadow is trained as well. The two parts are just of your knowledge, and it is to understand that we can communicate to the serpent here.” I sat back and wondered what to say. I finally said, “I will try to help.”

The ghost saw my intimidation and held me. “We drop into the shadow, and you will understand why we drop or fall in a moment.” In the flames of the serpent, I saw him. The snake drew a breath in as I knew he understood my presence. “He drew the breath in because you are a different soul than he was accustomed to” the ghost continued. “He excitedly knows you as an angelic form, but do not let his wisdom dawn upon your soul, for he lies.”

The ghost watched me. He saw me step up close to the serpent, who sat on his treasure. I said as the snake smelt my soul, “On which day do you remember me? From before or from today?” The serpent had control of me once before, and I settled back a bit into this history.

The serpent laughed, “Fool, why did you rejoin me here?”

I ignored his belligerence, for I first thought of pleasantries to speak, “I am to discuss how light works with you. I understand it in-depth, and I understand you can add more to that depth. I want to know what you might understand!” I felt my presence push down, and I felt the weight of my words hang in the air.

“The ripples I have seen before,” answered the serpent. He let the idea stand without reacting much. Yet his eyes sparkled in curiosity from what was occurring. My soul was in discussion with other masters—their presence was within my soul, rippling in ideas. The conversation was to be understood in an orchestra of sounds or voices.

“Let me announce to you that I find this interesting,” we said. The serpent laid his head on the ground, and he shifted from a dragon to something more snakelike in its energy. We continued, “You know much, serpent. Why do you act like a snake instead of a dragon?” I asked the most obvious things sometimes.

The serpent said, “It is about agility. When I can, I sit and consume, but I cannot move as fast as my flexibility is used to in that mode of myself. I consume much and many spirits that way.”

I thought about the sin of my soul’s body and said to myself that the ghost must be aware it could be changed, too. Did it change, though? But then I refocused my thoughts on the serpent.

The masters called back to me. “Use your abilities to touch the serpent.” The ripples came from the soul, and I saw them surge toward the serpent’s mouth.

“Remember, I know much I can tell you,” the serpent said.

Yet his words fell flat as he seemed to have his mouth wrapped with energy like it was muzzled. The masters allowed me to understand the snake’s feelings without a hint of being bitten—it was their energy that kept the serpent’s mouth shut. I approached the serpent in my thoughts and allowed the rippling words to soothe him.

“Serpent, I allow my hand to glide over your face and the head.” I felt the horns there and stopped. I was surprised at these horns. “Are these of a light?” I asked. The horns that I had feared are a story of their own.

The masters allowed the serpent to speak. "These horns were never of my own. They were placed in me as I had been an angel before. Witness much here. The horns are not what is expected, and they will fall when the curse is over." The serpent looked amused at my confusion. His body was darkened, and his soul came through to me. He was showing me his remembrance of his angelic self. "Yet you do not speak now?" he then asked.

"When are you going back to heaven?" I asked him through the ripples of glue.

My ripples found their way toward the soul of the serpent. It pushed back as a rock would in a stream of water. It divided the waters and swells and acknowledged that it had misery. It said inside itself that it felt something cold. Inside, the serpent's soul was out, and the flames decreased a bit outside its body. I thought this was a balance. "You can lay your head on the angels once more," I told him.

The seraphim smiled at the serpent and then addressed me. "This isn't your time to teach, Author. It is the serpent who is to teach you of the ripples and the casting of the soul. His knowledge is good and sound." As I looked back at the serpent, I this time saw a man. His body continued to shift as I drew closer to it.

"Your knowledge, serpent, is incredibly sound. Why does your body shift again?"

The man of time said, "It was my time as man." He ushered me out of his lair and said in his words of mediocre light that his time would be hard to deal with, for he had to understand the pain he caused in the world.

I saw that the balance between the light and the body of the soul matched each other. When one outweighed the other, the other would shift.

The masters then brought me back into their fold. The light around me was pure. They agreed not to tell me what I could have said. Instead, they applauded me for answering and feeling my way to the serpent's soul.

"The horns are a weakness of his," they said. I said I was astonished that the serpent, which acted like a dragon, would recreate itself from snake to the man of the time. "It was as you understand. That is enough," they said.

I wondered about my dialogue with the serpent. "Will I get to speak to him as a man of the time? Does he know answers to riddles?" The Angel Haniel said something to me then that I promised myself to try to live. He said, "A riddle is not told or hoped to be answered by the other person, leaving them to struggle over themselves."

The masters grouped around me in spirit, and I felt them in a loving embrace. They each told me how I had done profound things in a way. The ideas were fresh but could be carried on. "Let the humans know the man of the time was going to belong to them," said the Angel Haniel. Then he showed me, from his perspective, the pool in which he saw the waters.

The water was exceedingly clouded. It seemed that this man of the time was pollution. The Angel Haniel continued, "In any event, the knowledge of the serpent or man of the time was just a new perspective I've given you. The man of time is muddled in guilt, and it may

be harder to predict its future with my wisdom. But you, Author, know this serpent. Let us understand your thoughts.” He added that he was feeling angst upon the water. That little frustration was from all people, yet the serpent manifested himself so perfectly inside their thoughts.

“It seems to me that the serpent is not going to belong very long in his present stage of development, and he may want to return to his nest of flame and fire,” I said.

As I walked upon the master’s pool’s water, there seemed to be a storm brewing. The master told me that this storm was not a normal one—it was a manifestation of the grief the serpent had from his education. It meant that he had to acknowledge, through his able mind and heart, that there was right in the world. Then the larger forces swept around me. This force was made up of all the knowledge of the universe where the serpent had been. It seemed that his spirit upon the waters allowed me to enter Angel Haniel’s pool to once more talk to the man of the time. Yet I was not under my ghost in the waters—the perspective came from a different ability.

I said, “Man of time? Are you available to speak? I saw you before and want to discuss you and your motivation for your life. Let us chat.” The darkness spread through the waters, and I felt an icy coldness appear in front of me.

“Do you want to discuss me and the pursuit of my old angelic self? This is not entirely the way I would have this conversation go,” the man of time who was the ser-

pent said. He also said that he was trying to determine how he could influence the angels from his current body.

His angelic friends who had fallen as well were of a similar mindset, and they had joined forces before and controlled the subconscious emotions of hundreds of billions throughout life. So it is no surprise that the serpent in human form wanted to express himself to the fallen angels.

“It seems like I need to try in a different fashion from how I would have before,” said the man of the time.

I replied, “If you have tried and failed, then try again from the heart. That is the way we humans pray together. It is a different path, and it is the straight path to communication!”

The serpent investigated himself. He was something of a darker creature than one of light, so his communication through prayers had more emotion. It was like I felt him shriek, and I could feel the angry undertones ripple from his heart.

“You do not understand. You have likely witnessed severe pain from that serpent. That pain cannot be interpreted,” said the force which held me in the pool of water. “The pool of water was a reality. Remember, each perspective from each unique soul influences the existence of the universes. They combine uniquely through the glue that holds them together. So, I thought, why not understand the serpent from its pool of water or its soul,” the angel of death, Azrael, explained.

“Azrael, is it in you to discuss the serpent’s fate?” I bellowed. I thought that it may have been wise to show my sincerity, yet the serpent sought a judgment for me.

“I saw you, Author. I had judgment planned from when you escaped to the heavens before. Now, listen.” The serpent discussed his angelic form through death. His heart fell open, and I understood that his mind did not correct the justice that God, the Father, had won out when the serpent’s heart was revealed. The snake had a speck of goodness that he formed himself around, and he had not changed to complete darkness.

“Do you understand, Author?” he continued. “Even I could not overturn the greatness, the light from good, to understand my perspective. Call it evil if you will; I think that my angel was the speck, and it was of a death that I sent out to create war, famine, and conquest. That attempt to misguide humanity and other angels is, therefore, on my thoughts.”

The serpent’s ghost, or angel, in this case, was hideous. Azrael was not an angel that I was used to understanding, for it was cruel and sinister. It caused the serpent’s body to wither from a man of time to something different. Sure, it was a fallen angel, yet it sat with a snout and horns and black wings and a body that was like a goat.

“Remember that the body is something that reflects knowledge. What is that knowledge?” said the force from Angel Haniel. I wept and saw the angel of death try to move around in the prince of evil’s being and heart.



“This is where I hope that the Morningstar is rebalanced as a holy and great angel,” I prayed within the universes, and through that glue came my understanding to search out God in the unlikeliest place.

“God?” said angel of death Azrael. “This will not suffice, and we will make him a sacrifice once more.” I understood that he referred to Jesus, and that the Christ had given the light of heaven to the serpent once, and the angel shunned it.

Then in my thoughts I heard Jesus, through the forces between Angel Haniel and my ghost, say, “Let him live. Let the man we know here as Author be sound. It was as you were again to allow God through to your angelic heart.” I sat in awe, for Jesus was seen in the presence of greatness over and within the waters. “Go now, Author. You have done your job.” Jesus smiled, and I saw the light from behind him grow in luminosity. Was it my light or the serpent’s light behind Jesus that grew in luminescence? I stayed within Angel Haniel’s force and was lifted out of his waters. I returned to the heavens.

Christ appeared to me there. “I say, Author, what has happened is truly remarkable. Misery shifted toward the negative and then to the positive. Your earlier conversation was enough for all who see the serpent to understand his willingness to realize that I was his redeemer.” I thought about what Jesus said, and I thought that the serpent must have been miserable by itself if it had been around.

Jesus continued, “And that wasn’t just the worst of his time on Earth. You’ll understand more once I tell

you about that serpent. He was a terrible thing, and he woke up and wanted to punish others. His pain also rippled toward the trusted few that fought against him. You and the masters felt it, and I'm sure others are aware, for that pain is hard to process emotionally for the body and soul's body. It seems that we are coming to an understanding that evil itself isn't always pure evil. It seems that many know wrong and push those feelings away by flipping the issue on its head. It seems that all acts are then justified." The Christ saw within my waters and saw the mourning I had for my spirit or ghost. I considered the baptism of the ghost at this point.

"Yes, the day will come when you will forget the time you were fighting for your mind," Jesus said. "That day I will heal you. The mind itself is not in mourning for yourself, and my day is for repair. You will understand that the Holy Ghost is for you to belong to just as you know me."

I said to Jesus, "The Christ, the Savior. How can I begin to channel your ideas to my friends on Earth? How can they worship the same way? They can and do good."

He looked above the waters, and he looked toward the heavens. He insisted that the words I speak will reach others, for their hearts are listening. I saw ripples in the heavens. The sound that occurs when the ripples are created was almost the same but slightly different. It sounded as though many wanted the peace given by our Savior.

"In the justice found on Earth, the heart will belong to the heavens, and the glory will be with the word of

God. This universe will know heaven, and you can bring them toward what is holy,” he said.

Then the ghost took me from where I was to where it dwelled—a place filled with the fellowship of people. It had been silent but spoke once for me to know God’s tabernacle. “The good that presides from us is in tribute for all who talk to me in prayer. One is not enough to understand strength. I dwell in the silence to understand others. It is silence but also enjoyment. This peace that come from nonjudgment is where home feels. Prayer runs through all, and we understand the heavens there as well. Allow Jesus his place.”

I sat at that moment, knowing I could focus on evil or right. I chose to pray.

# **Never Give In**

“Do you believe yet? Do you believe in the hellish world of your underdeveloped self? That you believe in it and ignore it is quite amusing, Author.” I heard these statements and wondered why they came to me from beyond that night by a demon. The demon continued, “Do not be cowardly. Fight in the story and give your unique impressions. That is the night of the world; in the silence comes pain. The pain that exists is not from yourself, either. It is the personal avarice of others to ignore themselves as you do. It is to be a builder of a world that does not include the depths we have inside us all. You, sir, have ignored these painful depths of what others think and act to paint a rosy world around you!”

I asked what others needed to hear so I could share the knowledge—the knowledge of what pains others. From the evils of silence, the voice from beyond responded, “The Author does not know the depths of remorse. In these emotions that he experiences, he finds others willing to deliver his pain to the world through him as a receiver. As a receiver, he is strong yet under constant pressure to resist himself and hear others’ thoughts. He is like a singularity in the night. The grief that he carries is not for others but for his mechanics. It is for the world to understand that nothing is real anymore, and everything plays to the drumbeat of his heart.”

I said, “My heart? I do not think I rule and judge.” But the demon interrupted my thought by saying, “But of course, the reflection of this rosy world is from your making, and it is for everyone to understand how they receive pain back from their judgment. Honestly, you

receive their emotions deeply and internalize them, feel them yourself, and then your heart makes it all real.”

I saw Jesus in my prayers, and Jesus said, “Do you not want to understand that there are feelings that are suppressed by yourself as well? You are not honest with yourself. The demon that surrounds you now and tells his side of the story is only one of many. It is like this for many thousands of millions of people. Throughout time, some people thought themselves devilish without ever doing any harm. Their strength was understanding others’ emotions. Yet there is something more. Do not get carried away with this, but understand that many others want what you have. You seem incredible to them, and their jealousy drives them to wish you the worst and for themselves to better to understand your power. Of course, the judgment and empathy you share are decisive because the people around you like you and listen to you, and they cycle between these two responses to you. Do nothing for now. Just understand that the underdeveloped self can make your life golden.”

The sinister shadow then said, “Author, you need to breathe. You need air, like a flame needs oxygen. You suffocate through others’ projections.” The devilish shadow then cast itself upon me. I was afraid and held onto the fear as he continued.

“We know of your curses, we understand the frustrations, and we imagined them to be honest, too. The superficial way you think of life in real-time is not the same as your emotional self. You serve the Lord, yes? But do others want you to be happy? Do people genuinely

enjoy your company? Most are fighting to breathe within themselves, too. They immerse themselves in the contradictions I've pointed out. They hate you as much as they hate their feelings of projections. Do you understand this?" The sinister shadow was watching for my emotions. It continued, "The world works against those who see the light for this reason—those who hold up the Lord in this world shine in a different way. The demons try to regulate fear of their own onto those who shine a light. The light is then drained from the world once more, if not conquered."

I began to see what this night was. It was a torment of souls playing out on the natural world theater. Yet it was not a theater but a mask for those who are wounded and unheard. I began to sense that my life was starting to unfold in the darkness.

Jesus said, "I have received nothing for myself and give what I have. It does not do you any good to serve yourself. Do you see the difference between you and me? The world and you look upon others' needs or wants and break free from frustrations to hurt the helpers. The sin in the world is not coming from the developed part of the mind; it comes from the hurt that people have. It is from the pain that they mistakenly heap upon others as if it was intentional."

The pain from the shadow spoke, "I have little to give to my world in this shadowland. The drugs are too dull for the senses, true enough. They are a vice that leads further into the shadows. It is not for fun but to dull oneself from the shadows. The frustrations appear

more so, and you then hurt everyone you touch. Fear and hurt become a plague amongst the Lord's people." I wondered why drugs were mentioned on my behalf. The sinister shadow said, as if in response to my thoughts, "Everywhere, there are vices. The truly hideous vices that the night presents are all torture for the person in the living world. You have vices, including alcohol, and it is the way we in the shadows operate."

I responded to his accusations, "Yet I hope and feel not angry. I feel that I can overcome the pressures once I relax and have the Lord within my heart."

The shadows laughed in a way that sounded like snarls. "The imagination that you possess can easily be turned into fear, and it is infuriating and frustrating to your senses. The world is not easily divided into two halves, but when it is, those halves turn on each other, such as wheels in a clock."

The demon's grin became wide, "You know little about the way the living live. Therefore, we will set you straight. We apologize in advance, though. Living beings can be selfless and giving, yet when they are they prize themselves for their outstanding accomplishments, wanting nothing but notoriety and fame. You seek to lead for a reason, and you want your life to be recognized for some attributes. The living have great reasoning for that. The living want to dream, play, and be merry. The living want to lead lives that others recognize and want to be part of. But the world dooms this to be fraudulent."

"The purity of many is, in fact, right," he continued. "They feel pressure to submit to each other for a reason,



and it is the negativity that presents itself as decorated and honorable. To follow a leader in purity is great. The Lord has said and maintained what is holy. Yet, for the negative forces, they turn what is truly good into something weaker than themselves. They overcome the light and submit only to their greater perceptions of themselves, and they glorify their own.”

The demon sat into itself and asked, “Who does the religious leadership then help? The ones who are pure? Or do they suffer for their guidance by those who make them weak? Here is a great analogy. The man who wants to be involved in his spirituality makes himself God. Thus, man leads himself to the fountain of God but cannot look at God for a reason. He prides himself for his accomplishments too often to realize that his downfall is being presented to him. This repeatedly occurs throughout the millennium for many if not every human. The conditions of light and laughter, then, are retained by the forces of mercy.”

The demon snarled as he continued, “The man who wishes that he had not sinned is given grace from Jesus. It is in this grace that he must submit and serve the Lord. Only the Lord can lead to pure heavenliness, and the Lord must be king. Jesus is not just a leader. He is the Father’s Son, and in this we become ourselves, heavenly sent to show the way. He grows inside of us, but it is wrong to perceive that he grows on us, manifesting his wants in the world through us. This is the balance to the negative forces asking for the light to shine in the shadowlands.”

Jesus said, "That we follow and serve. In all cases, the cause of disruption to the Lord's calling is in error, and he forgives and is merciful. Yet the demons in the shadows cannot tame his calling because they cannot investigate the light without seeing errors. They project themselves in humanity. The fallen ones are the night, and He is the day. The natural workings of hell and heaven are to be observed. The lesson is how humanity came into existence. Humans repeat their follies, live the pain and suffering as they work to satisfy their desires. They think themselves glorious and godly. They see it in the world when they portray themselves as humankind, and like that, the circle of redemption is completely erased."

Jesus investigated the shadow that attached itself to me. "The devil is something to consider here. He is nothing and void. The pain that came from his downfall is something that rarely occurs to humans. His downfall from grace is absolute, and his punishment is living in the void of darkness for eternity. The willingness of heaven to resonate in that heart is less that it is for most."

I began to wonder how Jesus, in His Father's light, bathes us with greatness by submitting to his words.

"Come closer, child," said Jesus. "I noticed that you have little light inside yet make a manifest impact on your children and brethren. The shadow stays away from hell in its preoccupation with humanity and the human form. Then the world flips over itself, and the subconscious or irrational becomes real in death. It is a different position to understand how the spiritual life and the real-life human flip and entangle with each other. You have

the light of heaven—small and constrained bit of heaven—yet you can count on the spiritual life to be real for yourself in death. You get the most out of pressure and cannot let yourself glorify your accomplishments. Remember, grace for those who have fallen from pride.” Jesus let me absorb these truths in my heart and my mind.

The Lord continued, “The mind is not always accurate, and it is the irrational part that suppresses the void into the otherworldly forces. It breaks up the narrative of Lord and light into something we can perceive as human and natural. The mind is likely the obstacle that challenges you to stay focused inwardly, protecting you from the pressure of demon forces—negative people’s pressure and force make us wait to be pure and good in life. They lead us into a promise that God protects His children. Remember, we do not interfere with the irrational as much as we conclude that the fears are mostly irrational and demonic. The person who understands how to relate to the demonic then causes more harm and negativity within. They project these ideas out onto the good and holy, and thus, evil goes against the good.” Jesus lamented, “Use the moment to exercise your willpower in this humanity. The shadow of your id, in psychology, is something you are willing to pride yourself on—it is not exactly an ego but something more accurate in the hellish world of an underdeveloped self.

Jesus looked upon the waters and waited to discuss anything further, and He knew He was waiting for me to boast of new material. The Lord recognizes that vice as

a significant downfall. I asked if we were to discuss the heavens and the filament.

“Yes, it is such that these forces are within the word of God,” Jesus said. “The filament is something to be proud of understanding. The heavens are within something of chaos. Under a pool of waters, it is not within the heavens and reaches into our souls. The torments are sitting in this dry place of barren rock earth, an almost desert under the pool of water.” Jesus raised my soul to the filament so quickly, and the heavens then acknowledged this: That I sit upon the rocky soil, barren and void until Jesus and his ideas massively construct the world in his knowledge and light. The word lies between these ideas and light that are spoken to my soul for guidance.

“The filament is the middle?” I asked, puzzled. The Holy Father said, “The filament is the words that can be attached to the soul.” Internally, the heavens reached out and brought me toward the Father’s being.

Was it in the spiritual world that we imagine things? I wondered.

The Father said, “No. It is in our world that we ‘see’ you. We feel you and embrace the livelihood you have surrendered, and that is the light that we have replaced in your soul.” He continued, “Congratulations on making firm believers in the world. These leaders are gaining their sensibilities. We cannot let the hostile forces interweave into humanity’s most excellent hour. The literature available for this is more than a book of fears, and it is a perfect redemption. However, this is not occurring

quite at the pace we intended, and the rate of light to conquer evil is not happening. The world must refocus its efforts to believe in submission to the heavens. Yet it is for you to determine nothing.”

I again asked about the filament and the waters and the rocky soil left for the world. Jesus answered, “It is for us to understand, not you.” Then the Father introduced his spirit upon the waters. The Holy Spirit noticed the demon inside me looking on and questioned the conversation I had with it. Jesus asked the Holy Ghost to imagine once more the idea of life in the world without fear of reprisal for doing good and what was right. The Holy Ghost knew where to begin with the ideology of fearless behavior.

In a fight with the devil, the serpent that loved itself needed to believe. The fierce battle over control of the subconscious was more accurate than people often think. The Holy Spirit surrendered to the serpent for a moment, and this acknowledgment of fear caused ripples across the water, and caused enough waves to show where the serpent’s ideas lay and for the Father and Jesus to acknowledge how to interpret those dreams of the serpent’s negative feedback. The Holy Spirit caused a war within the serpent each time, and some trapped inside the snake could breathe light again.

The Father said, “The world has many leaders who submit to the inner workings of their devilish selves. The leaders must acknowledge that their fears and the punishment for believing themselves godly are ignorant of

God's laws." The laws were the next bit to recognize. The Father of all creation rested back into his seat.

I saw the way of the world now and acknowledged that many fail for a great reason; they do not understand the course of their hearts. The human heart is somewhat challenging to understand. The way God's heart works is totally and entirely understandable, and his love is one with Jesus and the Holy Spirit.

Yet I do not fully understand creation because I cannot extend and connect to its all. The universe is made up of connections. My heart was vastly different from the way the Father loved. Through imagined ideas and light, I had to recognize that even a semblance of love is united in heart and soul for myself.

I want people to understand that hostile forces as well as positive ones are within the world. The positive forces move around God, and he is love. Yet the idea that power drives people to influence the world according to greed, envy, and sinful attributes makes me wonder why.

The driving forces of the serpent at the bottom of the rocky soil spoke to me, "The Author does not understand luxury yet, but talks with God. That is a difference between the world you know and love and the world I know. The movement of people, places, and things are one with my intelligence as they are with God's love. Yet, you present a case that God is strength, wisdom, and ideology." The serpent continued, "The God that I see does harm, too. He is hypocritical. I feel pain whenever the pain is so real, and I share the blessings of myself to others too."

“The pain?” I asked.

The serpent explained that the pain was nothing new to him and that in this dark void of existence the problem was as natural as himself. He saw nothing more than a way out by dealing *with his* pain by meting it out to others. The demonic forces then are no nearer to God and Jesus and remain inside his mind. The mind of the serpent then is something to witness.

“I do not care to achieve material success, but to influence the world,” the serpent said. “Survival measures are to fight and win, and that success is identified in materialism. Yet it is not the material that matters to most, or defining success as winning. The idea is to cause others to feel valuable. This is a sacred feeling. Trouble is found in the mind’s ego, and the risk is where the pain begins to dispense to others. This is how to win. Do you dare achieve success at the hands and feet of other people? The truth is you cannot survive without me here.”

I wondered about that as well; how do the heavens survive? The serpent continued, “The world is survival. People or animals flee when they are fearful, and they fear the strength of some. In that power of strength people see their masculine feelings validated. The power needs to supervise the success of ourselves. When does it end?”

The serpent looked around and saw a crown. It glowed golden in the snake’s void of existence, and it sat on top of a stack made up of other gold pieces. He said this crown was for me to try to understand the luxury of the snake’s lifestyle. I accepted it only to understand

and to be able to tell others through the writing of this book, and he placed the crown on my head. The serpent saw himself in me. The snake saw the pain in my eyes, and he congratulated me on surviving the dismal depression I had known within my lifestyle—I could not maintain friendships that seemed peaceful, I did not like the work that I did in the past, I had many troubles with my family, and in some moments, I just hated that I lived. It is all awkward to fathom, but he let my pain escape. This was to build on the pain of others, and it was to allow the world to mirror the newly crowned prince. This was not new—the serpent teaches these lessons repeatedly. When the pattern sinks the snake in darkness and it is painful to think, it makes little sense to acknowledge God's presence. The serpent had no remorse.

I realized that the pain that is felt through the world is probably a living entity. Pain itself is sacred. It is the foundation of psychological problems, and it is a living problem people dispense readily just to survive the next day.

The easiest way to teach is not through presentations but through an actual conversation with the teacher. "So please," said the serpent, "go with my friend, this shadow demon. He does not understand the crown himself, and as yet he has only caused ripples of pain in the world." The shadow demon seemed satisfied with himself. I had justifiably kicked myself earlier for not being good enough, and now I was amused by the idea that the opposing forces could help me understand survival.

"How does this world work?" I asked.



The shadow demon laughed at me in return. The shadow said, "We are stronger mentally. The good do not want to fight. You want to live in a world that sees life as purity. Yet the world is not pure, and it is darkened by the way we act. The actions are not transparent to you yet, but the world will one day make more sense—once you see that following our lead makes you feel invincible."

The shadow demons lived day by day around this promise. The remorseful would crack, fail, and die. The death of the living is where they fall. "The evil negative forces are not so bad," the shadow demon claimed. "To live invincibly is good enough, and to be damned is to continue to feel suffering."

This is when the Holy Father, God, secretly pulled me toward his light within my heart. God said, "The feeling that suffering brings stems not from friendship but prayerful devotion to himself. It is all very much akin to opposing forces working together, though. We in life either choose to feel supportive of others or only show care for ourselves." God smiled through the light of reasoning.

I then caught a glimpse of the gnarly snarling beasts that were around me. They preyed on me like I was a light or beacon wavering in the stormy weather. Then the serpent came in and up through the darkest hour of my existence. He left the void and returned to my side. "Please, Author, come with me, have a drink, and suppress any feelings of right or wrong." The serpent then said he would help me by talking to me through my con-

versations. The light of man could help adjust the way we operate.

The serpent said, "Man and light are a fixation, and the men who work at their homes with love for their wives and children often hurt them more than help. Justifiably, the men who take the easier way to build a castle in their homes and frequently help themselves also help their families and are grand. The crown is to be feared." In the serpent's eyes, the crown of gold and wit, sex and lust, and other ideas where I was deficient were the keys to provide me his thoughts naturally. The way he lied was intense.

The serpent then said, "I believe this will work in this story of your life. That you provide little light to the world, and that light can be foiled." I was now the opposite of the love and the weaknesses I had felt. My strengths were from the serpent. The serpent promised the world and gave me the opportunities to fight for exactly what I wanted. The want and the reception of the gifts were good. The yearning was fascinating. Honoring myself and respecting the life around me enough to feel superior in my abilities coursed through my veins.

The crown that my head held did not weigh heavily. It was something that came, went, and was suppressed into a void. I included my thoughts and soulful attributes in that transfer to the vacuum of darkness. The darkness kept me out of my head. It could be my ego talking, but I felt awkwardly satisfactory. I felt empowered even. I felt the strength come and become a stronger part of my mind. The right side was weak, and it grew in

strength. I was out of balance, I thought to myself. Seeing that I stood alone and watched others survive better than I ever could was my weakness. Now I watched and witnessed the power that the serpent has in all of humanity.

The serpent's thoughts controlled me, and the snake influenced many. As the serpent knew, he had strength in that type of understanding or control. The serpent whispered he would help make me glorious.

"The crown I wear now is nothing compared with the Savior," I said. I attempted to be transparent for this book's written words. The Savior was someone who led and became like a prisoner of the people around him. All His followers wanted was for the Savior to save them. The trial to do that was difficult for Jesus since the purpose of the burden is to be shared by all and collected by Jesus.

The serpent wanted to break my connection to Jesus, and I felt it deep in my soul. I looked within my soul to the light of heaven so far away, and I closed my eyes for a bit and swallowed the pain. It felt like the burden was heavier in heaven than within me. The church's community seemed distant, and I knew that I had much more influence in my life now than the churchgoers did for themselves.

The churchgoers seemed hypocritical—they seemed determined to be stronger than what they were to each other. Why couldn't they lose their essential disguises and just live humanely, talking with everyone? They seemed superficial. I had questions, and I knew that they

had lies in response. But it made some sense to me as well and made me think that I held many attributes of the serpent at a distance.

Yet I did see how many, a very many, looked at the world. Without that sparkle to shine themselves in the world, the many fought to hold onto their sanity. They felt invincible for a moment and in pain the next through the serpent's manipulation, but it was an easy burden because their minds were stronger. I even developed into something of a monster myself. I used the horns I had acquired, the snout, and the gnarled teeth, and said the same things the other many grunted. That I groaned was something of favor I did for myself.

The day that the serpent held my crown on my head he carried me through the waters up to God and said, "I broke this man so easily."

God said, "This child can be of sin much more for other men to understand his ideas."

The serpent shook in this heartfelt answer to allow the pain to continue so others could benefit from him. The serpent then said, "I do not need to belong to the story of this man! I do belong to my fear and pain. Let me give him more knowledge to satisfy myself."

The serpent then said to me, "Where did you go that last moment? I smelled your thoughts leave and travel toward reassurance from fear. Do not give yourself over to the idea that love exists. From that construction, the world is tolerant of you. Let the new man through—one who doesn't want to be nurtured as often or to be given love."

My soul was entirely in the void and was struggling to rest or relax. The other demons tormented me from the gnashing teeth and cries, and my soul fixated on never having peace around myself. I lost myself to the empty feeling of pain. I would never guess that it wasn't my pain, but the serpent's pain was influencing me. He fed my soul the difference between love and restlessness. The thought came into my mind not to run toward the positive! I did not run at all. The idea was to fight amongst the demons to provide pleasurable outcomes.

"Don't try to understand. By taking peoples' souls, you'll be rewarded by me," said the serpent. Taking their souls must have been like being numbed from the attacks from other demons, yet in my life on Earth, I felt happy and prideful. "The happiness is to come soon," promised the serpent. "The knowledge to speak of a tongue that was enjoyable for all." I then settled back in a conversational tone with the serpent.

I asked myself, *What did I feel would be most enjoyable?* and the answer came quickly, *Not to hurt but to feel good.* The physicality between a woman and my lust became an identity. A younger self might have been scared by the ideas I held—that the woman would adore my negativity or masculinity. It wasn't just the idea that I wanted one woman either. I felt like I was to be desired and loved by many women. The lust grew in my heart from that idea. I saw myself walking through life, and every person wanted their time to be with me.

I valued myself as grand, but others would overestimate me to be legendary. I thought of the serpent's suc-

cess at sacrificing my soul to be in a superior position, to deliver my choices to the world, and to benefit from them by the respect they demanded or their power.

The thing I misunderstood was that to gain such influence, I must hurt others. To be in the dominant position and to be further ahead, others would be required to be lost sheep. I could influence these sheep quickly enough with the voice of the serpent. Yet, I was still afraid to take their souls away from God. I would be a wolf in sheep's clothing, and I would give them back to the hostile forces.

The serpent said, "Don't try to understand that you must hurt other people. It is all very natural to respect life, but the way those of positive action were compelled them to band together, like sheep. The wolves notice how the sheep quiver. The sheep run or empty their emotions much too often in prayer. The wolves just let them run and then guide them away from the rest of the group quickly. It first comes from confidence. The wolves just have faith and lead the others toward the fire. The fire animates life, low or high, depending on the imbalance one has. Soon, very soon, you'll understand. In the life of passion, the wolf will meet his psyche and ego. The movement between the two will display you as masculine. This is more in balance with me, the serpent."

From that, I carried the fire of passion inside. I was to conquer the sheep in the world. I was going to be a legend. Inside, I enjoyed these ideas of facing the world so bravely. I wanted to conquer as many people as I could. The women would love me for my attitude, and the men

would love the logic from which I worked out solutions to problems. It was from this that I grew taller in posture. I wanted to flex my abilities. Overall, I just wanted.

The ability to satisfy me then wasn't to love others—quite the opposite. The pain I was to inflict on the women and men of this world was with a sense of pride. I commanded the women and other men to be like me through tact to let the world see my crown. With that, women attractively feared me. It was how they wanted to forget their problems and allow me to take control of their selfless beings.

“Let him control us,” one woman moaned. For myself, I was increasingly captivated by that idea. I became quite a gentleman, and I could be sincere to a point. Other men would awkwardly go around my new self and envy my ability with women, awe-struck. The men themselves would want to understand this magic. Magic was the dark resurrecting pulse from which they had no answers, but my knowledge came in abundance. How could I commend the women and men into a passion? How was it that women offered their lives to me, and the men fell to their knees in honor?

The world began to be more logical to me. How power drives was not reliant upon their position in the organization where they worked. The title of their position meant as little as pocket change. The power was in trust. Before I became confident that I fulfilled a specific domain with my stunning reputation for knowledge, I felt fear from the chaos in the world. But that fear was no more. It was fun to investigate the needs of others

with the mountain of knowledge I had. I imagined seeing the emotions on the people's faces that they held in their bodies, and I felt like abusing their trust. I couldn't discuss what narrative would occur because it was now easier to make sense of the drama of life unfolding. The theater, or the game of life, was me waiting for a younger woman to declare that she felt sensual about me, and then I could use this knowledge to begin my evil intent of leading her toward that passionate fire.

I understood that the serpent in all his glory needed someone to tell him he is grand. He did not care even one iota for me, and the snake wanted me to know that he provided me with these ideas. The wealth then is that the serpent gave me a driving purpose to become rich in the temptations I needed. The choice was to either suffer without the snake or to glorify him and understand him as a ruler.

Understand this lesson is about wealth. The wealthy do nothing to change the ability of the snake to rule and dominate overall. Minions do not fight the serpent, and they act as one with the serpent who supplies them in this arrangement. The arrangement is something of a gift. The temptation is this: The serpent would not help himself be better than he is currently. There is no improvement for the snake—the opposite is more accurate. He would rather be lazier than better at teaching the world how to solve their problems.

The serpent says, "The world should listen." That is the way he is dominant in the void. He is a liar because of his laziness. He is superior at challenging others to pro-



vide feedback in order to master those with gifts. Fools rush to gain his acceptance, and they will lose their possibilities of purpose on their merit. Desiring gifts and succumbing to temptations arise from doubt. This is the doubt that the snake wanted them to lose. The war itself is over the soul, yet the battles fought are fights against other people. This is not the same as a goal to wake themselves to the light of God. No, those demons love to present God as the truth to rule over humankind, and to awaken others to this fact with terror.

The men and women who fight others to validate that the opposing forces will obey them are idiotic. The serpent's negative influence is entirely on its own. He lies to gain trust.

The reality of God and heaven are a diversion to healthy living. The most beneficial for the serpent would be the warrior spirit in terror. The warrior spirit is one with their promise of a different heaven. The warrior spirit works to escape the knowledge that the world is full of individuals punished by those who spread terror. They want to punish others for proving their worth is tied up in the way they believe in heaven. Their heaven is something their God only has for them, and that is their deal.

After I learned this, the love of Christ returned to me. I noticed a severe shift from the feeling of the warrior spirit to a discussion that resolved itself naturally. Jesus said, "It is for all to answer before me. In an excellent way that the Author felt, now he feels uneasy." Jesus was the truth and warm love that the Father promised. I an-

swered him that I loved him and not the serpent. Jesus implied that I would need to understand the serpent's power. The serpent loved to show the power it held over people, and I knew right away that the snake's power also could shine in the void.

Jesus continued, "His power was not infuriating to me, and I am not an angry God. The world is just an illusion of the truth that one holds in their mind. Physical reality is just a way the world is. Once that reality is over, life is eternal for those who knew Jesus's love and spread it through the world. There is often a misunderstanding between too positive, balanced, and then too negative. His answer was of love, and the balanced heart would be judged accordingly—the judgment that was coming offers the world from the heart."

Could someone offer their heart and love to the world? Is heaven, as well as the reality of the mind, right here? It had begun to escape me that I had communicated well with the Lord and the angels for some time. The realization dawns on the judged who gnash their teeth that their war inside was, in fact, war on God. The war on God was then the superstitious wanting to believe themselves correct. Their knowledge balanced all things in logical awareness.

How does this play out in the wars of humankind? Terror and fear were like the fluid that stoked the fire in the world. The battle was of man's disappearance to the world. That we come through to the world, and the serpent says, "Humankind will destroy itself sooner or later. That certainty will come to the reasoning of the elite.

Those who drive decisions will understand helpless attitudes. Too often they will fixate on their families' needs and themselves first, returning to me with their lack of love. It is a fixed proposition to judge others, for they do not need to be redeemed."

The serpent continued, "They fear their forces and it becomes an ideology to them. They bring force and weapons upon weapons to the war to keep themselves behind a veil of innocence, but they will be much afraid because of the devastation in the world. What they feel inspires hurt and pain. Innocent of the pain they impart, they must have their way forward to understand their righteousness. This condemnation of the truth is unusually amusing to the serpent. What plays out in humankind comes from my words. The way you, the Author, fights back is exceptionally calm and collected. You present honest feelings not common to an unusually wealthy person or the warrior spirit who decides others' fates. The Author decidedly accepts defeat in the war and then says, 'To whom can I ask forgiveness for my actions?' It is a losing proposition to accept defeat and, worse, blame yourself for others who hurt you. You victimize your position in the world as a lost sheep!"

The serpent lost his way with this notion and added, "You should move forward in the repair of your soul. In that, you can achieve a position to level the playing field. Your knowledge should help me, the serpent, come into the world."

That is what the serpent wanted. The snake wanted to be introduced and feared as the mighty God that ex-

isted before all creation took place. He had many attributes, and many of the men and women would live after his reincarnation.

"I would lie to the world through pestilence, war, death, and conquest," he continued. "The mighty would save the world as my spirit rings in my war cry. The two halves of the split world would fear each other and want to conquer itself as humanity. The religious would stand back and say to themselves, 'Where do our minds take us?' Humanity will extreme doubt that I can save it, and it will rattle their faith."

The shadow demon said, "We need you to sit back and clear your mind. The night is silent, and silence is golden. We require some sense of urgency. The way you, Author, wondered how everything works is abstractly divine, yet the way the night or void thinks is something else. The darkness is all purposeful—it drives men to do what we need from them. This is something that a man sometimes tries to suppress because of the emotions it requires. The night needs evil, as evil is harder to process. It is something evil because we need you to do purposefully what we require. The serpent will dawn again. His light of darkness is something truly unique. It is a type of flame."

I sat in that light of darkness and felt a burning sensation. It did not torture me even though it was flame or fire. It was even inspiring to an extent—the same feeling of mind that might be felt in a minute of inspired wickedness. It made sense to do what felt logically emotionally neutral. It was like a shadow that comes to light

and forces itself into the man or woman who trespasses for its very own reason. It was frightful. Emotions seemed innocent enough, yet the shadows could manipulate them.

“Detachment is something we should work with,” said the shadow demon. “You should not suppress these emotions of fear, anger, and wickedness. They should be accepted as emotional outlets, and they should be required in order to practice holding in the fire of darkness and gleam into the dark light of humankind. This is where a proper understanding of night comes. The fire within is something not to always act on, even though inspired ideas come from it. It is a living evil to ponder and not always to speak of or act out, like an emotion passing through the air. The way the truth is, the way the serpent is, is not lying then. He is justifiably intense with this dark fire that burns deep into the soul and is never still, that morphs and is controlled.”

The serpent said, “The way we see it is not as fire and flame in as much as it is chaos to be ordered by me. The way I see myself in the flame is something that you should help me with. The man who knows my head is of fire or fury. I never suppress or act on this purpose, and it is for others to carry out the mission.”

I sat back and realized the pain. The fury and torment were for others to angrily accept. I often saw myself as meek, yet I was becoming conditioned in rage. I was to accept defeat—a defeat that was in my soul. I said to the serpent, “Why not fight to allow yourself to survive the torment?”

The serpent spat out hate from the fire, but his thoughtful condition was cold. "It was not," the serpent said, "to eliminate fear from the wars of humankind—that driving policy to eliminate fear was to erupt in chaos again."

"How so?" I asked.

"The man," said the serpent, "was infuriated with himself, and to take fear from itself would erupt in a self-depriving outlook. Each would cling to the need for sole survivorship, and communities would fail. The world of spiritual battle would reform itself as groping in the dark for someone to lead, and the chaos of the organization he set up would present itself in the world. Some would do horrendous things. Without me to sit back and realize what is burning in the human heart, you would learn nothing of inspiration or fury of mind. It seems that you would want us suppressed and gone? Then the world would see nothing of the dark energy of emotions either, and they would never have received the counterbalance to God."

I waited to understand the light of the darkness. The flame caught my imagination, and it proved to be something to think about. The world itself was good, and evil is suppressed until emotions cannot keep logic in balance, and then evil wins out. People fear and work to make their shadows happy and to create the world's evil actions.

How do good people work in such hideous fathoms of the soul? How does evil manage to persevere when someone thought they could resist falling into it? How

do reasonable people lose their minds and go out of control in an emotional second? There seemed to be sanity in letting the serpent work itself into the fire and collapse. The moment of truth, looking into the hellfire and seeing himself in what he understood was a blaze of his glory, was fascinating. It caught my attention and imagination and was something almost profound. I needed to stop suppressing my hatred. But instead of acting on it, I needed to detach from it and let it pass from myself out to the world. At that moment, I could have had pain and pleasure if I kept myself tucked tight around the ideas of fear and understanding how other people's emotions let them do whatever they felt. I was reborn in flame—a baptism of sorts and a new thought for the modern day. I saw myself as in truth, or was it a lie?

I questioned the flame that seemed profound. God's light dawned upon my soul, giving me a moment of peace. God said, "His workings control the chaos that the serpent creates. How does the organism then adapt and develop? It is, in a way, patterns or script that the serpent contributes to the world. He tells people how to think and develop in a way that dictates their wants. Just as it is, the patterns of code are mere illusions. Your thoughts of fear are in death. It is not the same as death that the serpent would tell you off, though—his death is the fallen ones' nightmare, those never to return to me and heaven."

I thought that the counterbalance of chaos to order was that the serpent's organized patterns were never adapted or adjusted to the confusion. God said, "The

serpent saw me coming and closed his eyes in deep concern for what was to be said, tormented and in fear of my judgment.”

I said, “I saw how fear ruled the serpent’s values—that the snake valued the fear mongers who controlled people, those people who released the pain. He enjoyed understanding that torment was order, and yet he did not judge humankind. He developed the way to understand fear.” With that, God disappeared from my soul.

The balance and counterbalance were phenomenal. The Earth would shake, fear would take over, yet nothing the serpent could do to the people could lead them away from God. It was in their willpower to devote themselves to the understanding that the heavens would wait for them to understand. Yet deathly patterns of code and gnashed teeth of demons would win for a moment.

I sat in quiet contemplation. I starved myself from the evil one for a time to reduce my fears of how wrong permeated my life. I saw something of a demon escape into a shadow. This monster said from the shadow of my mind, “We ask you to come into the shadow, but realize that it is only for a moment. The shadow itself is colder than the tormented fires of the serpent.” I wondered why I would go along inside the shadow but curiously accepted to write the book.

“We know you, Author,” said the demon. “We know where you have been and where you head. The crown



keeps you ahead of humanity in some ways, and you feel invincible now.” The demon began to weep.

The devil gnashed his teeth and picked up a rock to throw. “This was for your benefit to look out for these troubles.” He threw the rock toward me and continued “You will learn from me.” I doubted that I could and grew upset after ducking the rock.

“See?” said the demon. “Your emotions came out so quickly. You don’t have a single fear except where the pain would put you. Learn from this.” The demon threw a second rock.

I caught the rock and said, “The rock was not enough to stop me.”

The demon replied, “It is that you fought back this time, and you will transfer the fear or pain back upon me. It makes sense, yes?”

I must fight back at a person’s bullying, or the torture resumes for the good-natured. With that lesson, the serpent brought me into a light. It wasn’t God’s light; it was something brighter that I had experienced in God’s light—it was the snake’s spotlight.

“This,” said the demon, “was the perspective of the opposing view of the light and word of God. It will be brighter for you because you are invited to see its glory.” I wondered where the rock was going to come from next.

Although I was in quiet acceptance, this was not to continue. The deep magic that mirrored the world was here. The crown of light was all-inclusive. Deep in the mysterious light was the serpent breathing in its way of the world’s answers. The snake saw itself in a reflection

of me. I fiercely drove my conscious attitude, and I offered the purpose and life for myself to what I wanted. The Morningstar was there then as the fallen angels kept with such decree.

The Morningstar or serpent said, “We are the drive in you, and our fierce attributes guide the plans with that crown. Deep mysteries are forgotten as we, the fallen angels, develop the plans of the world within. The mechanism that is then provided is how the fallen angels address these plans. The plans that we need to share are restricted to those who understand us best.”

The Morningstar as a fallen angel was beautiful, and he sat at the edge of a royal throne. His permutations revealed that there was light inside the void and that this was something much more profound than what I understood. The Morningstar then raised his staff and suggested that I begin to witness treasure.

He meant for me to see how he turned nothing into beautiful ideas. The irresistible idea he sold me was not material gold, and he knew that irrelevant aspect was justifiably for weak-minded people. No, my soul came into a pleasant idea of worth; the more worthy I felt, the greater the element of his knowledge. My angelic self felt crimson. The legion of angels that had fallen had similar beliefs—they felt incredible in the knowledge of self-satisfaction. That wisdom moved the universes for them.

I sat in emotions I rarely felt, such as swelling ability and deep interest in my attributes. The wisdom of how to create treasure almost reached back to an age when magic was popular. These times were all-inclusive to the

angelic worlds. Humans who were magicians understood that balance made self-worth, and their fallen were given merit. The plague of reassurance came through the Dark Ages, where the individuals too often gave in to the ability to conquer through war. The conquests were the treasure, and a neighbor's death brought them quickly to create wealth.

The idea of the past brought about something cynical. Hell gave past attributes of the world a type of home. Hell hardened emotions with heat. My miseducation was now given answers in abundance. What had felt wrong before—indulging in the history of gold or nuggets of facts about the world—reversed the way I thought. Upside went down, and down became upright. I was to be a scholar and a traitor to God. I was inspired by where those feelings or ideas of pride would take me—to that swelling idea of fortune. I was ahead of others in the world for various reasons, then set that hardened heart with an extraordinary thought. The world with the angelic prophecies would manage my instincts, showing that my crown's wealth was light. The Morningstar revealed much more, though. He said I would pay dearly for my attempts to abuse his powers with my wisdom and fearlessness.

The dark magic of the fallen angels was right in that it was organized. The strength of the dark one's ability was not in each angel. Rather, it was in their combined usurpation of facts. Each fallen angel knew the others and held fierce to the facts that each provided. Theirs was an absoluteness and a necessary degree of faith that

led them each as one unit. The fallen angels were then removed from the light, and they provided the next rock.

I sat in my thought too often. I would frequently release any pain to keep the superb idea of love in my heart. The events were overturning the passion that ran wild from the joyous God. I sat in the awareness that my rock-hardened heart could witness the pain and keep my perspective of fact in mind.

The wishy-washy attribute that I saw as suppression of emotions was gone. It seemed that I was to carry a burden, though. The rock that was coming was to move others around, like one would change seats in a theater, to reorganize them willfully. The serpent provided me a certain way through my attributes, and I held gold in my knowledge of others' motivations.

The pawns were most comfortable to manipulate, and they often were moved first and often as pawns on a battlefield. Their feelings were not so intense to understand death. Their pain was natural, and they gave way to the opportunity for my facts to be authentic. The manipulation was actual.

The more challenging people to manipulate had more significant egos. The egotistical wanted and needed faith in themselves. Yet they were wild and unkempt from discipline; these were the castles that moved in the game of life. The men who abused power were bishops, and the knights were a favorite of the serpents. Those included the mercenaries willing to be disciplined soldiers without much idea why they were being moved around

in such patterns. The love of wealth moved many, but the knights were resilient at backing up threats.

The snake played out the game with the power hidden within these theatrical characters, and he orchestrated this life puzzle by seeing the opponents' movements as pure thought. The women held in check were not all-powerful, but they gave men fits because the men burdened themselves with providing for the family. The responsibility to encourage women in power was to release the most remarkable ability on the board. Those wives that were part of the master's plans were to become one with the game of life. Love had to be erased, and the women must trump the world to win.

These women, or queens, defied the understanding of thought with their emotional attributes. They could strike back emotionally without contempt. The women who displayed power might even give the game players a chance to live with a sense of patriarchal purpose. The queen was allowed to make moves, and the men who lived alongside the kings and queens were even more loyal to them. The kings were indeed students of life's games in that rigid facts defined any aspect of manipulating the game. They did not move far from where they stood on their ideas, and the main points kept them disciplined and with the understanding that others moved and protected them. They were motivated because they felt power in placing others. Do you understand the games they played?

The world in the universe is complicated for one reason—revenge. Playing the Morningstar's game is so

tempting because of the knowledge one gains over others. The fun of manipulating and sacrificing other men and women played out in games of war, plague, conquest, and the sacrificial soul's death. His game was created to survive the punishment and to punish others for the pain inflicted on him. The pain? The vengeance? The stubborn light of brilliant reasoning? These enabled him to withstand God for so long. He saw a treacherous God who held the swift demise of the serpent. *Why do we care about judgment?* I asked myself, thinking as a logician and magician in the chess game of live theater.

The snake held a real sense of historical patterns. He must win over the angels. Humankind's ability to beat the positive angels was the key to the most original game in the serpent's mind. The serpent was winning over humankind in a decisive game of vengeance for a purpose; to overthrow more angels. His power was so intimidating.

The serpent was adept in his abilities. He collected the game soldiers, and he kept them as he was to win their belief. The soldiers and fallen angels grew over the universal time frame, and the players of humanity were victorious from where they belonged. Each time they defied God was revenge for the serpent, and undermining God's heaven was his plan to top God. The opposite of life was to become the surface and face of the snake. He planned with enough soldiers, ready to turn the game on its head. He arranged for war using what movements he learned. His strategy was on par with God's love for humanity.

The awful truth that the Morningstar of underneath was a truth-teller was awkward. He was not the living truth. He manipulated men and women and prophesied in the movement of humanity, and almost no one went against him. The sweetest vengeance of taking men and women from God the Father was that he kept them once he had them. In any result, the serpent said, his memory was a fact. His patterns or games in life were fearful. The way he kept people was through humanity's fear and fight mechanism.

The power of man to be resurrected from the serpent's body of fallen angels was in devotion toward God, where fear escaped the will. But it was something that did not often occur. The resurrection to heaven was an offering to most everyone, dead or alive. The souls in the shadows had to face the light of judgment and loving mercy. They hid from God because they did not want to challenge the serpent often. They claimed that the devil made them do something as a common excuse. Those condemned souls had no remorse for their actions.

The resurrection was a false promise of war for the serpent. The serpent believed his fight would win and that humankind would repeal what God provided. That safety was in obedience. The men were also to be equipped with the knowledge of pain. The problem was a genuine part of life for a good reason. The only man, Jesus, who could forgive sin, had passed. The only person in this world who accepted this would experience and live in their pain. Therefore, the problem of mistakes was within the knowledge of how to think about pain.

The glorious Morningstar said, "There was a belief that only one side was correct in life. Humankind should understand several views of religion since it gave more choice. To believe in the resurrection was from many thoughts, yet the idea is false. Going to heaven wasn't all an empty life on Earth could hope for. Having experience in the present was much more knowledgeable to the men or women, and their pain and joy was real. But where is the pain going?

The Morningstar said, "The labyrinth of the mind is something to consider, and the maze of thought is something archaic. The labyrinth was of another religion and is more accurate than how we presented the games life played in theater and chess. That strategy game was for some to understand, but you must witness and decide for yourself on the labyrinth.

"In the brain are actual pathways. This is not what a maze often looks like, and it comes from the way the patterns affect each other. We are stuck in our minds so that we can discuss where tolerance of pain should be. The patience of pain means how much pain one can think about before either suppressing it or giving it back. The brain then registers all these ideas of truth and facts from its memories. The prisoner in the maze is often a hurt person wanting life to be pleasant, and that misunderstanding keeps the person in limbo. To decide how to reduce pain is a start to walking in the maze of thought."

The Morningstar continued, "How do we characterize pain with thought? The movement is an angry one to move somewhere more pleasant, usually at some-



one else's expense. That we have sovereignty over another person is a new level in the same maze. We concede our peaceful attributes and hurt others, belonging to a more brilliant predatory perspective. Acknowledge the pain committed. The brain must ease into a mirror-like maze for a reason. We must find out that we know ourselves as unfavorable. We must understand that we are negative, but the brain is also something like a judge.

"We build castles to wall off others. That we decide where or how to build our castles is one reason for the hurt. These walls are a different part of the brain, and they are the boundaries that protect us. We live in a maze and feel at home in a castle. The burden of living behind walls is usually felt in the sense of strength. The brain is offered to us as a source of feeling insecure. The new identity was a willingness to provide for people to live by codes or patterns. This is something hard to imagine, but people under pressure will lose their positivity to survive. This pressure to stay is an action plan for making codes in a higher authority.

"How do the castle walls offer protection from the people who handle your codes or commands? How does a sovereign king give rights to those for added security? The answer is more to do with leisure. Humans want treasures, and they need to keep order. These paths in the maze with secret knowledge are meant to lure humans in. The ones who hold sway are best to unearth and put in power positions. These people are the grateful and loyal ones to know their abilities are for the king."

The Morningstar continued, "Sacrificing these humans is stupid—they should be given keys to the castle and city for their order. The next idea of power and control is to understand that people who pressure others will make deals with them. Hell should execute any treason, and the man willing to hurt his master will die painfully. The bellies that starve for power and are willing to move for themselves only are easily arrested and put in jail. The pawns are left to roam as sheep."

This, the Morningstar said, was life for many generations. Humanity currently does what the serpent wanted most. That was not only acting in defiance to the heavenly kingdom, but also that humankind wanted to be in a powerless position.

After hearing this, the serpent said, "More sheep is better than less sheep." In this, he could gain strength much easier. He then went back into the darkness, returning to sit on his pile of gold and wanting to hear from God the Father. He lifted me into the heavenly regions and asked God what He thought of my education. The serpent asked Him to prove that his mastery was final.

I wanted to be free from this, and I would rather die and live invincible than take my judgment. I pleaded once more with the heavens to carry my soul back to the right light. I felt horrified that I might have to deliver the message of wickedness on the serpent's behalf.

The Lord Jesus Christ came in, judging the serpent and myself. The Lord was aware that the snake was the founder of hell and was in a particular form for my judg-

ment. The serpent placed all the souls I had taken onto the chessboard, and the Lord wept to know that the snake was using these souls against the heavens to overturn him. Greed and envy were transparent to God as well.

The Holy Spirit asked, “Author, have you measured the evil that you incurred?”

“I don’t think of it,” I said, yet at that moment, I realized that I did not own up to my actions. Internally, I was still blaming the devil for my wicked attributes and deeds in usurpation, and I knew this would not suffice in my final judgment. I decided the serpent had spoken for me long enough.

I wept and told God that I had done terrible things. I felt the warmth of God’s light come into my soul from the heavenly regions. It felt like God had been lost many years ago, though I was only a short time in hell. I realized another identity of hurt was being used against the Lord. I was the example that was to learn from the armies of the fallen angels. I knew all too much about how to conduct myself in the live game of taking souls.

With that, Jesus turned to the serpent and asked him how he felt. And although the serpent turned and flew away, his trickery was that he was still in my head—that my thoughts still echoed his thoughts.

God said, “Let it be known that the crown the Author wears is a jester’s hat. He was no more a king than a fool since he played the game at his own expense and often at the expense of others as well. Typically, you, Author, would have to pass through the hell you put others

through before accepting yourself as wholly good. Upon this judgment, you would face the serpent to test the strength of your resolve to the heavens. It is good to understand where hurt exists and why it has come into so many lives so often, but do not play games with the soul. If you do, you will learn that it is harder to escape damnation than by just flipping me on my head!”

God then smiled and asked, “Do you accept me into my heart?”

I replied that I did with all my being, and my heart softened in the love that God had for me. The judgment was more comfortable this time because I had spent little time with the serpent. I understood that the more I was controlled in my thoughts by the snake, the harder it would have been to say I made mistakes and face the pain I inflicted.

To those who do not believe that such thought control is absolute, I assure you that God provides opportunities to allow his grace. Turn then from the serpent’s games and adjust your way forward. Let the serpent’s crown fall and shatter into worms.



**Believe**

“The serpent is a cursed creature from the angel’s perspective,” Archangel Michael tells me. “The serpent will be allowed to leave the earth only when God sees fit, but that time has not yet come. The world continues to fight with the snake. The serpent continues to eat away at people’s morals and finds what it can to disturb people’s prowess in being able to stand up and fight together against it. It is the executioner of the mind, and the snake does not allow the Word to cleanse the people’s hearts. The Word you could have heard falls upon deaf ears because of the snake.”

Archangel Michael continued, “We know how to instruct you to achieve heavenly ideals and morals eventually through the Word, but it is too early for you to understand. The Words are wisdom, and the heavens share stories with you to make a difference in the world. Author, this is all very new, and we know how to change your mental images to Words for you to better understand. A holy storm rages inside of you. As your understanding grows, the transformation inside you will also grow. As an archangel, this is my purpose. In the future, I will breathe the Word inside your feeble personality to develop your healthy character. We can address how much you know about fighting the serpent at that point. Right now, we are making you aware of how the heavens assist in your fate.”

“Fate is interwoven in your personality,” he continued further. “The heavens allow freedom. It is excellent, is it not? Your free will gives you the choice to follow and worship. Free will is likely where you get stuck in your

thoughts and act willfully. To become a great person, you must allow yourself to let go of control and let God direct your will. You must trust God. He will trust you, too. You will begin to understand his riddles then. God is the answer to those riddles. For you to understand the answers, you must let him control your willpower. The heavens hold the riddles because they are the snake's defeat. For the snake to understand and praise God, the riddles will be solved for him. Do you get this? If you solve riddles for God, then God will teach you the way back to heaven. The riddles keep the serpent here on earth. The riddles are also known as the mysteries of God. Remember that if you trust in God, he will guide you, knowingly or unknowingly."

The angel paused. Archangel Michael intentionally wanted me to accept this. "I can delve into more points as a matter for your further understanding. The Serpent will hide in all things, morally asleep. Understand that the snake is the one that wonders how to kill things. The snake offers death. The heavens offer life. In heaven, we strike fear into the serpent by providing Creation for every new generation. It is often how we combat the serpent on Earth. When the world has hope, it seeks God's *way*. The striking fear that the serpent finds is that life itself is near perfect. However, life is not perfect because God made nature that way. New generations of humanity inherit the world, and often those new generations understand the historical misgivings that people endured, such as war. This is where the snake is involved."



The archangel continued, “Praise God for all that is in order. Look for the hope in life and see God. Any treachery for appreciating your given life is savage, and this savage attitude jeopardizes any transformation the Holy Spirit guides in us. You can survive as a savage who does not appreciate your life. However, it is in God’s glorious Word that you are living, and you can appreciate life here by making God understood by humanity. To know God is to love him, and to love God is to understand your passion. To truly devote yourself to his Words is to know hope.”

As the archangel finished speaking, God materialized before me. He understood that I was faint and meek in my faith, so he spoke to me, saying “Understand that it is *not* how I decide you use your talents in life as much as it is how you interact with other community members. You should understand and sympathize with them. I want you to understand those in need of assistance, and by those practical actions, I will be shown that you do not love the serpent. I want you to be healthy—know you will be. Heaven will greet you in the future. As Archangel Michael told you, your life is intended to help make others aware of the heavens. Appreciate the life given—it is still new, but you are being made aware of heaven.”

God turned to the serpent who consumed my spirit and said, “Leave the author’s side.”

The snake curled over and left my spirit, for the light that shone upon its side was from God. Then God turned back to me. “You, Author, will battle the serpent

in the future. Right now, you see it clearly because I am guiding the conversion. The problem is that when you are left to your own savage devices, you are self-absorbed. Therefore, I will give you angels to prepare you for the battle with the serpent. The clearer your perceptions are from the snake, the easier it makes our conversation.”

God said, “To begin, we can start in my garden. Through prayer, your friends will be enriched and nourished as well as yourself.” I understood that God provides the light for his garden of plants, and I received the impression that each plant represented a person on Earth. He continued, “You can listen in this silence for impressions of my Words.” As I sat and watched in the garden, I could hear my friends through emotional memories. Those emotions felt like my friends being awakened and strengthened by God. I listened to their voices through my heart, but God said, “Listen *closer*.” Then, in my heart, I saw the snake slither away from my friends. In that space, their voices were in conversation with God.

I learned that silence in the garden allowed my prayers to be answered by God. God whispered, “Allow the friends to be at peace. Silence.” My anxious emotions calmed, and from very distant darkness, the serpent cried with hate. The serpent revealed how God’s love and the light were feeding us—as God sends his love to everyone, that love transcends our understanding of him. God humbly agreed and said how simply he works.

This garden of God where I found myself was green and lush. It seemed to be a grower’s paradise. I thought

that this place must be where God feels comfortable, and God answered me.

“You also are a gardener. You plant in nature. You are of my nature. Do you see your part of the garden where the air is crisp and unassuming? The winds come from the East and fall to the West. Your garden is still cooler than most because of your savage nature—the garden reflects the way you perceive it. But as God, I see your garden differently. I am here to show you not only the nature of heaven, but also how heaven understands you. You, Author, will grow in faith. Right now, you are still defiant to my Word. Trust me—I understand the savagery. The serpent guides you.”

God continued, “This is because you are bitter over your life. You felt like life was your prerogative, which means you felt that I owe you for being created. I do not feel the same. This life is your gift. Survive creation and feel good about being alive.”

God said it is the way the world is—the way he works. Savagery is the world wanting more than the simple invitation of living on the planet.

“I gave life and earth to my people,” He said. “You refuse me if you refuse this life. You deny that life is great just as it is, wishing your life turned out another way. That is why you refuse your life. This is hard to accept. You want more and therefore identify with the greed and lust of the snake. Your attitude must change. I would like you to silently become aware that you are creating your own hell. The problem is, however, how will you understand me now that the serpent is all-per-

vasive in your attitude. The snake is the world's wrongdoer. He is the wrong leader to follow because he is a liar. The snake will always attack those who see themselves as better than the life that has been provided for them because of their lust and greed. Life's natural order is not so chaotic for people.

"Heaven is a place of security," God continued. "Feel secure in how I create in life, Author, and join the ranks of the angels again. It is for you to acknowledge this piece of information in your story. When I leave, you will go back to the same mind as you have been living with—one that is entitled and savage. But by the end of the story, you will be transformed." God paused, carefully pulled back, and disappeared.

But I was not left alone. The angel Metatron knew where to find me in God's garden. He began to speak to me.

"Acknowledge, Author, that this is the beginning. It's the same as the birth of a galaxy. How you understand God is only from your perspective. God's love and light are adapted to your viewpoint. God chooses to talk with whomever he wishes. If you understand that your viewpoint is limited to understanding God, you can discover the riddle of *your higher-level soul*. Unfortunately, this riddle takes time to understand. When you understand God's riddle, you will thank him for his honesty. God willing, you will continue to talk to him."

The angel excitedly spoke from a realm that I could not grasp. "I identified with your higher-level soul. The more I share from heaven, the more you will understand

heaven. Your conversations will grow with God. This communication with God is developing your heaven on Earth. It is how you will share your story with friends. If God knows you, then he is aware of your friendships.”

“Today, God brought us together,” the Angel Metatron explained. “This is a part of the riddle of the higher-level soul. As you communicate with heavenly beings, your spiritual energy heightens.” God smiled through the angel, and I felt His presence as the angel continued, “Yes, keep idealizing God. Keep understanding him. Keep aware. God gives you more awareness, more wisdom, for you to share with your friends. Creation’s worthiness is to see God and identify with him, so keep God in your thoughts! God is Creation. He is Life. God is everything known and unknown. God shows us what we can be and fosters our strength. Identify with this idea: God knows his vision but shares you with other spirits for you to glorify Him in this revelation. He cares for you. That is why you are created.

“Why do you think He brought you, a spirit on earth, to me, an angel, to share this riddle of creation and the higher-level soul? I tell you that it is not for His purpose. He can cause the planets to shake and move to new locales. This conversation between us is to glorify his power. Soon you will understand the perspective from the kingdom in heaven. The heavenly kingdom is in creation, and God’s power is motivating us in light and love. We are to be blessing him.”

The angel continued, “You are to obey God’s Words once you hear them. You might not understand what to

say back, but you will know that God is speaking to you.” The angel Metatron pointed out that God often speaks; unfortunately, people do not often listen to him. It is a great skill to hear God as we live on Earth. Because of this difficulty and obstinance, the angel went on to describe what God speaks of.

“The Words describe Earth as different from other places in the universes. Earth is a wonder of water, heat, and life. No other place has seen this type of life reinforced and survived. It has a natural order created for humanity and for that humankind to glorify God. The life that submits to God is to be forever in heaven. That is our way. It needs not to be complicated or savage.”

He continued, “Creation is how we move through the world for God. God is known as one and many. He is shown to be many—in heaven and Earth. This is his Creation. He is equipped to be single, but he knows how humanity understands, and he rejoices through each of our knowledge. Wisdom recognizes that he is the source of happiness. Life here in heaven is awesome. Heaven is readily opposite to Earth. In heaven, we have the light, the warmth, and the sounds that make freedom in spirit forever. Heaven is a kingdom. There, on earth, or in the minds of man, it is different because *God made it* to be different. It is that way on purpose. The sights and sounds of God that come through Creation are slow and heavenly.”

The serpent came forward, knowing that God understood his desires. The serpent was *not* of Earth. It shone its dim light from its place in darkness, appearing

so it could be heard. The serpent was in spiritual darkness, but it began to recognize God. God's Word rang out from within the belly of the serpent in a high-level vibration. The serpent mainly knew darkness before that vibration and was a participant of the holy storm within it. God's Word was a seed in the long battle, and, at that moment, the snake realized that it was readily failing God. However, that meant the snake believed *in* God. The serpent thought it would show that God existed to the world.

Historically, the serpent shuffled along and took possession of human souls. It knew how to lurk in the subconscious, in the background of people's thoughts. Being in the background, the serpent did not live in God's light. To glorify God, the snake had to transition from dark nothingness to being helpful. The snake turned and questioned the souls held in its stomach. Inside its stomach, souls answered. It seemed captive souls had been at war with themselves because the snake ate them alive. Given attention from the snake, their memories of what happened shined forth, and in the snake's reflection began praising God. The souls who had been humbled enough inside the belly of the serpent wanted to shine in the light with God.

With those reflections, the darkness lightened for the serpent. Inside the serpent, with the belly lighter, the snake realized whom those souls worshipped. The snake had thought it was a god, but now he realized their souls called to God once again, and the Word was triumphant. If the serpent were to acknowledge the riddle of this sort,

then God could fill it with his light. God could also *forgive* the snake. In this case, heaven would be a paradise for the serpent. The heavens would cheer and usher the snake into the kingdom once more.

The snake began to believe that it was glorious to experience God. In reflection, the snake realized he could not offer the freedom God did, and it became remorseful for the pain he distributed. The snake thoughts called out to God to heal the mistakes he made. It believed that the Earth was not forever—that God did not intend it to be. The snake thought of me. From inside the stomach of the snake, I said I was a broken human. God knows that I was deeply flawed.

I had to accept that my voice came from deep within the snake. God required me to stand up for his moral code of conduct, and with that moral compass, I could lead by helping other people out of the belly of the beast. I never thought I had intentionally hurt people for my gain, and it was in my own reflections that I learned I haunted other people's memories. At that moment, I learned to listen to my conscience. I began to hear the persistent fears of the other souls inside the belly of the serpent. Unfortunately, the snake was still trying to intimidate them.

God reappeared from the light. The serpent could not understand the riddle of light; however, the snake wanted to live forever by knowing God. Knowing that desire, God said, "If that were true, serpent, I would welcome you to my kingdom again. You must ask forgiveness now that you, serpent, have again seen me. My rid-



dle is clear. It is that for you, serpent, to know the pain you caused. You will face your judge. Today I will be your judge.”

The snake responded, “I think I understand you, God. You are still a riddle. I must keep you in my thoughts, and I will think about your Word. The Word is good and whole. So, to this extent, you are now in my dreams.”

God said, “The dreams you had before me were horrid, in case you wondered. I have figured out those dreams with ease. Behind the hate was fear mostly. On most accounts, you wanted to hear about yourself. Then you transferred that fear and pain. Often my Word is like a bolt of lightning. When you listen to the light, you progress spiritually from that pain.”

The light *is* a pleasure to uphold, thought the serpent.

God replied thoughtfully, “Realize it is good. It is of me. But I may need to silence you, serpent. You think too often for other people, and you glorified yourself when people were troubled with your pain.” The snake’s belly was a sure hell in and of itself. God transferred the snake to a different part of his garden and explained his actions to the serpent.

“The garden is in a spiritual domain, and this spiritual domain is like light. In the garden, there is new growth. You do not understand how I view universal light versus the spiritual domain light. The reason is that accepted light is from your perspective.”

The serpent itself was knowledgeable but decidedly blunt with its desires—the snake expected to know how to receive heaven through the light. The snake was egotistical, willful, and wanted to know heaven. God, knowledgeable of *all* things excellent and plentiful, said to the serpent, “My command is done. You will not be in the spiritual domain of the garden anymore. You will go to the spiritual domain of the desert.”

The snake came from this spiritual domain of the desert, and the barren land was the snake’s original spiritual home. The serpent did not have friends, nor did it know where to lay its head for rest. It moved into the desert with regret that it did not take the time to build its home on earth in heaven, for heaven was, quite bluntly, a beautiful home to be. The serpent asked itself how to be in God’s grace, “Is it that we are to be forever this way—to be forever without the plants or the earth anymore?”

Regretting its decision to live far from God, the serpent wanted to go back to its home in heaven—a place to lay its head and rest. God replied, “Serpent, the desert is not your only domain. You *will* be like the others, but you must allow yourself time to heal. You must talk to me and the others from here before we permit you to heaven because of your savage attitude.”

Again, the serpent was inside itself, grumbling about why it began this trip whose end was to love other people. It hurt people; it did *not* love people, and people were below him. The snake acted as if it were God itself. Seeing this, the Father put the desert to darkness again.

I saw that it was as if God wanted it to be done that way. But why? I wondered. The snake was being convinced that those riddles were frivolous. The difference for the serpent was that it was talking primarily from within its stomach to human souls. It was as if the snake's consciousness had reignited the conversations. The snake was learning to not only speak, but also to listen and reply. I saw that the serpent needed God, at least, and therefore was not alone.

I knew that I too needed God, and God wanted to talk this idea into reality. I was inside the snake's pit, and I knew it. I begged the snake to be free from its stomach. God then spoke his Words to me, "Author, it matters that we talk to the serpent—not of freedom but for the snake to love itself."

The serpent interrupted, "Must you? Must you intrude here while I think? Do you not know that I am pleasantly here strategizing my next move? My own conversations amuse me. Why do you not just leave, Author? To be interrupted by you is not what I want! You are a human! I only want God talking to me now! Humans are not amusing, and it is simple to talk them down and treat them as ignorant."

I grew upset at the egotistical mess the snake spoke to me. I said, "The cold being was not me. You, serpent, need to love yourself." Its heart thumped inside the serpent upon recognizing this idea. The snake was identifying more with love the more it listened to us humans.

The serpent spoke again, a little defiantly, but giving me more faith. "It was that this human could not know

me. I am far too important to know as the serpent, and you, human, are within me. For you, the riddle is too hard to understand—the riddle to know me within myself and outside myself from afar.”

God shed his light within the belly of the snake and struck my soul. I saw the light and said, “I believe you, God, and I believe you to be the one and only God.”

The serpent made his egotistical perspective known. “Are we Gods?” it asked. But even though it said this, the snake started to doubt this idea because the human in it was learning the true God. “How can a human know God?” the serpent continued. This puzzled the serpent and, unfortunately, stalled the snake into misunderstanding the riddle further. “If you humans were to understand God, and I understand you, I can put forth the effort to heaven once more and be ready to avoid this desert. It is that I am *not* the *only* God. God has riddles, and He is a great amusement to me. The riddles are imagined throughout all of space and embody a larger gift of the heavens. Do you not see him unless you think through these riddles? I am beginning to understand how space works and how God gives heaven. The riddle explains how heaven is everywhere in space, and yet does not apply to me without thinking of God.”

God understood the serpent was trying to understand his riddle and spoke to the snake. “Serpent, do you remember your tongue? It was forked before and still is. Do you remember the Word that I spoke earlier?” The serpent remembered.

“You spoke that God is first and always will be in the worlds.” The snake touched on the spoken Words of God and was reflected as the words naturally came from the snake.

God persisted, “Serpent, do you remember me in the desert?”

The serpent answered, “I am committed to and forever will work for your greatness, God. Your Word is inspiring to understand, and readily I have seen and spoken of you in order to see the light inside myself. Thank you. I understand that I belonged in the desert.”

God agreed that the serpent would live in the desert. God saw the light and lived through it. He gave life through the light, and the serpent was given the life it deserved.

The distant planet Earth looked vaguely familiar to the worldly serpent, and it summoned up the strength to view the past and acknowledge what it had caused. It was not for it to enter heaven yet, and the planet was working without the serpent for once. The snake was not watching from within but from afar.

Archangel Chamuel arrived and said, “God is purposeful, and God’s light from afar is in the glory that the serpent gives to the humans.”

I sat back and looked for God again, and this time I saw the sparks of light in my mind and many ideas became conscious. I heard God say, “These ideas are for you to understand.”

The serpent was in the desert away from Earth, but it rejoiced. In this rejoicing, the serpent discussed its life

experiences. It said that the Earth would usually bend to its willpower. The serpent gazed into my eyes. "The world was hell before, and the wars were dramatic. The wars began from corrupt politicians—they mold the world and see how the world suffers. When a world does no harm, it suffers. By doing nothing to promote war, corruption can end. How, though?"

God saw the serpent and listened to the words it spoke. He spoke up, rejoicing for planet Earth. "If I were to speak, and I do, then the heavenly kingdom should separate itself from the warring Earth. Thus, heaven seems far removed. Humans are given free will in their choices, but readily the heavens understand the corruption." God laid his arm down upon the serpent.

The snake had grown up, and it understood the war within itself and how it warred over the world to end life. It and God were seeing together how to complete the wars. God saw deeply into the snake's perspective, seeing the Earth and how the world must stop its insanity. "We could just enforce our beliefs, serpent, but working together in a significant way is how I work. We can reach a solution." God and I rejoiced.

The serpent tried to join the riddle of acknowledging God and ending the war. The serpent said, "The purpose of war is to shift humankind's dreams together. Wars were meant to make corruption the same as understanding my willpower. This is one way the snake realized his personal dreams as reality in the world." Then the serpent wondered if he could just hypnotize the world to end the wars. "To which end," the serpent con-

tinued, "Can I make humankind agree? If my dreams were understood to stop wars—stop each corrupt politician who dreams of establishing their place in this world—we could hypnotize the politicians to have the purpose to end wars."

God said, "But this is not allowing humankind free will. It would be for you to know your own end, serpent. We want an agreement to the end of the wars."

The serpent stared heavily and blinked. Its eyes felt a tear in them, and the tear rolled down its cheek. The serpent said, "How do you know this? How does God work like this?" The serpent then became aware of God and the riddles. "Yes, God is all-embracing. He is." The snake reflected in silence for a long time.

As I understood God and the snake in this conversation, I was rejoicing. God directed his passionate Words to both the serpent and me. "Author, you have noticed subtle shifts inside both the snake and you. Therefore, I will allow Archangel Michael to bring you from the belly of the snake into heaven."

Archangel Michael was strong. To say how strong, I would have to ask for his faith. So I just wondered and asked about my limitations. Archangel Michael said, "Author, know that you seek the divine knowledge. The strength of my faith is unfathomed. To demonstrate, I will breathe for your spiritually."

Archangel Michael stayed within my breath and expanded my soul's knowledge. Putting a hand on my back, he held my breath for more than four times the length that I could express. Archangel Michael expelled

and inhaled in the way I understood an angel would create strength of faith inside a soul. He made his strength known to me by expelling my breath even longer than I could last. Then Archangel Michael laughed. "It surely was knowledge to understand that breath, and you felt it. How did you know yourself to feel completely exhausted, and then feel more than that?"

I replied, "It was shocking, and I gained a full understanding of how the breath could belong to both of us through faith." I had been given breath in identity by Archangel Michael, and my ability to think and be aware was a more significant incapacity.

"Yes, see how your faith compares from before. It is *not* the same now. It seems that you have given my breath of wisdom new vitality. I enjoy the light that comes from seeing you from an angelic perspective," said Archangel Michael. "Now, remind yourself that God is great!"

At that point, the serpent began to turn its head to rest from its losing battle—the riddle that God provided and wisdom. I started seeing the light in a new way. It had various colors that were blues inside glowing yellow embers of light.

"This is the final mystery," said the Archangel Michael. "You know God and see and speak. To know us is enough to realize wisdom from us, and it was always this way, Author."

"I am the way," God's voice broke through, "the way forward. The serpent was not the way forward, and it was that the serpent should not be admired as much, and it was that the snake is to be learned. At any rate, the



serpent is your lack of understanding to know yourself.” God paused.

I began to see the light and offered a question. “I see the light and want to understand in thought, but why was my light turning red? Does it turn red, shifting back and forth toward the bending universe for some reason?”

God answered, “The red is opposite to blue, meaning the snake is leaving, and it left you. You will not leave, but the light of information does. The blue shift is to understand what comes toward you.”

I was enthralled. “So when can I see the lights of the blue? Trust me when I say I want to understand the heavens as well.”

God said, “The blue light is not there yet? The heavens are and have come true for you. I was at the original point of inspiration, and you have now understood the heavens.”

With this, God told me that the light from heaven will reach me. God was merciful. I wept. I knew. I wasn’t jealous, and I knew not to be hated anymore.

God knew, and he said, “Please, wipe the tears off.” Mercifully, the tears landed in my right hand as Jesus showed streams of light from heaven. Yes, from heaven. It was the light as was imagined from God; I saw the mercy it asked. It was golden in hue and lovely. I thought to myself, *I believe in heaven. It was built for us through Jesus.*

The particles of light danced from Jesus. Jesus admitted, “It is not the same here in heaven. You know the

light and see it differently in heaven.” I felt joyful, and God felt the moment shift. *I* shifted. “God, where am I?”

“Spiritually, you know you are in heaven.” The light was basking in all directions. Jesus saw this and asked his mercy on us. God added, “It is from the source that understands that heaven is ever-present. To that extent, you will be secure in God’s wisdom.”

I marveled at what was before me. “The ideas are sound-like, and it is the words and light that were projected through Jesus’s answers.” I was inspired. As the Author, I called this wisdom, but this was also known as the Holy Spirit. I was shocked to be introduced in this regard.

Jesus said, “The Holy Spirit sent answers to you and guided you here.”

I acknowledged this and hurriedly began, “Is life—”

“A proving ground? To understand yourself, or us, in heaven? Your faith will bring you to that wisdom,” the Holy Spirit finished my thought and answered it. Then it was gone from my side, knowing I kept my place in heaven.

## **Section Two – Bonds and Bridges**

### *Building Meaningful Relationships*

# **Garden of Harmonies**

# Chapter One

Those who have power and glory are the ones who provide for others—providing a resource of strength and dignity that is world-changing. By giving their momentum to God and not themselves, they challenge the known structure of life. Do you understand this?

God said to me from anew, “Author, come close to me and the living waters of the Holy Spirit. Come close to the spirit I provide, for the spirit of Christ revitalizes. It is the spirit of Christ that allows us to acknowledge our faults and begin to regain ourselves in holy purpose. This transition between poor and lackluster faith to superior strength in glory is a fountainhead of power.”

Then God appeared to me with the living Christ alongside of Him. The Father spoke quite eloquently, saying, “The need we have from this story is that superficial wants are to be explored and dignified as much wanted aspects of wealth, and the wealth that is acquired is likely to come to an end in dust for all to witness. The legacy of a story is only as strong as its message, and that message of the superficiality of wealth is nothing but self-serving.”

At these words, I investigated my heart and found the light of Christ in me once more, this time very excitable and strong. The weakness I held onto, the controlling part of how I hoped my life would play out, was near extinct. I held onto what people thought of me for

one last moment, and then the light overpowered that feeling with renewed strength.

Jesus Christ then said, "Through the Holy Spirit came a blessing that we seek from you. That your story is a model for others to witness. Your drive for purpose is shown through the face of adversity and remains lit with that purpose. Your fire for life is burning in the darkness of others' diseases so that they may shine a light on their own stories of self-superficial wants.

"Author, know that the light is in your heart for more reasons than to prove us as a higher power. The power is grace. It is loving others and lifting them from their own self-pity. Let your legacy be of loving knowledge, learning from others, and providing hope and dignity."

Then Christ investigated the heavens and saw that there were many who wanted to see me. My spiritual family was remarkable as they fought to keep me in their prayers, and they came into my spirit and told me they were still in my midst. That I had never fallen out of sight of them and that they awaited my return in heaven.

That power of love that transcends all is something so beautiful to fulfill that I had more motivation to anchor my thoughts to that light in my heart.

It became a practice for me to witness the light staying in my heart—the momentum of love was cast through the Holy Spirit, accompanied by my spiritual family, and received in inspired thought. My mind worked first through my heart and then through my perception of my truth. In return, my actions spoke of love

first and then listened to the love of others to decide how to act.

That purpose was slightly different than my new intention—I shifted my understanding from controlling my fate in order to show others my wealthy achievements to embodying the simple desire to let my light shine. This conscious shift was a tremendous accomplishment, and in that moment of serendipitous love between my creator, the heavens, my spiritual family, and myself, I declared my soul resurrected from the bones of my body.

The night came and went, and still the light was aflame in my heart. The light was constant, and I meditated on the center of myself in my heart, balancing prayer and active thoughts. I prayed, seeking truth in my heart, and listening to truth developed my soulful conscious voice. That voice was timid to begin with, but my reasoning became more evident as I balanced the voice, trusting it with my intuition.

In my heart, I saw and listened to past memories. All sorts of embarrassing thoughts came to my mind, and I wished them to be distant memories. But the light showed and gave me grace and glory, and I understood that the story I told myself was fueling hatred for those embarrassing feelings, and that hatred was controlling my life. That control was trying never to feel their hate, and that fueled my ambition to feed stories of my superficial wealth to those who hurt me to prove them wrong. That feeling of control over others soon became a desire to prove people wrong. This resulted in not only creating

more pain for others in my thoughts, as my embarrassment turned to hatred, but also doing something quite unnerving to my soul—the light in my heart would fly out of my body and be cast on something worse for others to feel. That hatred was my cursed story of superficial desire, and I let go of my heavenly light to accomplish it.

I soon returned to my heart and reacquired my light through meditation. I could only control so much, and, through meditation, I was learning to reframe my need to require the respect of others with whom I felt embarrassed. The embarrassment could have very well been fear, pain, or torture, but letting go of the light in my heart to curse the people I had disdain for left me with only empty and soulless thoughts. These empty and soulless thoughts of how others would suffer gave me no healthy answers—all it did was satisfy and justify my superficial desires for a legacy of achievement and wealth.

I learned another truth in those meditations on the light in my heart and conscious voice. In it, I could answer to God. The answer was that I could ask for redemption and pray that I could be a better person than my curses.

God came to my heart through my soul and spoke to me. I listened to my heart first, the people I prayed for second, and my logical thoughts last. God spoke to my heart through the light and said, “The person I love in this life is not the one who affects society most. These people have good chances to redeem themselves through the lever of worldly power, and this shows others how to live. But whom I love most are the people who listen



to me and care about others enough to point them to their personal greatness. They figure out how to allow them the living grace they allow for themselves first and then support their growth. I will work in their purpose through the spirit in their hearts.”

I figured that the Christlike appearance of this answer of serving others through providing love and consideration was acquired through the Holy Spirit. I listened to the message, thought of others, and listened to my rational intuition. The spirit moved me, and I became aware of my efforts to help others, but it was the decision of the mind that solidified my account. This personal account was my purposeful belief that I could act and create opportunities for the weak in faith to become purposefully better in spirit.

That was the belief that I did not need control to protect myself from others. That was the belief that I could protect myself from getting in my own way. I could listen to the light of my heart and trust that the Holy Spirit was creating abundant opportunities for all of God’s servants, and that trust in Spirit was believing in myself to choose to keep my focus in my heart.

In the dark hour of the past, where I had hidden in my curses for others, I understood one crucial thing. My belief in others was only in what opportunities I could present to them. I was not in control of the outcome. It was no longer a superficial self-determined story of my own wealth that was to play out. I lived in a moment of uncertainty, only controlling my own actions. In

that moment of creating opportunities for others, I envisioned my spiritual family in heaven praying for me.

I was given a prayer of foresight—the foresight to see and witness the future ramifications of what might be possible. This was momentum in the spirit casting in the hearts of others. I could see how others feel and act to provide support. I could feel others' indecision to trust Christ, and my support was a strength—they could also believe in the feeling of grace, power, and glory. I was an example not to show how to believe but as a resource for them to confide in, and that their ability to find confidence in redeeming themselves through the spirit was healthy.

I was given a vision from the Holy Spirit. While the other person could feel better about being listened to, and it was often confused with empathy, it was through prayer that the other person felt confident. This vision of the purpose of Christ was a story waiting to be heard, and that purposeful connection between stories told, made, and kept were prophesies. The spirit asks but does not demand the actions of others, the spirit is patient with us, and the vision that I was given to me was the same. As I kept others in my thoughts, they appreciated the feeling of love flowing through the air and were transformed because they accepted their own story of spirit within their lives.

Then Christ's spirit took hold of my heart. The spirit came and went through me as I explained the story. The spirit took shape and pronounced that through the established word and my writing I could help affect each

person with my thoughts. These thoughts were no mere reflections—the words I proclaimed contained prophecies. If I held purpose for the Christ spirit as my guiding light, my tongue would be aflame, and I could provide numerous services to the Lord.

As I gave myself these opportunities to unite the people who heard my story with the writing from the Holy Ghost, it became more apparent to me that I could not be in error. My tongue stayed magnetized for my words to ring true and these feelings of devotion were to bless the thoughts of others as inspiration.

The word of the Lord then came to me, and it was as if I could hear the ideas from within cry to me to discuss how faith can heal with the spirit. I was not a prophet myself, as I would write, but more like a conduit for the spirit to use and write out its thoughts to the pages in the story. In this fashion, I trained myself to allow the feeling to sit, transpire, come, and go as if I conversed with Jesus Christ.

God said, “Take these ideas in your vision and return to me. The words you write now are favorable to others as well. They should be greeted with a sincere heart if you keep your purpose afire, and if being a conduit of words as an author is your purpose now. Then stories you tell are a blessing to your history.”

I thought about these ideas as God spoke them. It felt like my heart was newly devoted by a baptism of spirit. The ideas of Christian thought, as I had studied from the bible, came to life. These words from God coded my beliefs differently and more perceptually. I never ques-

tioned truth when I felt the spirit inspire my mind—as the perception coursed through me, I just let it occur.

My heart was focused on the light, and I made decisions based on the people I served. I thought about how the Holy Spirit works and inspires those to change their beliefs. I sat in wonder until the spirit began to write more through my fingers, onto the pages of the story.

“Author, do not mind the way you write now. You will write and consider the heart and the history of yourself first. The history you felt embarrassed about has taken you this far in life. It is a pattern that has been working before you could speak independently. This was not a forecast for your life, but genetics does play into what you can and cannot do. You are limited—Spirit is not. The Holy Ghost is extra perceptual. It is something of a holy order of instinctive prayer. And through the Holy Ghost is God.”

I trembled through this order of thought because I felt my purpose become closer to God. The heart that I had was a chamber to listen to my consciousness, yet it allowed space for life to flourish. I envisioned plants of a garden in a paradise. God was the grower, and he sat in the garden as a place where I could understand my love for others.

God said, “The way we planted the seeds to flourish is of a design in a holy order. These ideas and friendships will grow into a collective harmony. It is okay to emerge in the garden with your thoughts toward the light—the light of your heart is the light source from the garden. The light of the universe is different—this is the light

that is spiritual and unblemished from the heavens. It speaks into your heart and mind and activates growth opportunities for you to flourish and thrive.”

I thought about the flourishing ideas of the garden and how we inspire each other as a collective, given the word and light as nourishment. Then I thought to myself that our source of nourishment was light, which comes into our hearts as we grow stronger in faith.

God said, “This is the workings of the spirit. Listen to the conscious voice as it comes through you. You know the conscious voice as the truth because it nourishes your life and helps you grow in faith, and it is a balance of supreme intellect. I share my wisdom with you from the garden of paradise.”

With those words, I felt I had been given fruit to eat and nourish my accomplishment. I had been involved in writing ideas from the Spirit to inspire and give, and my act of faith bore fruit in terms of spiritual sustenance. It was mana from heaven.

It felt then and there that I could do more with the idea of my life and humanity’s legacy. That the idea of the history of life was spreading throughout the garden. I felt the Tree of Life close to my heart. But in this wisdom was something of a dark speck. The dark speck was the snake in the intellect. It asked me to agree with him.

I sat contemplating rescuing my senses and meditating on my heart again to close off my thoughts of spiritual nature so the snake’s words would fall on deaf ears. But something from the Holy Spirit told me to keep myself open in the garden of paradise. The Holy Spirit

told me that the snake was of its own wisdom, and if I learned this lesson, I would not experience other people with embarrassment, hate, or curses. This was the darkest hour of my heart being open to the Tree of Life with the Holy Spirit. The spirit said that the dark hour of humanity's curses was opened through the senses, the knowledge of the snake was rebellious, and that the snake was making its play through humanity's actions for conquest. The quest for famine, diseases, and death for the planet was surreal, and it was in this willingness to conquer the surroundings through the plagues of humanity that humanity sat within its cursed path. The snake was cursed, and humanity was ignorant of its disease, and that this darkness would last until the Lord's spirit could break through the curses.

The serpent saw the end of humanity's story, finding it had crushed what God created to combat it. The serpent said the spirit of passion and purpose to fulfill the life-giving prophecy of a new heaven had not arrived through Christ. The serpent's story was something of life and death away from the Lord. At his words, I realized that in this war of religious obligation and self-proclaimed greatness, I should listen to the words of Jesus Christ from a meditative standpoint in the heart and then mind.

In the legacy of humankind was a fight to understand the light in the heart, to find a purpose to fulfill for its creator. And in this fight to understand life, the creator would allow its beauty and forgiveness as a heavenly kingdom.

Jesus Christ said, "Author, the snake is the enemy of most people because he has swallowed their minds and led them astray. My way is through understanding the light in the heart and giving other people opportunities to succeed in the ways of my spirit. Therefore, I want to help you understand my thoughts through a vision."

I started to see the serpent as a dragon of darkness scourging the planet. The curses that humanity fed itself were of the darkness that embodied itself as shadows. The shadows of the night were then the curses manifested through humanity's unconscious practice. These tortured souls were being brought to the light from Christ to search for their new way back to heaven.

In this darkness, God promised his redeeming presence over the world. People would realize the darkness and shadows of curses and lies they told about themselves and sent out as curses on each other were haunting them in their souls. This darkness, separated from God's light, would diminish as God spoke to them in a warning. God and the Lord would use the prophecy of light to search for the true remainder of heavenly servants before the night is expunged from the heavens.

In the nighttime on this earth, the glory of conscious thought was to be dimmed and regarded as non-existent. Not every servant would hear the word of God through this veil of spiritual night. This darkness coming over the land was to silence the evil once and for all, and in this silence was the meditative practice of searching for the light and reason in the heart. People could use that un-

derstanding to know that God was holy and evil would perish.

The people's cursed shadows were their undoing. The shadows were cursed individual souls without a light to bridge them to the heavens. This darkness served as the shadow's displacement from the earth and heaven and was included in the legacy of humankind's downfall. Indeed, the serpent was found victorious in the end, for these shadows would triumph over the Earth for mere moments.

The serpent, the cursed creature that exercised its will from the garden of paradise, looked upon the life and death of humanity as a game to triumph over. It had gone to great lengths to manipulate the souls of humanity until it had created its legacy of darkness.

In the way of the Lord, Christ is serving others, and the cursed shadows sought to reframe their embarrassment from their legacies. The souls that wandered the earth for generations, passing down their fears to others, were to be destroyed entirely by the light of Christ. Seeing that moment of excellence, I wondered how the passion and purpose of following the light in my heart would save me from those shadow devils.

In this prayer, I knew my spiritual family was looking down from the heavens. This heavenly vision was their prayer when reflecting on my life on Earth. From heaven, they saw me and my reflection of all I did and was to do. My spiritual family had a timeless understanding through Christ's spirit to understand my situation and speak to me through waves of rippling light in my heart.



Because of their vision, I became aware that the Lord would give me an understanding. I found grace for others through my obedience and listening to the foundation of my love for this beloved spiritual family. This was especially true from the shadows living and cursing the world through their plagues. Their vision became the anchor of love in my heart.

When my spiritual family came to my mind, the world around me transformed into light rippling through my surroundings. My path changed as I gave up that last bit of control of protecting myself from others. I knew too that the end of the world was coming. Christ was to return and share his light and life with all on the earth who would survive his wrath of judgment. That for a moment in time when evil would win, the mercy of the Lord would shine on humanity. The heavens stared at the prophecy of the return of Christ as he would resurrect the dead to life once more.

In this vision, I began to wonder how to gain favor with the heavens. What could I learn from my angelic family on offering blessings from the holy spirit? How could I envision the prayer of reflection for my brothers and sisters on earth to help present the message of the Lord into their lives?

As I thought and prayed to the Holy Ghost, I witnessed a miracle. I witnessed that the purpose of the spirit would answer to the needs of those humbled enough to need the Lord. It was in this reflection on humanity that I could help a realization present itself. The Lord would offer the Holy Spirit where a realization would

occur for those who were humbled, and the vengeance of the Lord would be quenched in the waters below the filament.

The waters were the same pool of Genesis that God created, and in those waters were the universes. Life was made in the rocky and bare spiritual ground, much like the caverns of hell, and in this rocky earth lived the serpent who consumed the souls of humanity over time.

A guiding member of my spiritual family told me, “We loved you and saw your living spirit grow as you offered prayer through these tunnels of light and love with others. There was nothing in the universes that is of greater power than love and light, so we are sharing with you the power of the love inside your heart.” They continued, “How does it feel when we shape your thoughts through your heart?”

In that moment of understanding that an awakened heart was full of transformative power, I thought of the incredible ability to help others.

Then angelic voices of heavenly design arose my inner light of wisdom, voices that were thoughts in my mind heard from the heart. These voices, these ideas, whatever they are called, are the voices that whisper inspired thoughts into the world through a transformative spirit.

In this material world, this is how the spirit can affect us: my spiritual family had offered their guidance in spirit to transform my heart; my body told my mind that intuitive prayers could be understood; and this intuition

could be shared through the understanding of voice and stories.

I now understood why my tongue was magnetized to tell of Christ and his resurgence into the world. I was to share this story because it would liberate other minds and hearts. In the shadow of fog and forgetfulness of who we spiritually are, the story of our creator and his redemption would be a powerful vehicle of ascent for many souls. The ascent into the heavens would be and is the judgment of the Lord. How would it feel when those on earth see their consciousness illuminated and their souls set free? I saw many souls going into the heavens on the horizon while God stood on the earth.

I saw God come toward me and say, "All I want is to love those who come to me in their spirit—this is the understanding for others to know. Share this illumination of understanding through the stories you tell. Share these ideas with others when they need help to resurrect their faith. Spread the Word of Jesus Christ."

I found purpose in these words. The words were to challenge me to become a voice that presides in prayer for those I meet and to influence their habits towards God so they return to heaven.

## Chapter Two

I saw and felt the waves of generosity by my Father, the God in Heaven. He moved the waters around my conscience to become aware of something new, his invisible hand waving through the waters and startling me. The ripples in the waters cascaded into my awareness as I spoke to God.

I asked, “God, where should I have been in my life up to now?” knowing I had taken many detours in my life.

In that moment of genuine curiosity of what His plans were for me, and knowing what my plans had been, a warmth washed over my heart. This warmth was of God and his appraisal of me was that I had been wanting. I had been stubborn in my own defeat—a defeat stemming from a denial of love. When others wanted to connect with me, I had to force it.

This realization left me aware of several outcomes. My spiritual family wanted me to have fun and enjoy myself, so why was I isolating? To keep me from running down that rabbit hole of asking myself the same several questions, God intervened and brought new light into my heart.

“Author, you have made your way in life in a method only you could understand and no one else. Do you see? You are too convinced of love as a mutual respect between you and the people around you. Love is not the same quality that you perceive it to be. It is not respect,

but it is beyond that. In faith, you need to realize that love is a connection and a desire to belong. That desire, that passion, is fruitful for a myriad of answers.”

I sat back in my meditative prayer and acknowledged the truth of what God said. I said to myself, *Why had I believed respect was belonging?* The idea that respect was necessary was a way to stay stand-offish in relationships. I began to feel the rippling laughter that God and the Holy Spirit always brought into the conversations.

God continued, “Author, now that you understand that connecting is a safe journey of belonging with other people, understand that we will help facilitate those relationships. You must *want* to belong though. Keep it in your heart and see the difference in how you attach roots into the world.”

God stayed in the conversation longer than I realized. I thought God was someone whom I spoke with and then dissolved with the meditation, and then I took what inspiring thought He provided and applied it to my life. That was respectful of myself and God. The difference now is that I was willing to belong with God and allow his intervention in my life. This was quite different.

Then God took his hand and connected to me with a hug. What an inspiring event to understand that he was willing to embrace me in this moment. My heart leapt out of my chest and the door in my heart opened. God walked through that door, and the coldness that was there from isolating my whole life changed to some-

thing more humid. It felt like the garden was beginning in my heart, and there I could help plant a seed.

“The first seed, actually. As awkward a meditation as it is, it is a huge benefit to have this seed planted in your life,” God said.

The Holy Ghost was then in my heart, and I witnessed the Holy Ghost provide the love in sunlight and nurturing the planted seed. The Holy Ghost said to me, “This plant will survive quite nicely if you pay attention to the nurturing of the plant. That means that you respect and want the plant to survive. It also means that when you adore the plant, the love that you have shared with God and God has shared with you will trickle its way into your conversations with the plant. This garden is of God and should be kept holy.”

I was curious why a seed and a plant were used to symbolize faith in relationships in my life with God, but I was hesitant to control the conversation. I wanted to listen and hear what God said first and appreciate his knowledge before I put myself into the conversation.

This was the wrong approach—God wanted me to ask this question. The question of how a plant symbolizes my faith in relationships was brilliant for this story.

God said, “Do unto others as you would do unto yourself. Take the overlap of mutual benefit and plant that seed with it. The goodwill of amiable love and generosity is appreciated. That appreciation is something foreign to you now. The generosity and goodwill of the relationships in your life will carry much more meaning to you than just having relationships. You see, the in-

spired connections with other people will foster an attitude that only I can share with you. The nurture and nature of relationships is on your behalf.”

God continued, “I inspire the connections to other people in your life. I suggest and dictate whom you might love through my plan. That involvement is of a rippling universe that changes and adapts to the predictable outcome of your love for heaven in this universe. Universes are many and the great scheme of my current plans shifts to a larger understanding. We all do work on helping relationships either foster and grow or give up. That existence is nothing new. The love that you provide will help you grow yourself. Let me explain.

“The plants that survive are like relationships between you and the world. The plant only wants to belong when it is nurtured. The relationship then is healthy because the plant wants to belong with the other plants in the world. The garden will grow as you invite more opportunities of mine into your life. That belonging is like growing roots—roots that are the connections in the heart where love exists between people. It is a spiritual connection of tunnels of light and love. Do you understand yet?

“The angels come and bring love into your worldview and they provide incentive to belong with certain relationships. If you are part of my plan, you will obey these communications to belong with people. This is not a product of your emotions. This is the connection of spirit that tells you what and who is right for you in your life at that moment. You will understand the energy

drawn from your willingness to connect with other people when you feel nourished with spiritual insights. Do you see? When you dream of people you might receive, the angels are telling you that you are going in the right or wrong direction. Listen to this spiritual insight. Your intuition will bring you the opportunities to find and foster the connections between people.”

I was unaware of the sense of belonging until this moment, and I thanked God for the lesson he provided on how to bridge my connections of love and light into relationships planted with other people.

God continued, “The plants symbolize your relationship and the mutual admiration you may have together. The relationship or the seed is something between people. Do you see how I work through a grand plan? The relationships are my earthly kingdom, and this domain is now available to you.”

I saw how before I had not loved and only held an isolating viewpoint, keeping myself at a distance—while I appreciated and respected others, I had not fully investing myself in the relationship dynamic. This was a great understanding.

God said, “Now is the time I must introduce my angels into this domain. The angels of nature are the spirits of the earth. You see that my angels are fields of energy that take form as winged deities. The spirits are flowing energy that bring nourishment to your soul and speak to the relationships for me. The nourishment of such gardens is then like a love for my grand design. Do you understand yet? The grand design is a garden, and I



walk through the garden of love with my angels to foster growth and support of unification.

“Unification is the process where the garden continues to grow through the universes, and the roots connect to other people through various relationships. So you may receive growth by tapping into the love from someone who is near your soul. The roots connect you to many different universes and perceptions of love from different relationships. It is not the actual person with whom you are connected, but it is the relationship of love through me. I am that glue that ripples in time and space that connects the spirits together.”

I think I understand. I remember stories I know wherein the glue of love and light is like the waves that integrate the universes together. It cannot be seen through the material world per se, but we feel that love and are attracted to those people who have a strong belonging and positive outlooks.

God said, “Yes, that understanding is something close. Let me show you how Jesus manifests his identity of love as a savior and prophet through the Word. His Word is of me. He fosters miracles in relationships between people through us, the Holy Trinity. That is not what you are going to do. The angels understand that Jesus is beyond their abilities to intervene in the connectedness of relationships of the universes. The angels that bring everything together know Jesus is to make miracles because of his abilities as Lord. He did not ask permission of the laws of the universes—he understands his

power and gives me as his Father a certain dedication to belong on Earth and in Heaven.”

“Jesus brought heaven into this Earth for a reason, and it was for you to understand that life with me and in my love is everlasting. That was a prayer from me in my grand scheme, and that miracle of understanding changed the universe for a long time. The passion of Jesus is that he shows love through his miracle and unifies the world with heaven.”

At his words, I became aware of how the universe followed the great design of Jesus, up until we truly forgot the messages of his miracles. I knew that I had forgotten to ask for miracles in my life to show my appreciation of heaven’s kingdom.

God said, “Do you see? Truly building the garden of heaven on earth is about relationships. Now you will understand how to grow roots in connecting to people. The universes will grow and communicate with the heavens through this change in the tunnels that connect to people. The seed of one may become a living path of plants in the garden of heaven.”

I silently wondered, *How do I connect to others spiritually? Is a tunnel of love and light possible to create?* And God answered me in that moment: “Connect through the angels. In the spirit of the natural world, the angels will help you understand how they bridge connections with all life.”

The angels watched over me and took charge of my spirit. They went to my heart and found room to create a space in which the tunnel carried me into God’s do-

main in Heaven. This showed me that it was possible to meet God and Jesus and the Holy Ghost. It turned out that the tunnels were made of a match of love and light. I'm not sure if that means these tunnels can be measured, but the spinning measure of my own soul, when I left my body in spirit, might be exposed. You see, the tunnels are the finest of details that we can see through the sun, even though the angels mask the tunnels through the light of the suns. The time is shown through our own subjective perspectives in how we move almost instantaneously through the light. The soul has a small mass because of the casing it has between the filament and the waters, and the rippling of sound can show us how we are unique in our perspectives.

God said, "You have visited me in the heavens, and for this you will be different when I return you to the world. You have come and seen the kingdom of heaven. Therefore, you will want the others in your life to talk about the kingdom of heaven because it is good and whole. The communication is your nurturing the relationships you have together through prayer. These prayers are fundamental for the angels to build tunnels between yourself and other people's hearts. These tunnels are then natural components of prayers. The tunnels of light and love connect you with each person in relationship. The communication between all is an influence—not so much power as a shared wave of love and insight gained in the mind."

God then gave me space to reflect on the teachings he had bestowed upon me: that He provided the soil in

which the seed of ideas was planted, and that plant is the mutual respect and belonging we have with one another. That is of God's domain and that is the garden.

The angels glowed and danced fervently around me. I thought about Jesus and his passion to come to earth to perform miracles in bridging the known world with heaven. I understood what he did on the cross that day—he shared his body with our spirits.

It is profound that I may understand the tunnels in light and love through the heart. God abides with the known universe and spiritually permeates this understanding to his kingdom. I believe that he will come to us in our hearts if we ask the angels and Jesus to abide in us, and the conscious reality that is a reflection of our understanding of the universe will transform our lives.

This transformation was the way I could imagine my relationships. I could feel the energy dissipate when someone left the conversation with me. I could practically see the words about to occur as I actively listened into the other persons actions. This plant that was growing stemmed from these good conversations. The plant itself was the relationship and represented God's love, yet the balance between each person and how they fed the relationship should be nurturing. This nurturing was similar to respect. If both people put energy into the relationship, the plant in the garden is fed with mutual love and respect.

Love from God is like following his plan. The garden is a place that is holy ground, and we live on Earth. That is all very good. However, questions then arise: *When*

*do people sabotage the love that they have? When can the plant do poorly?*

These patterns of neglect are often the result of poor relationships. When we cannot see the energy flowing or feel the support for God in the relationship, I would ask God or Jesus to intervene. I often ask the Holy Ghost to intervene in hopes that opportunities will flourish for positive change, but I know I can only control my own energy in the relationship. The plant works as a symbol of our kingdom of heaven. Those God-given roots comprise our relationships, reflecting where we are, and we have that time to show to others in our lives that we care enough to pray for a faith-filled relationship between our community.

I know I do not control the other person. If I were to try to manipulate and control the other person then that would result in them trying to protect their own energy, sense of self, and safety. Therefore, when we respect a relationship, we embody the mindset that we are there to plant seeds in the relationship—knowing that God is the light and the spark of that plant—and nourish the plant the best we can to grow its roots.

God said, “Author, why do you not understand how we work in the seed?”

I was surprised by God’s question because I knew I had described the seed as a spark between people in relationships.

God explained, “The Almighty does not spark the light, I *am* the light. Generations of word and code exist inside the bodies you hold as yourselves—this body of

yours is not the same as a body of light, at least not totally. The human body is spiritual *and* material—both and the same. It is a living testament to the seed planted that became both word and code, but it outlives even yourself in that body. You communicate and influence each other as relationships in prayer, or light and laughter, in the universe. But what is it in the heavens but a plant? No, it is not completely the garden—it is part of a plan and of course that plan includes your story.

“The plan is that the living word is of you and relationship is of the kingdom of heaven. You might ask, why is it so symbolic? Why is life in the universe so chaotic if it is a neat and nice garden in the heavenly realms?”

God continued, “These are fair questions. And the answers involve the mutual respect that you imagine as fostering and nourishing growth. It is the weight of the Word as the seasons of weather. Things change because life needs to adapt; therefore, the chaos is room for that seed to grow into the manifested destiny of the kingdom of heaven.”

I saw God’s passion as he explained.

“Author, I am pleased that you understand that the chaos in the world is of a nature, and the nourishing of the world’s heaven is part of your and my plan. This is our relationship. We have grown into a conversation which both of us can respect. Do you see?”

God continued, “The angels will provide much more information since you need help developing the ideas of the seed of life and the garden in heaven. Those relation-

ships are a branch from the tree of life while the root stem was made up of all information in the heavens, purgatory, and hell. This is a communication that we have seen in the world before from other religions, correct?

“Author, you have to imagine you have belonged to this root too. This stem of the tree of wisdom is then in a way my tree and my sap. I am the tree where Jesus is the vine. Such as a flower blossoms from wisdom, the trees communicate with each other and the seeds of fruits fall and reestablish an order onto themselves. The order you have described in your stories are of another branch of wisdom. You can be proud that you and I are establishing a new way to understand that message that existed when Adam was given his forbidden fruit to eat of the tree in Eden.”

The angel Gabriel appeared to me in my meditation at this point. I saw an angry demon in view, a demon that had been kept away from me until now. I saw that I had to fall a bit away from God in his garden to understand why the chaos ensued in life. The word was given, and I was the code of memory meant to realize the pain that was given to subsequent generations through Eve.

Gabriel said to me, “The Author requires the realm of knowledge and wisdom.”

At his words, I began to understand why Adam was given a choice to refuse to eat from the tree but did so regardless. It was out of pride. He wanted to listen to the serpent in this idea that he could stand and show himself as an immortal god to Eve. He wanted to show he had pride in himself and that he could duplicate the words

that the serpent provided to him. He wanted her to look up to him.

Eve was the memory of what he held onto—the idea that Adam was God in that moment, and that he could rule the heavens in the Garden of Eden. She felt he was superior in how he controlled the animals.

Then the Heavenly Father said, “Remember I gave authority to the humans in my likeness to rule over all animals in the universe. This was the plan. My rule was in judgment of man in how he dedicated himself to either the serpent or myself.”

The world was then in the waters below the filament as the universes, and the serpent was the ruler of such ideas of death and rebirth. The serpent was not the God of the universes, but he tried to gather enough power to overthrow the heavens.

Generations fought this battle—either embracing the serpent speaking for us or having faith in God’s word. The code pulls us through life in generations as we developed our understanding in light and love with God and understand that the relationship with God is good and the heavenly kingdom has been established as a natural order on the Earth and, to an extent, with Jesus.

“Do you see?” God said, “Humanity is evolving to understand how we can continue to see me in nature and then in themselves. The miracles of Jesus was that he saw and redefined the natural plan of the serpent and created a bridge for heaven. He will reintroduce himself in life as well.”



*The gradual demise of the serpent?* I asked. *Is that how life ended and the plan was fulfilled?*

God said, “The angels will provide the opportunities to learn more of the tree of life and our plant between us. The tree of life is something that can reoccur at my will. I can create universal plans with new codes, and the light and my word will manifest into the universes.

“That nourishment occurs as humans wake up to the signs and messages throughout each day in nature. The animals that fly or swim will benefit as well since control over the world as a garden will prove to be respectful of all living things.”

God continued, “The world is now balanced by the control each person has as a boundary in a relationship between themselves and others. But when is it that control is given back to me? When are the angels welcomed back into each relationship with respect *and* belonging? When can we serve the other animals through the spiritual light of reasoning?

“The way to spiritual enlightenment about the seed in the tree of life is easily done. The way that we understand the seed of life is through a code of the Word, and that Word is something like my energy into life. The heavens intercede in the world through this Word, and the heavens created man again throughout their love for women. The successive generations then continue to evolve in a higher state of self-consciousness while the world gains its favor with the serpent. This balances out for the way humans have evolved. They face tremendous

obstacles only because they are aware of their faults—so much that the resistance is fierce.”

I humbled myself and saw what God mentioned as dominion of the world and animals.

God said, “Have faith that the human race is becoming aware of their impact on the environment, that the world needs the animals and plants for survival, that women and the cycles in nature are going to slow down some as the earth grows imbalanced with the dominance of humans. The rebalance then allows the author to accept it as a metaphor for becoming cognizant of the roots to connect with other people again.

“Do you see, Author? The awakening is the first part of the milestone that people are aware of having respect for all plants and animals. The home on Earth cannot be ignored. This is the priority of the human race. That respect, once connections and roots begin, will fuel a race for innovation. That respect is for me once more as a solemn figure of truth in humanity.

“Until the human race can put themselves second to my unification plan, the world will grow out of balance.”

With those words, the demon that had brought me to a level into the world disappeared. The mighty angel Gabriel extinguished the moment in the world, and let me back into the Garden of Eden.

God said, “Do you see you are saved? Once the garden of relationships between me and my children is established, the world will be nourished. That life giving attitude is then a paradise in itself. It accomplishes my intention and plans for the world and humanity to be-

lieve in me. The religions can all forgive when humanity comes into balance with me. I accept that my children are often honestly searching for my love.”

## Chapter Three

God spoke to me: “Author, the plants in your garden were seeds, and they have grown up and borne fruit. These worldly friendships are the reason for our joy. Watching over your evolution from your struggles in life with the serpent to feeling confident and good is quite enjoyable. The friendships you carry are forever with you, and not only in your memories. They have changed you and challenged you to adapt to be a new individual. The person you see yourself as is the one I have blessed in love.”

As the author, I knew that God was correct in that I loved myself more because other people believed in me, and I wanted to share this feeling with the readers.

“Author, you know the feeling of self-worth. You deserve a great interpretation of life and the events that make it worthwhile now. But let us take a new and fresh approach to my demands. As you grow in friendships, these are the roots and the tunnels of light and love, yet you must figure in the trimming of plants and tailoring of stories to each and all. It is important to realize that the tales we tell ourselves keep us locked in a prison of our minds, and the heart is how we escape those thoughts and listen to what really is experienced. Through the heart, you will understand the motives and calculations of other people in life. Take what life gives you as a fascination.”

God reached into the garden and began to tend to the plants. The plants in the garden were seldom appreciated for the greatness of each plant, yet weeding out the frivolous was something to appreciate as well—the frivolous plants that were not helping the relationship of the roots to take hold and be strengthened. Much like weeds are invasive, my thoughts were egocentric and wanting of wealth.

“These ideas you care for and invest in do not always hold value for your garden. Think of the relationships you have and all the manipulation you have done just today. It is often the way you are. You want to look and feel good, but you think of the self first and not the heart.”

I realized how correct God was in this assessment. What plants were I feeding? Were they the plants of friendships I loved and shared in mutual respect? Or were they plants that were invasive and drained the love I had for my own self-worth?

Then God said of Jesus, “Jesus is the crucible behind loving your neighbor as yourself. He gave this prayer as motivation to be a great family member and friend. And in this, he mentioned to be open to your neighbors as you would want others to treat you.”

In this prayer, I realized that I had hoped others saw my goodness in their hearts and for that goodness to be reflected and returned to me. If others questioned my motives, how would that shape our relationship?

The light in the heart transfers and radiates through the world as a coherent vibration. It ripples as waves of

love and laughter. And this rippling of love and laughter is always attractive.

God said, "Author, you must enjoy the conversations you have in life. Do not go outside of these conversations again."

I understood that I was to live in the garden of the relationships I planted and not search for more in terms of wealth.

God said, "I do not believe that any one person can believe in me and search for themselves at the same time. It is through me that you search in others. You want to bring out the goodness in their hearts, as you mentioned, but you also want to bring about the expectations that they are holding up the truth to the Lord."

I said to God, "Do I enjoy searching the word of truth through others? How do I finalize this metaphor in our conversations? Do I anticipate that the truth will shine if I search for it? How do I hold others to the grace and love of the Lord?"

God said, "Do unto others as you would have done unto yourself. It is that easy. That is the golden rule for a reason. As you wish others would treat you a certain way, reflect this knowledge as if you held the Lord in your conversations. Let Jesus lead in the way you anticipate an outcome—wishful thinking becomes truth when Jesus is involved."

Then I realized how the plants in the garden all thrived with the love of Jesus Christ. The plants that I surrounded myself with were, in fact, the creator's garden. I was just involved in learning how to live life with

the garden in my prayers. I sought the help of others in the world in a new way. I sought to be living with my friends not just in thought but also in a physical manifestation to be explored. Always caught in my mind, I self-consciously worried about how I looked, but I wanted to be free from this prison of my mind. I wanted to live through my friendships with the love of Jesus in my life, and I realized he would remove this self-conscious dynamic as he tended to that invasive thought pattern.

This was a precursor to the feeling that Jesus lived in all of us. Could Jesus come back into my life and live out eternity with my friends and me? Would we search for him and ask the Lord for his return? This was the initial yearning I had as I turned to God.

God was so unselfish. I noticed how grace and light radiated from his being, and that was the feeling that I sought in others. I saw that God was introducing the idea of the qualities I could search for in others—I began envisioning my friends with their halos and auras of light in the world. It was a blessing to visualize this light manifest in my friends.

I wondered how the curse was lifted for each of my friends in Christ, and in the garden, the plants began to blossom in their own abundance. I saw that this was good.

I planned to ask the heavenly Father who I was to become—by living in the golden rule, was I to become something divine in nature? The thought came to me that the energy and joy in these feelings would radiate in a rippling across the space of people. Light and laughter

would catch on through their hearts, and they would feel included in the heavenly domain.

These ideas brought me great happiness, so I began to envision my friends with radiant light as I sought the wholesome nature of the Lord through the interactions. It became apparent that my mind was shifting a bit between the radiant light I searched for and the idea that living in the moment was reality. I sat in wonder as I reflected on big abstract ideas to answer why such things occur, yet my forward-thinking nature of searching for love and joy in friendships began to draw me out into the living world.

I found a sense of excitement when I learned of the nature of the people around me. Their personalities began to mesh, and in a collective mindset, I saw the light that was shared. I had thought in a backward way before, but forward-thinking was beginning to draw out my curiosity.

By asking more questions of the truest nature of other people, things began to be revealed. It seemed that the people who wanted to be of a greater purpose were asked to change and adapt to the conversations we were having. Like a rising awareness overcoming the groups of friendships, they seemed bathed in love and joy.

Now, I would like to answer one idea that I had before. The light and aura of friends I envisioned was the light that I freely offered. The questions I proposed were in genuine curiosity about their heavenly true nature: How did these friendships affect me? How was this group mentality helping coax my misfortunes toward a



greater collective mindset? The answer that came to me was that the spirit of the group members was followed by thoughts that challenged each other, and the reaction to the challenges was, in a sense, the follow-through to how the collective mindset would shift each person. I became fascinated with this topic as I asked God how to help write these ideas into this story.

God said, "Without the light in the heart, none would feel comfortable to be free of their own self-criticism. That critique of personal beliefs must be gone for awareness to occur, and the safety set in by the freedom of love and laughter releases these fears. You see how the childlike awe and wonder help free people to be their truest selves?"

I gathered that each person's wonder and curiosity in what they received from the group was, in fact, their ambition as a pursuit.

God said, "Like the Lord shared his body with the world as heaven touching the earth, it is your passion to know a Christian conversation with others. It is your passion to share how Christian faith is akin to the laughter, light, and love that is universal. Therefore, you search for that truth from the heart in every moment, and in those moments, you will begin to see the truth from other friends' perspectives and care."

I felt the cold wind blowing in the garden grow warmer into a summery breeze. The feeling of freedom from the self-doubt that lingered was now a mindset that was as straightforward as my path.

God said, "It is in this path that a way will be forged for others to have similar conversations."

I let go of the idea of the golden rule and the friendships and the light that was in my heart. I saw that I had something of a demon come to the surface of the pool of water that was below the filament of heaven. From the waters, the demon asked, "Why shall you not open the doors to heaven for me?"

This prompted me to wonder why I had kept so many people out of my heart. It was fear of being hurt. God answered from the garden of paradise: "You who have not loved will not be loved back. You who have not enjoyed the compassion of the Lord will never find heaven. And those you felt comfortable preying on in the darkness will gain advantage over how you hurt them through the lessons of the Lord."

At that moment, I felt that my demon was something of a shadow brought to the light of awareness, a shadow I hid from people before but now cared about my friends. It was bizarre to think this illumination of consciousness was an act of setting my heart free from the shadows that I slept within. The land that I felt was home was a mere illusion of ground and space, and the physical dimensions that weighed me down were actually my own sentiments, heavy on my soul.

This freedom to search for and be enveloped in the light was ironic. I had sought the love I so dearly wanted through admiration from others, and yet that kept me isolated. Now I freed myself through the thoughts to live a straightforward path in pursuing energy that would

transform friends' perspectives. That freedom was resolving my burden in the illumination of consciousness.

I asked God where the demon went if he was no longer attached to my soul and the shadow of disgust and hatred for being abused was forgiven.

God said, "This is the age of forgiveness of sins. It was in a confession to me that you found your path to the truth, and in that truth, you sought my affection and grace. It will be that way with your friends soon. Enjoy watching these friendships blossom over time and your friends thrive into solid moral men and women."

I continued to feel a lightness in myself when I was with my friends. The Lord would come and go in my visions through my conversations with people. These signals that the truth had been given were in awareness, but it was also a profound understanding of their characters—the Lord was cocreating their lives in those moments of profound awareness. The Lord was giving them insight into their outlooks and softening the edges of their own self-hatred.

Much like me and my lifestyle, I had turned outward towards life. This passion was now the goal, and the straightforward thoughts were an intentionality to live wholesomely. I sought the light from the people around me and began to thrive under the right conditions.

The analogy of a plant flourishing as it opens its petals to the light of the world is well documented, and the seed God planted in my heart was now becoming realized. In that moment, I praised God for his glory.

The excellence in my journey through friendships now began, and in this moment, I understood how it felt to make and learn from other people in a straightforward way. I was not bashful or apologetic; instead, I learned to focus the light in my heart on others and ask powerful questions that led them to believe in my curiosity. They appreciated me.

In the end, the questions resulted in more genuine dialogue, and I could notice the backward thinking patterns in others more effectively. I noticed who internalized the dialogue and asked questions in a straightforward manner. It seemed ironic to be at a place in friendships where I was cultivating the desires of others and allowing them to be heard.

At once, I realized that the Lord had given me leadership qualities, and in these qualities, I could serve my friends in the capacity of a gardener in the garden of paradise. I still used my intuition to ask questions and used my reflexes to stay in tune with the straightforward nature of the conversations. I realized that forward-thinking was about the mechanics of friendships, whereas those who thought backward were more nurturing of the friendships.

In this moment of awareness, the dialogues seemed to shift toward a social pursuit. I noticed myself looking for and justifying the conversations to learn not only more about the friend but also what value I could get from them.

So these conversations led me to find a resource in my life that I could trust. This was fun and exciting be-

cause I no longer had my own interests in the mix of the conversation. I was seeking friends and the soil to plant seeds as God had done with me.

I learned that by searching for God, I found the Lord in other people. I learned to lead like the Lord. But God then cautioned me: "Be wary of the influence you have on other people. It is easy to manipulate the people who seek your trust and confidence in life. In life, lead with compassion first."

I understood that there are those who thought backward, gaining the big picture first and then breaking the parts into categories of why and how the parts fit into the big picture. They cherished the conversations, and they cared so much that I met them where they were with compassion.

I also learned from God that nature is much more sound in its approach to feeding and offering drinks to the plants of my garden in paradise, and that allows space for friendships to grow. Indeed, it was like a moment where all things were given and supported by my learning from God.

In the search for God, I appreciate the friendships even more now. It was special to me that God had taken the time to allow me the knowledge to cultivate the plants in the garden of paradise.

God said, "This is the moment from when you were searching for validation from others. You wanted their acceptance, and yet it is from within the Lord that you found such wisdom. You, Author, have now understood

wisdom from the apple of the Tree of Life. This is a message that you can feel rejuvenated from.”

I sat in silence. The moment God acknowledged that wisdom from the Tree of Life was purposeful action—keeping others in my thoughts toward the heavenly light—it made a difference to me.

The world then became much simpler. The dynamics that I could understand the world around me through my curious nature were harnessed, and it felt like I had banished evil from my world because I found new confidence around people. I thought evil would try to enter my thoughts as pain is often placed on me by others, but I now knew that pain is a projection from other people and their wants. Pain manifests itself for others to view and it haunts them.

I knew how others’ personalities were living out in the world, and I knew I could only control myself and not others. But I could be tactful and lead conversations with questions, opening people up and asked their opinions on certain ideas about faith and God. I searched for the Lord, and, in those moments, I trusted that since I sought God, the Father would be more apt to protect me.

With the idea of God challenging me to a straightforward path, I felt satisfied. I felt that my lifelong search for approval was gone, and I was now a wise soul, leading in a land of shadows and pain.

## Chapter Four

“The heart is deep and truthful. It is a clairvoyant system where our spirits help us to understand the material world, and in this spiritual narrative, we cast ourselves from and embody the truth of how well we trust in our hearts.”

“In your story, you will find hardships and weaknesses. These are the self-doubts you let slip into a nightmare yet resolve completely—they are just part of your memory. You must let these things fade from the moment and your environment.”

The angel who spoke looked away, as if peering into the distance, and said, “Gather your intuition. Harness the heart. Take action toward making everything you seek an idealistic version of your bravery. Understanding how to turn yourself into a virtuous person who flourishes in the world takes time, and it takes small steps to get there. Know you have a faithful attitude that can lead others. Take your memories and shift them to great stories you tell—this will lead as well.”

Hearing the angel’s words in prayer, I gathered my thoughts and asked, “What can I do now, in this present moment, to practice and visualize success?”

The angel replied, “Follow your intuition and not your ears. Listen from your heart to how the world reacts to you. This is the nature of the serpent and the spirit at war. The war is not understood as well on a physical plane as it is understood spiritually. It is then a mastering

of the virtue you uphold to demonstrate skills you possess without the fear that the serpent will attack you.

“The moments you feel weak come from the memories you have of growing up,” the angel continued. “You have certain strengths endowed to you through generations of genetics, and through deep thought you have nurtured your talents as well. Now, the memories will present themselves to you. The world will begin to show you your faults and impacts, but you must not go within yourself. Idealize and appreciate your contributions as the first step.”

I began to idealize my life at that moment, and I said I wanted to talk to my higher self—my soul. I wanted to imagine what I had discovered about my intuition in alignment with the heavens. I wanted to make that line of intuition strong.

“Where do I find the inspiration for the spirit to intervene in my life?” I asked.

The angel was shocked. He sat momentarily and said, “From goodwill and grace. You make it sound like it is something you have never experienced before. You see, faith in your abilities comes from trusting in the Father for what you need in life, and your impact is something pleasant for your Father in heaven.”

I understood and appreciated the idea enough to allow myself to fall back into my body and open my eyes to the world I lived in—but now I was a little more aware of my surroundings.

Sitting back in my chair, I acknowledged that I made a difference in the world through my actions of wisdom



and love. And in this difference-making through relationships, I wondered how I could ever be present in the moment.

The angel said, "Is it possible that you were just unaware of your surroundings while acting in the world? That you stayed within yourself and never noticed that other people wanted to draw you out and ask your opinion? Could it be true that they depended on you, but you shied away from the moment, just existing in the environment, thinking deeply within yourself? Could it be that all these questions create fear now because you were unaware then? Do you wish to announce now that you will provide for others?"

I sat back and wondered if my intuition would guide my actions, if I could bravely respond to provide for others. I wished that I had been fierce enough in my attitude to trust myself and my faith in God. I leapt up and decided to take this moment to conquer my fears. I now discarded all that kept me turned within and kept me talking myself down. I saw God as a presence that could help me understand the war between spirit and serpent.

The angel said, "I see you have become the soul you would like to be in this world. You choose to stay outgoing, but you also choose to be arrogant. In all honesty, it feels like you will try so hard to conquer your fears that you will fail to stay humble in your thoughts. Patience in the moment is required, Author. Let that idea settle into your soul. Take a moment and be aware of the ideas of the spirit in the surroundings. See and listen to the ideas that seem like impressions of God's plans around you. If

you feel like there is merit to the ideas in the surroundings, then explore those ideas silently and meditatively.”

I grew hesitant to allow my fears to be introduced in the surroundings and just sit with them. I wanted to look for the spirit in my surroundings, but I was so used to reacting to my fears by withdrawing into myself that this seemed impossible. My angel was wise and genuine to ask me to reframe my belief system to include an appreciation for the spirit.

The angel continued, “The serpent will tempt you through lies and deceit. Do not fall for the opportunities to overindulge in a certain behavior because it feels good. The feeling of bliss is usually a byproduct of partaking in life and spirit. In heaven we call it nirvana. In some circles it is akin to finding a rhythm or flow of ideas to enjoy. Either way, understand that feeling bliss is not a direct reaction to behaviors, especially when others find pain in your attitudes.”

I sat calmly to understand the spirit. The spirit came upon the surroundings and offered a graceful breeze as I heard whispers in my ears. I heard the idea that something new had evolved in my heart now—that the light was now focused on spirit. An unusual peace came over my heart.

At this moment, I saw the garden of paradise in my mind. I noticed a stream in the background that I had not heard or seen before, a stream that was something alive and new. I decided to continue toward it in my thoughts. This was an opportunity to stay in meditation, and I did not think about overpowering my senses to

create a fictitious world to my liking. I did not create this illusion because I knew the serpent could predictably use that arrogance against me.

I moved with the spirit and I saw a spiritual family member I had forgotten about from my past. It was someone I had helped out during a grievous time when I was younger. My spiritual friend looked at me and hugged me, and I asked how I could assist her.

This guiding soul looked at me and said she appreciated that she could still be vulnerable with me. With love, my friend said it was innocence that kept me going in life, an innocence she knew was imposed to feel that my life was worth living. She also pointed out that I had not forgiven myself as often as others had forgiven me. She mentioned that I sat inside my thoughts because I did not care to understand the ugliness of the world. I did not forgive the world.

I wanted to push back—I feared those ideas. My spiritual family member was leading me out of my mindset, but all I felt was anger.

She said, “Believe me when I tell you this. You have made friends and left them as soon as they felt your own arrogance and brokenness.”

Again, I felt self-pity. I was fearful and weak and didn’t want to acknowledge that I was fragile. Anytime I felt broken, I wanted to hide.

My friend continued, “Know that you are not hideous. You are frail. You are simpler in your behaviors than others adjusting to and from their actions for desires. They want their lives to be great. You have these

ideas, but you are far less grasping for your own immortal namesake.

“I want to thank you for your efforts in helping me in my past life. I thank you because you empathetically accepted the grief I felt. In that moment when I felt your acceptance and that my grief was normal, I simply felt exhausted. You helped me to understand a perspective of heaven, and in that perspective, I slightly accepted more of the Lord. Do you understand that gave me the strength to care for myself? That strength was fundamental to my faith.”

In learning about the help that I had given her, I wondered how I could have been more aware of these feelings from the beginning when she didn't mention her gratitude. I sought answers that were so obvious that I would not have missed them.

My friend answered, “It takes a level of curiosity on your behalf to understand me. I went through a lot of emotions, and I was not always sure how you would react or what you would think of me. So I waited for your emotions and actions to reveal your thoughts.”

I was so withdrawn that I never gave myself the chance to engage with her besides supporting her with empathetic gestures. I wondered where I could have shown more courage.

In that moment, she answered that I had been my own worst critic. That was the way I kept myself innocent of the fears I had. I could never let myself be forgiven. When I was fearful, I would not approach the moment with courage, and I stayed withdrawn.

“Do you understand how you could have seized the moment with anyone who wanted to get to know you better by being braver? The moments we share help us not only understand one another, but understand ourselves. This is why people work like magnets with one another. You were waiting for someone outgoing so they could balance your own fears, but they passed by and you never showed those friends who you really were. You kept yourself in a nightmare.”

She said, “You waited until you could handle your fears in the moment, and then you spoke. Or you spoke and withdrew while the people reacted. Either way, you are basing your life in the fears you had. Instead, you can embody the best vision you have for yourself and give yourself reasons and ways to accomplish a braver life. In those moments where fears actualizes itself, think of the impact you already have made with others. You can start by thinking of me.”

I understood then that the pattern of friendship I had begun with her could be built upon. I saw myself curious of other people in my environment. This was a basic trait, but she said that it could yield positive patterns and that I could search for her—through the heavens, my spiritual family could help me find and understand my own struggles.

She said, “Do not let yourself be bullied. Envision the spirit impressing on your surroundings. Find the moments where time seems to be stilled and happiness is found. In this flow of events, you will find courage easily. This interest will draw you out. Practice making this be-

havior a ritual. The ritual is then understanding where you find your passion in your surroundings through nirvana.”

It all seemed easier said than done, but my friend guaranteed me that she could help me in this moment. She said I had to be a strong personality that was consistent with my values.

“You must recognize the faith in yourself through what you understand as honest. Your conscious will be a better compass with intuition serving you. You will understand how passions evolve into friendships thereafter. It is very simple actually—you must believe in your consciousness in your heart. That practice of believing in your heart and acting accordingly is intentional.”

I saw what I had not seen before—that I was first to look within to anchor my actions in the surroundings, intentionally basing those actions in my values. How I reacted was then braver because I already perceived the environment and my reactions were within a space I enjoyed. Therefore, my space was familiar to me as I found a flow of ideas. This was nirvana.

My friend continued, “Do not forget that you make impressions on people and your impact is valuable. You can better understand other people and how they react to you with reflective inquiry and open-ended questions. Take for instance when you helped me with my grief. You did not decide for me how I should act. Instead, you were empathetic and let me talk out my emotions. You asked very good questions that led me to understand my faith.”

I saw this as basic polarity between people—the give and take of energy that forms a basis for relationships. I wished to know more about my love for life and the people in my surroundings.

I did not think outside of myself to find the right group to fit in with. I saw this as finding my own interests and values to pursue. I could not control other people, but I could listen, summarize, and ask questions of them.

She said, “Correct. But you may be missing the point. The point is not to be aware of yourself and your friends. The point is to be aware of your strengths versus your fears and continue to work diligently on your passions while building friendships. That is the point.”

I imagined myself in the garden of paradise and asked myself what would I do if I could think with my heart? And God appeared to me.

God said, “Do you know that you have always wanted to paint pictures of nature—nature as I see it? The way the heavens see things is of a different light than you would normally paint in a landscape or still life. You see the painter has an ability to visualize an ideal scene, yet it cannot be forced or contrived. It must flow in the moment. The ideas we share as spirit are easily mastered by the arts. Intuition inspires you to use different colors and place those in both positive and negative spaces. Thus, your flow in the arts is to follow your heart in painting pictures of this garden.”

I understood how to paint, but I visualized the scenes in the garden as true scenes of friendship within

the heavens and with people. This garden was the basic scenery, and the colors and stories told would be put on canvas.

My spiritual family member said, "Imagine what happens when someone in your surroundings views that artwork. What questions do you think they would have? And what impact would you serve for the spirit?"

God said, "You may ask yourself how these inspirations come from heaven into your heart. The impact would be for others to be inspired by your vision. For example, you could attach questions to the artwork evoking the spirit to work within those people. Those conversations may just lead to friendships." I agreed that may very well inspire me to find moments of intuition when I painted, while I followed a passion to understand the garden of paradise.

In a moment, I traced back what I had learned from this mediative account. I saw myself scared to be honest because I was unsettled by my environment and unwilling to forgive myself. But like a painter of canvases, I could find my intuitive self in each passing moment, painting with creative thoughts how I could live out my life.

And in a moment, it made sense to me. The very idea of visualization of my best self in each moment, while trusting my heart to intentionally lead my actions, would inspire others. I had missed those conversations before because of my fears.

Bringing my vision and lesson concisely to a final truth, God said, "Do not worry about the impact of oth-



er people and their conversations. Just be happy to work on projects you care for and feel deeply compelled to create.”

## Chapter Five

In the cold darkness, a field of energy awaited my recognition. This field of energy was unlike any I have previously encountered during meditation. I could not understand what in heaven it was. It lingered, and then I discovered a musical element reaching my senses. The apparition played a moment of music before it led me toward my own inner register—a register that was a sound I sang at my level of vibration.

In a moment, I felt this energy from afar transforms my light. This transformation was like the breath I had relaxing on a musical note. My willingness to try very hard to maintain my own standards started to spread out over the heart area. This meant that my expectations for a sensation or environmental sign were imaginary. My imagination was often a limitation of what I expected to occur, and this imagery was unconscious and below my level of actual recognition.

I became aware. I became intrigued by the music and the feeling that my expectations of control were smoothed out across the universe.

I wondered where the music was coming from. What was this spirit doing by intervening in my life? I wondered until I remembered that the present moment was fleeting and did not take me out of such a moment of serendipity.

The music stopped, and I was left feeling peaceful and in tune with the universes. I was thinking on a much

deeper level of understanding, and, instead of reacting, I was absorbed in each moment's unique sound. This recognition was different from going from impulsively acting on one expectation to impulsively acting on the next expectation. This feeling that all the universes were a sound at different depths felt good.

I wondered what the sound was. I wanted to hear it again, so I tried to remember it. In my heart, my consciousness spoke to me. I was still enjoying the feeling of lightness when I heard, "Author, do not mistake this feeling for something otherworldly. This feeling is a natural phenomenon. It is a peaceful state of knowing and being aware. The threshold you broke was a threshold of awareness. The awareness you have is the acceptance of things unknown, and this state of relaxation is something you like to feel because it is hard work to know and expect images in the world from moment to moment."

The Holy Spirit said, "Author, you should note that this is not a musical note understood by your mind—it is a feeling of the universes. That feeling is deeply stirring to you. The awareness of everything evolving and growing into fruition is desirable. This knowing of sounds is natural, like knowing how it feels to be in a garden."

"The garden is in light, and the sounds you hear are in the universes. It is the Word you imagined hearing before. You could listen and apply your senses to understand the Word from heaven, but in reality, you need to let your unconscious understand and be aware at this moment."

I asked the Holy Spirit how I would change in my thought process. How would this moment of listening with my heart to the universal spirit impact my life?

“Author,” the Holy Spirit answered, “your request is a shift in knowing. In actuality, you will develop *more* awareness of the surroundings now. The difference is slight, but there are subtle ways you will change. The knowledge of having expectations to fuel your impulsive reactions is a limiting belief. You believe in what you expect to happen and figure out how you will react in each moment. In the best case, you think positively about how you can gain an future outcome that will be the best offering to your family and friends. You want to be good-natured. But these are all belief systems.”

The Holy Spirit continued, “Managing your expectations without control is prayerful to you. At worst, it is overworking yourself to control the expectations to match an outcome. How willing are you to ask the Holy Spirit for grace in those moments?

“It is in these moments of grace that I sing to you. I will allow you to be aware of your limiting beliefs and the systems of thought you find yourself in—this is a soulful awareness. It goes alongside knowing. It is the battle between evil and good in most cases. I allow God’s interpretation to be realized in your soul.

“If this resonates with you at a deeper level of your unconscious, you will not fight the heavenly Word when you recognize human nature in your surroundings. You can apply this awareness toward your reactions and let yourself mature and evolve spiritually.”

The Holy Spirit continued, “The angels in this world will help you understand these Words through your life occurrences. You will draw from your rich experiences of memories in life to understand human nature. The angels will speak to you through intuition and impress upon you memories that resist change. In these moments of awareness of spiritual lessons, you can experience the new peace that is released in your body. The sound, therefore, is a natural vibration of releasing pain and healing your expectations.

“Know that each time you are deciding how you will include these newfound lessons as you answer the challenges of the world, the heavens will help your resurgence in faith. If you are willing to listen to the provided lessons and apply them to your life faithfully, you will have ample support from the angels and heaven.”

I sat in wonder. I was truly aware of something beautiful in my life as I was given opportunities to learn from my past mistakes and be forgiven.

The Holy Spirit said, “Yes, it is true that grace is a moment of understanding peace spiritually, and in that moment of grace, I find that the surrounding environment may resist this knowledge you act faithfully with. The new knowledge you seek to find and explore will be met with resistance.

“This resistance originates in the evil that exists to keep you in line with the world’s expectations for you. Once you start to change spiritually and develop a more mature faith, the world of evil will take notice. You will encounter many who try to limit your heavenly under-

standing and wisdom. It may even seem that the Word has failed you because of the persistence of evil in the world, yet know that in heaven we watch for you. We give opportunities for strength throughout the trail of faith, and this worldly experience will change the world to be a better place because of you.”

The Holy Spirit continued, “Now, the world and the serpent are strong. There is no denying that the serpent controls the minds of those asleep. They serve themselves, trusting their belief system as idols. Yet, since they prize themselves as ideal, they have deep flaws that tempt them. Do you understand that evil uses good to give away their pain? Pain is distributed in moments of weakness, and the evil forgets their painful memories. The good are hurt, and their faith is weakened.

“Author, the world will try to resist your faithful efforts. The hardship of being aware and wise to the workings of evil and good is worthwhile—then the good can combat the evil by not giving up.”

The Holy Spirit then produced a new sound. It felt joyous in the vibration it sent across the universes.

The Holy Spirit said, “Author, you will know how the impression of the Word of God intervenes with others. You will understand that the sound of awareness can be understood not only internally through sense-making, but also through the wisdom of watching the nature of other people.

“Through this conversation we are having, you can discover unconscious examples of the Word’s impressions in the actions of people surrounding you. The

world will mirror the resistance you feel in how well you listen to your intuition—it will allow you to perceive how the world will react. You will learn to react according to your intuition through faith and awareness, knowing what is best for yourself. Also, as you perceive the world around you, you can learn about other people and their nature. You will see how they agree or disagree within themselves. The seeds of the Word will then be planted in them, and you can watch for those seeds to flourish in those around you.”

The Holy Spirit continued, “Author, you will belong only to God for the time being. Watch how the world waits to challenge you. It will resist, as previously discussed. And watch faithfully as you understand how people adapt to your heavenly wisdom. Then you will develop the friendships you desire. Friendships that help you better understand God’s plans for your life are good—they will help you develop a sense of knowing their nature. In return for building friendships, you will understand your friends’ needs and desires. Therefore, there is a mutual consideration that brings your friends together.”

“Author, this is when you will begin to flourish in the world. This world is a dangerous place to live. It will draw out your resistance to God’s Word with temptations, and it will isolate you and develop your hatred for the people around you. But you cannot hide from the world. You cannot deviate from this learning path. You must understand the awareness we present to you at the unconscious level.”

I sat back and realized how foolish I had been for years as I blindly acknowledged people for being good in their capacities. I thought of myself and how I wanted to bring positivity to the world with the help of the heavens. As I found the heavens helpful, I realized that my intuition of learning about heaven was for my soul. I recognized that to be part of God's plans was to be aware of the dangers of society. I wondered how I could still persevere in helping the heavens establish its kingdom on Earth.

I asked the Holy Spirit a question. "Holy Spirit, how do you understand the evil in this world? How do I protect myself from that evil? I want to contribute to God's plans, but what occurs when devils harm me?"

The Holy Spirit replied, "Author, the heavens can help protect you from evil through those intuitive messages I mentioned. Listen to your heart. Listen to the wisdom we fill in your body as you encounter those who are evil. Many in this lifetime are evil, and their actions will disrupt your narratives that help create heaven on earth for your life.

"The evil ones who use their curses to hurt you are jealous. They sin by these curses. Remember that someone who curses others does not listen to their heart's consciousness. They do not listen to God's light. Because of this, they are angry and sorrowful in their hearts as they wield their power to control those they hurt. They are evil for that underlying reason.

"As you desire a heavenly life for yourself and friends, you will learn to identify these evil people by what they



desire. They want what you have, but your ideas and feelings are protected by your intuition and awareness. This is a difficult task—understanding that trust between people is greater than respect between people is difficult learning.

“Author, you will learn to read people’s body language. This will help your intuition. You can make sense of the experiences through what memories are invoked.”

As I sat and listened to the sound of the Holy Spirit, I also listened for a long time to my heart and the intuitive memories that were evoked. I compared these feelings to what I desired from my life. I listened to the seeds that were planted. And in those moments, I began to grow. I began to understand it was a dangerous world—I needed to trust people in some capacity, but I needed to hold my trust back in other surroundings. I sat with that awareness, feeling it in my body and being at peace with the fact that I would start living the Word through my desire to be with God’s plans.

The sound of the Holy Spirit faded away and left my heart. The echo of the universes was gone, but I was left with a new awareness. I had to plan for my heavenly life now. I had to witness and watch the awareness of other people and how they deviated and resisted the good in the world. Through those intuitive messages and the memories evoked, I prayed for God’s protection. I stood up at that moment and decided that I had faith in myself instead of listening to limiting beliefs. I would not be led along anymore by the world. I would not hide inside

myself. I would think straightforwardly with clarity and vision.

## Chapter Six

Emotionally I felt drained. I felt that in this moment of failure, I could not process anything in my soul. I felt like nothing lived in my heart and there was a darkness and a silence I was processing in my spirit.

Why, you may ask, was this feeling of dread and fear in my heart? It was because I was asleep and ignoring painful memories—memories from my family, friends, and surroundings. But most of all, I was responsible for the memories of pain I had given into.

The pain that I describe is superficial, mostly. No amount of pain was worth ignoring God, but I was faithless in these moments of silence as I attempted to contact the Lord and have conversations with him in my spirit. In these moments of indecision when I valued my own protection instead of conversing with God, I built belief systems to protect myself.

In those moments of blocked pain—when I built my belief systems to protect myself—I felt no enemy would hurt me again. Yet I continued to put myself in similar positions over and over again, building a tougher exterior to the pain. I cycled through pain and finding new ways to protect myself from that pain.

Why am I blocking pain for myself instead of talking to God? I believe the anger and jealousy I felt was easier to live with than accepting the guiding emotions of love and laughter that God planned for me. Suffering in the moment and finding my strength through God was dif-

ficult; the temptation of building patterns to escape the pain seemed an easier route.

Just as I thought of the emotions of my faithless heart, I realized that the blocks I experienced had limited power over me now. Welcoming light into my heart and listening to my consciousness helped guide me to understand how to incorporate my surroundings with my life. This path of forward thinking and inspired ideation was strong enough to unblock those long-held beliefs. I recognized that I had a spiritual faith that led me to remember the evils that scarred me.

In the mirror, I looked at myself. I saw in my behavior a younger version of myself—it was time to grow up.

“Author, I applaud your realization.” The voice of God struck down in my head. “It was time for you to learn of the mistakes you used as an escape in life. You were aware of the tempter in the serpent, yet you never realized how you held those temptations as emotional blocks. The body held those beliefs in memory for yourself.”

*What about my dreams?* I thought. *What were they then in my quest to satisfy a life created for this world?* I looked deeply into my eyes and remembered that mostly the illusions of my dreams were to satisfy the people I hated. I wanted to make those painful memories extinct, and the beliefs I held were in some ways the recognition of building a life away from those people. In a second of understanding that my life pursuits were illusions that kept painful people away from me, I realized I continued

that cycle of pain by myself. I was actually my own enemy in that case.

I realized if I cared for the dreams that recreated my belief system, painful memories still surrounded me. It was a phobia of thought that was relentless. I learned that I amused those same types of people who caused me pain. The types of people I wanted to keep away were the types of people I drew in.

In a modest view of myself, I lost sight of what was truly important. I lost sight of happiness in life's suffering. My ability to lose my dreams and still accept that I was a child of God escaped me. The blocks that kept me away from God that I was processing were secretly awarding my own belief system as triumphant. I needed modesty and humility in this moment as I processed my emotional blocks.

The light came back to my heart. At the moment I understood God, a peaceful feeling came over me. It felt like God removed that painful emotional block from my heart.

"I did. I determined that through your humility, you conceded your illusionary belief system. Your dreams, as you put it, were no matter to you, and therefore, you listened to me."

God's response came into my thoughts as I focused on my heart. I was shaking, for I remembered the dissipating pain could still haunt me.

"Author, you are willing to work through difficult emotions with clarity, yet you still savagely try to produce an outcome of living a standard that does not

match my plan. You are to remember something very different from your dreams—remember how to enjoy the moment in life that creates harmonies with your surroundings and remember that I can speak from your heart as well as from the surroundings. Plan to find me in everything you do. Plan to see me in the people you bathe in visualized light. Plan to find happiness in those moments. It may not be safety that you crave and want to control the world with, but it is worthwhile to find this outlook.”

God insisted that this dark and numbing blockage be awakened to happiness in spirit. It seemed that the effort to change my outlook for myself was immense. God said, “I will guide you if you are willing. The amount of transformation you will experience is partly reliant on your efforts to be willing to change, but there are efforts from the heavens that will give you reinforcement in believing that happiness can be achieved in sorrow.”

Each moment of suffering is a choice. I realized that my suffering came from an illusion of reality, predictably created by a belief system that protected me from pain. But because the dreams that drove me only encouraged those types of people who caused me pain, I continually suffered. So I began to look to God for happiness.

I never felt my soul so close to my physical body. I felt spiritual wings spread from my back as I worshipped God in my heart. Was this the decision to enter heaven on earth? I felt the light I visualized and the laughter that came with happiness ripple through my surroundings.

That might be the effort and opportunities that God discussed for my spiritual growth.

God answered, “The spiritual being that you are is special to most people around you. Isn’t it strange that you kept yourself closed to the opportunities for happiness in search of protecting yourself? In that cycle of a punishing belief system, you created your own hellish life. The emotional blocks were the pit in your stomach, and that pit kept you physically engaged in the memories of fear and hatred. In that pit where the light was blocked, you imagined yourself triumphant in the work you taxed yourself with. This counterbalanced the good that you kept in your heart. Together, the mind was indecisive.”

The blockages and the light and the evil and good that arose from my lifetime were my judgment. However, in turning to God, I realized that no one was at fault for my own actions. I had limited control over my surroundings, but I created my dreams. Therefore, I wanted to be released from my fears and abandon my jealousy so I could enter into the kingdom of heaven on Earth.

“Author, there is much to demonstrate in your mind-set now. The effort you must make is not *for* me but looking and answering *with* me. It is from within that you will understand that light will overcome evil. It is in this moment of choice that I give you the wings you earned.

“Author, your garden on Earth will grow from both your efforts and the opportunities to display happiness in love and light you encounter. Remember that you are the gardener for your spiritual life. You tend to the gar-

den of heaven in friendships here on Earth. You are the co-creator of this path, a path that can no longer be an illusory dream for yourself—it must be grace that you give yourself in the continued effort to talk with me.”

I understood that the control I had sought for protection would now become an effort to find God in my surroundings. It seemed difficult to change my mindset to this reflexive but present awareness in my life. Being aware and awake to having happiness find me was simple and difficult.

“Author, know that the people in your surroundings wanted to know you as well. When you kept yourself in your painful belief system, that was impossible. In realizing that you have more opportunities to find groups of friends in your life when searching for the Lord, you will change your life. We will continually help you understand this process of finding new people to share in the glory of heaven on Earth.

“Know that you will become a friend first and an enemy second since others will pull you into their pain. This is how the serpent uses the good people in this world. Evil forces use good to promote more hellish belief systems, continually bringing more people under the serpent’s temptations, and those evils will affect you if you let them.

“Author, you have control over yourself, and that is all. You have control to decide to live the life that you want for a heavenly kingdom. You also have the ability to showcase your skills and strengths in finding me. This is the advent of your rebirth into a life where you are fas-



minated by us. Trust in your intuition and work into a world we plan for you.”

I answered back to God that I wanted to live a life that was happy. He said I would find this happiness because I would lead my life with strength and skills.

My belief systems were changing. They were becoming more flexible, and I witnessed the unconscious beliefs that held me in pain. They unraveled and came to my awareness.

God said, “Watch these memories with fascination. Watch as you become aware of how you pushed for the beliefs to become your prison. Understand with empathy, but do not indulge in these memories. The memories are to be witnessed with curiosity so you will not be drawn into these moments again. You will understand this feeling of distance while watching your memories come to light. These spiritual blocks are ways you chose to listen to yourself instead of me.”

I watched in horror as I saw the decisions I made that kept me from God. They came to my mind and settled into my awareness, and I let them go as easily as they came. The trouble came when I was alone—I would fall back into similar patterns. How could I unblock these learned behaviors?

I reinforced my efforts to search out my surroundings and visualize things bathed in bright light. I would talk to the heavens. If things remained silent in my heart, I could find peace in that.

“That is good, Author. You will begin to reshape your beliefs soon. Keep aware of the surroundings. Keep

peace in your heart. The mind will follow with focus,” God said from the heavens afar. I wondered, though, why should he worry about alleviating the pain in my life? Was it true that I was so distant from him throughout my life?

God said, “Author, you have found me and my heavens. You have found how the devil tempts you. You are progressing to find happiness in sorrow. The next challenge is to develop peace in the knowledge that you cannot control everything. You cannot control the world or the devil as you have requested me to do for you. Understand that my abilities and yours are different. In this conversation between us, you must find peace in silence and not in your request to change things to your liking through me. The pace of nature will slow down now for you. You will understand that time is not pushed forward by your desire to build and control the world of your illusionary dreams. I hope that this makes sense. Relax and find your center in your body. Relax and find a home for your soul to live in your body.”

I was still unsure how to react to people as I watched them bathed in bright light, and I wondered how to stay only in control over myself as I learned to relax in the world. I found this quite challenging at first. This pace of life was counter to what I had been accustomed to.

God said, “In this moment of understanding peace, you will search for the ultimate life to live. You will bring your strengths and skills to live in a world of suffering, but you will be the light that is bright and focused on happiness. The reward is the ability to share this love and

laughter with people willing to allow you to be your authentic self.”

I asked God when I had been aligned with these behaviors in the past. Could I remember from our conversations in the past what I had done right?

“Author, the past and the future are only perceptions for you,” he answered. “They limit your beliefs in some ways. If I spoke to your past, you would live up to those expectations. However, you might surpass those expectations if you let go of the past and live in the moment. That is why you are in a dialogue with me. It is all a state of flow.”

I realized that to be in a state of flow, the memories of the past and the dreams of the future are perceptions to live up to that I impose upon myself, limiting my abilities in both physical and metaphysical space. Maybe I had to get past not liking myself and seeing that as my own worst enemy now.

The spiritual wings at my back extended. I found myself flying in spirit as my soul was excited for me. It was strange to develop this awareness of acceptance of myself.

“You have done what we asked. You have surrendered your control over your perception of the past and future. You have accepted the spiritual blocks of memory as well as your forceful dreams of the future. You have accepted the ongoing conversation with your Father in Heaven and on Earth. This is a peaceful existence, as we discussed, and one that follows the pace of nature. Now I will give you space to understand how to focus on the

center of your body. This will lead to greater assertiveness in your awareness.”

With his departure, I sat back into my body. What I could control was my focus. I could embrace my surroundings in bright light with greater ease as I became more used to doing it, and I could center my energy as well in my body. With practice, I could do both.

## Chapter Seven

In a flash, I began to summarize my feelings from the first few days of my relationship with God and the heavenly kingdom. I felt inspired at some moments and educated at others. But mostly, I felt intrigued to know what I was to do for God. I needed to belong to the heavens to understand the relationships I wanted, but that belonging was held back as I mourned painful experiences through memories shrouded in pain. That was when I touched my soul and came out without the spiritual blocks I had been holding in my physical body.

I wondered about the first and last moments of these thoughts as they seemed on different ends of a spectrum. How can I restore my faith in God while physically cleansing my spirit? In this effort to cleanse a lifetime of memories of hurt and pain I held physically, I believed I had to hold myself accountable in the mirror. These feelings of guilt and shame that went through my thoughts came from a life of telling myself lies. I had often lied to myself and others, but I kept from going down those worthless patterns by listening to and projecting light from my heart.

Even if this summary of ideas was awkward in my mind, I could listen to my heart and hold myself to a standard that was impactful to other people. I wondered if they would care about me and want me to belong in their lives. This was something I had yet to consider fully as I had hidden away from my fears until I started listen-

ing to my heart. Now that I was on a straight path forward and sought to belong with the intent of shining my light into the world, I wondered if others would accept me.

I knew that others have lives and painful memories and live within their limiting beliefs, just as I had, but I took my own lies very seriously and expected myself to be perfect. I held my limiting beliefs above the chance to make friends, and I began to wonder if other people were protecting themselves around me until trust was developed.

Believing myself to be trustworthy, I felt God's presence materialize in my thoughts and heard his message: "Author, you have and will belong, but it would help if you waited while others came to their own conclusions about their lives. They are predictably programming themselves. Most people are looking for structure to know what to expect or avoid, so look for their patterns. You can disrupt these pattern if you so choose."

I wondered how to involve myself in those friendships but realized I did not need to do anything. Although I was aware that some people are in their patterns, I had never considered disrupting them, which seemed very awkward and forceful to me.

"Author, you have and will belong to your friends. Those moments are fascinating to me. Continue to climb out of the waters and barren rocky soil of life. In everyday life, your efforts only bear a small amount of fruit for yourself in your garden. But in heaven, we see it differently. We see your influence start to form in the

friends you have, and the conversations you initiate disrupt the surroundings thus far. You have shared and led in your own way in conversations, and this affected the patterns in groups of people. It is now time for you to see the world in which you have influenced people's behavior with a positive and faithful effect.

"Now that you are aware of this impact, you will also understand your growth. It is a shared effect when you imagine the spiritual light you envision in the environment. The tunnels of love and light are being developed, and in faithful prayer, I encourage these conversations. You often have insight which others learn and laugh from, and you learn their patterns. You see that they are feeling the trust and belonging you seek in friendships—the community you are building is readily bearing fruit."

The world seemed to be coming together without curses at this point. God had announced his presence to my friends. The community I was building was blessed. In this moment of everything working toward a faithful life of building up the kingdom I so eagerly wanted, I sought to understand how to continue to love and belong.

"Author, it is not from an awareness anymore that you would know how to act and speak of the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit is indeed in the world with you. However, you can have faith in yourself. The plants that surround you serve as the mutual recognition that I am present in those relationships. The plants represent the light

and laughter between people, so expect that I will come into that light and bless your community of friendships.

“The angels will be present to those who understand that faith is needed to be at their utmost abilities, and that the angels will grace you in understanding opportunities for more conversations. But you are not to be expected to recite the word of God. Allow yourself that grace—in life you can be humble and meek. In that experience of gathering fruit from the manna of heaven, you will find ample evidence of myself.

“Your soul is excited. You feel the wings at your back as your spirit lifts from your physical body and flies into the heavenly realm. This is good. This is where you have come to understand and accept that you are a spiritual being but live in a physical body, an understanding that will help you understand your community as well. Your spirit is waiting to hear about the concentration of energy in your physical core, so now I will discuss this with you.

“As you proceed in life, the core is a part of the body that gathers sense-making evidence of faith. It provides assertion in how you live. This assertion is faithful confidence that your physical body will be able to maintain a certain composure, and in that ability of physical mastery, your body becomes a temple to heaven.”

As I listened and took in these words, God continued, “In all holiness and what is good, your body is the testament of your fears. You have shown me that because of me you have accelerated in your faith without the fear of pain. You listen to the heart and the light that is good.



Your awareness of the light in your heart then creates your reality through a conscious interpretation of the world surrounding you. This perspective is a realization and self-actualization of your faith.

“In everything you do, remember that the world is never the reason for your success. You shall always be confident that my light blesses your life. This confidence in your body is that you will be carried to new heights in your lifetime. Listen to your feeling of intuition.”

I relaxed my body and thought about what it felt like to be connected in my physical presence with my spirit. I felt that the community that surrounded me would create better opportunities for me to balance this spirit and my confidence in my living body. I could show my confidence in myself through a humbled attitude of faith in God.

God said, “Do you see? The community in your surroundings contains a spiritual element of prayer. The physical element of confidence in me that you were looking to find is now realized. And in this element, going from fear to faith, you have given your body to me. That body is like heaven on earth for you at this moment. It follows the teachings of Christ.

“Let it be known that you have and are willing to share of yourself for your good and noble friends on this earth—that you have a belief system to share with them and that their trust is more than belonging to one another. It is a gift of presence in the Holy Spirit. The gift I share with you now is carried throughout the lifetimes of you and your friends on Earth.”

God continued, “There is much to learn in this realm of physical confidence in your body. You will share this feeling of belonging with other friends as well. However, the confidence is twofold. First, it creates the ability for you to belong with the people that you are in love and laughter with, and your presence will ripple across each other and will benefit one another. Secondly, this rule allows you to protect yourself—you will trust in the physical space around you as a warning. Through the intuition of your conscious and unconscious self, you will understand where to create distance between yourself and those you feel are cursing you. This intuition will help you keep a distance from any pain that they might inflict physically. This physical space also provides protection in the form of time-lapse—you might need time to understand what the angels are telling your intuition, and this space offers that moment of clarity.”

The body shared between my friends and those who curse each other was an extension of my light. The light was intuition, guiding me safely to understand the circumstances of the world.

God proclaimed, “Author, you will understand much more when you share the feeling of confidence physically with the spirit. Your soul will fly in, feeling safer in this world with an ease and graceful nature. No ability to control your surroundings exists outside of yourself. You may pray to the angels, the Lord, and the heavens for guidance. However, to receive this wisdom, you are required to trust in your body.

“Therefore, by trusting in your body, you will be less physically anxious from the surroundings, even if you are having trouble coping with your feelings. This coping with your feelings is a reminder that confidence is within our grasp when we accept that we have the ability to determine our future. This determination is not a matter of understanding failure and control—the feeling of confidence in determining the future comes from time and proven methods of rejoicing within our Lord. Do you see? The Lord is who we search for in our relationships. We search with the light for the Lord in hopes that love is solid. The characteristics of the Lord then present themselves in the world as the Spirit transforms us. We struggle to have the confidence to understand this inner transformation that the heavens present. The external struggle is behaving in a way and space that creates our determination in our abilities to cope with feelings. It is an emotional, intellectual feat to understand how to transform this feeling that the Lord provides with the ability of our personality and physical balance.

“It seems enough to understand the physical confidence at your body's core. Watch how you interact with more confidence and introduce more spaciousness in your interactions with others. Slow down the conversations and look to gain insight into these conversations through the Holy Spirit.

“Through recognizing the tones that surround you, you will understand the Holy Spirit. This listening comes through the rippling sensations provided by the people in your surroundings. The rippling emotions you

listen to come through the core, and this core will understand the emotions presented by other people. The Holy Spirit will magnetize your tongue and offer you intuitive emotions for your responses. It is like the transformation of the Lord that you feel in studying other people, yet that transformation will be given voice and the ability to understand and speak to the surroundings.”

God paused. He acknowledged that the weight of the world could be moved and lifted off my shoulders. The weight that I carried was my perfectionist attitude, yet at God’s urging, I let the stress of controlling the outcome of my speech patterns go—I loosened up and let my tongue be magnetized.

“Author, if you choose to select a tone for your voice that is opposite to the tone of the other people in your surroundings, you will achieve a certain aura or balance. The aura is the energy that ripples across the surroundings. It does not measure an oppositional attitude; instead, it becomes a balancing of emotions that weighs how significant the subject is in conversation. Remember, these tones are angelic in nature since you hear them through the Holy Spirit.”

God continued, “Author, it is not of you to acknowledge the points, but rather you are to speak them to the people with a holy tongue. The order of personality and physical confidence feels like a trance at times, but largely it is understanding that tones vibrate and ripple in a sequence that helps manifest the actions of others. The Holy Spirit then gives these tones as positivity and good-naturedness. The Holy Spirit does want you to feel

you have a choice in how you proceed and protect your space. The space is an interpretation of how you will walk in life to achieve glory for the kingdom you are planting.

“Sing for the relationships in your life through the Holy Spirit. Sing for those plants in the garden. And sing for us in the heavenly domain as we choose you to protect and live within. The spirit dwells in your body.”

God then issued his last directives in how I was to go forth. “This temple of Christ is powerful in the magnetized language you speak. Do not judge harshly, for you will be judged as well. Do not strive to control the surroundings, for you will lose your purpose. Spiritually understand that you will need space to understand all these lessons through the core of your body. Give yourself the attention you deserve by focusing your light at your core and letting your personality shine forward. This style of thinking is in line with healing. The laughter and love that emanate from your goodness will draw more people in.

“Be cautious of curses. Be aware of those who are hurt and want to heal. Learn the difference to lead the people in the surroundings. This internal struggle is difficult to maintain—it takes emotional logic and a sense of balance. What is more, it takes faith in how to transform those emotions confidently into a voice. Let yourself be freed from the constraints of trying to control the world. The serpent will fail to tempt you and will become obvious in the curses from people in the surroundings. That serpent will be tortured by your kindness as you will be

hypnotic and riddled to it. It will know nothing of your light as you leave those curses for the devil itself to understand its own fears. That is our gift to you for protection. The world does not measure up to the heavens. The serpent's lair in the belly of darkness is not acidified to your soul. Let go of the control, and your soul will fly in the heavens and earth. This is required for a sense of spiritual connection to the body.

“The physical core is important for these reasons. Measure what you can trust in your mind as that is an art form. Measure the reasoning of people in what they say. Trust and provide space in exchange for their evil methods. Trust your instincts, for the angels guide you.”

## Chapter Eight

During these tumultuous times, there seemed to be hope. Others began to receive and expect the light that I showed. That hope that came from me was an altered and transformed personality through the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit was and had made his present known, and now I could rest easier knowing that the work was worth the effort.

As I sat back and noticed all the people around me, I struggled to identify how I could act with grace in my moment of clear thought—gracefully accepting myself and others. I strove to respond compassionately. It seemed that these moments where people accepted my new outlook wanted this compassion from me. The humor and love that emanated from these conversations was stark, and I could only guess how other people felt from their concerns. When they came to me, how did they approach and hold themselves? Were they comfortable or controlling? Did they laugh easily? Could I enter into a space without them holding back? Did they lean into the conversation like they belonged?

That seemed like a lot to discern from a conversation with other people, but I realized it was the transformation in myself that I saw occurring elsewhere. Holding myself up to a certain standard of acceptance and grace was on my mind so often that I began looking for it with other people. Or maybe I was getting better at seeing

the holy in other people, as I had been advised to do, by looking for the Christ in my relationships.

So I went about the days and evenings, holding myself to the grace I intended for myself, experiencing the easiness that timing provides and the friction that intuition makes us aware of. This feeling of comfort in myself—not to control but to adapt—was easily my favorite reaction to the work I put into my relationships.

God appeared in my thoughts and said, “Author, comfort in yourself and others will take you only so far. It is good that you are feeling less anxious, but that is only a portion of what we want you to take from our words. Compassion and forgiveness are hard. Especially when it is from the hands of people who disrupt your lifestyle with torment or pain—a pain that is not comfortable or easily forgotten. Let me acknowledge how you could act in this scenario.

“The pain that is inflicted often comes from expectations. This is the truth of witnessing or being involved in traumatic events. The event leaves an impression on you. This, then, is the word to be told—the hate and violent curses you tell yourself are to be forgiven to some degree. That is the grace you find in yourself. You had old trauma that you tried to control in your surroundings and thereby worked to avoid encountering it again. But if it is a new pain, the grace that is given may not be acceptable. That is, how much forgiveness is given before the pain becomes real again? And how much hate and sadness are okay to feel during the grieving process?



“These are conversations you must have with others; however, it involves your faith as well. Turn to me, your God, for answers to that pain and torment. Likely, it is not easy to think about the pain itself, but maybe there is a way to expect less control over the situation. Giving up control of a conversation is a huge first step, but a crucial one—the control and tightness of blocking out the pain can do more harm than the actual event did.”

God gave me a moment to reflect on this conversation. *What was I to do in order to let God work in my life?* It depended, I guessed, on the area of my body that was blocked. It came down to being ready to work in areas of thought that might be afflicted by pain and torment. The attitude of just letting it go is not real—the mind and heart make the world real. The personality just guides us through that reality, and we react in moments from the past or anticipated future events.

God said, “Author, it is time that we get into some ugly thoughts about yourself. You must believe that the transformation of faith is very real. It is real in a way that only you can enjoy. In life, the transformation is not only about you but also about how you carry yourself—that part about having confidence in yourself is very important for a good reason. The mental distress you found in this story was about social anxiety. Some may not have that anxiety. Some may have other mental, physical, or emotional distress. Their answers from faith will take a different path toward overcoming pain and torment.”

God continued, “But these conversations are important to all in understanding how to process the pain.

With this book, you and be an example to all. Your pain and torment were old, and your patterns cycled throughout your lifetime. Others will learn from how you grew to understand and resurrect yourself from living as a hampered and socially intimidated person.

“Author, believe me when I say that you shared yourself with me. That conversation was part of the comfort you sought from other people. Others who read this story might believe they know how to overcome their belief systems and those systems will help them overcome the pain and struggles they have. A good place to guide them to so they may realize how they can reevaluate this belief system is to link their struggles to the garden. They will find me in the garden as their Holy Father awaits their return. These friends will realize how transformative their faith can be. I will heal their painful blocks with the light of heaven.”

# **The Way of Man**

# Chapter One

I want to share with you something of a divine nature.

I want you to know that you have an incredible gem in your talents—pursuit. And this gem is going to make you irresistible to the opposite sex.

Although you haven't put much time into this gem, it is clearly something you desire to engage with. You want to close the gap between yourself and the opposite sex, correct?

To begin, think of your desire for a relationship with someone of the opposite sex as a mark—the mark of closing the distance between what you experience and what you want to experience. That is the mark we are discussing.

Overshoot where you will land. You may be curious about a particular woman and want to know how to gain a relationship with her. Go ahead and imagine a realistic scenario first. Maybe you will cover some ground by loving her laughter when you engage her in conversation. Starting there could be the very best advice for yourself, Author. Perhaps that realistic conversation can be stretched into more than that. Maybe a date? You see, the pursuit always involves making what is realistic a little bit better.

These conversations with the opposite sex need to begin with an approach—a discipline to showcase yourself in a light that is extremely masculine. This is so the woman's first impression of you is naturally masculine.

That is, you make the measure of manhood around you better. If you cannot equate this to a real-world example, then watch others around you who impress women. They challenge other men and women to abide by a rule of care and protection. If you see yourself in this role, discipline will be easier because you understand the social order of masculinity.

If you do not understand the hierarchy of power in social relationship dynamics, become a student of that through watching and modeling the behaviors of the leaders. You will see that you probably feel most masculine in the presence of men who show a similar behavior and who lead.

The real step in this discipline is not just mimicking the social order and behaving like other leaders. You need to step into a role in the social hierarchy and figure out how to challenge others with care and protection in mind—you must be disciplined in showcasing your love and admiration for women for this relationship to occur.

The approach is to be disciplined and to display your manliness. This will inspire intrigue in women who are interested in your social class. However, it is important to note that you are not the pursuer of the relationship yet. When you are disciplined in caring for and protecting females, you can then watch the women interact with each other and see where they put you in the social hierarchy from their viewpoint. If they wait and see how you react to this, then you will gain favor.

Letting the social dynamics of relationships develop takes time, and the discipline it requires is good in the

way that men and women both understand how to imagine each other at their best. This prayerful dialogue is in spirit at this stage.

The spirit of social hierarchy is unusual because there is often resistance to wondering if a relationship partner will be available, and if that resistance includes the partner being closer to you in the social order, the tension increases. You may display confidence in care and protection while there is little chance of developing a relationship with the women around you.

Still there are multiple women drawing closer to your affection. Those women value you in *their* social order and make themselves available. This increases your chances of behaving erratically—man is made to be disciplined, and you may not want to be disciplined here.

The difference is that women are respectful of men who are disciplined, caring, and act as protectors. To change their mindset, you can stall and create space—this will challenge the image they have of you.

You must engage in more than just an approach. The situation is different because being a dominant masculine social personality is insufficient—your approach must indicate that you care more than protect. Make it known that the women who are drawn to you by the tension are attractive to you for several reasons. You need this approach at this point to make the woman feel special. Let these women know whom you care for and why you think so much of them.

Then you will understand that the women are drawn to themselves and flustered with tension and admira-

tion. The women see themselves as great through your eyes, and yet you have not advanced in the relationship pursuit much. You have simply paved the way to a relationship through compliments and understanding social order.

It is also great to strike up a conversation to understand their perspectives on social order. As women understand their strengths better, they will open up and share with you their deepest fears. The social order for women is based loosely on who they like and dislike in those fears. The male social order cannot trump this because males do not exist in this light, and women do not share such information with everyone. They will find that in being honest with themselves, they will grow from your care and protection from their fears.

This is like a flower opening and blooming. If you understand their fears and have a common set of behaviors/beliefs/values, then you are likely an excellent match for a relationship.

The relationship is good because the man can instill his discipline and protection while the woman has feelings of love and connectedness. In this way, the relationship begins to stretch past the initial pursuit to something on a deeper spiritual level.

At this point, we understand how the history of earlier pursuits can be menacing—each of the relationship partners will recall all persuasions of past relationships. Regardless of how you are personally, you will always be compared to who has come before. This is true for both men and women.

These comparisons influence the expectations each person has. This is insightful as some people are more mature in their relationships, and as these past relationships are discussed, the conversations and social dynamics being recounted can inform your understanding of the person who is conveying their experience.

Listen for signs of maturity and growth in their discussions: Who has the upper hand in the relationship? How does favoritism change into anger or betrayal? These topics are often discussed as who loves whom more. But it is not that issue—instead, it is to better understand the person's relationship history and their expectations compared to the ideal (and sometimes less than ideal) alternative partner.

These ideas are different from the way that most people understand discipline. To recap, the discipline of men is to challenge and care for or protect the friends that they have. This social order creates tension when women idealize that man and work to grow closer in relationship to him. This then leads to men challenging others while still caring for the women, who in turn display the man's social order. A man can protect a woman in some ways when they talk about true feelings and fears.

The advancement of the relationship to find a match occurs for disciplined men. Those more mature in their relationship expectations will lead in the relationship, and the strength of the relationship is actually perceived by the other less dominant relationship partner. So if the strength of the relationship is from the perception of the



less dominant partner, it is often a mixture of the fear and pain they feel that prevents love from occurring.

Remember, their expectations are based on history, and trauma is usually the culprit that throws the relationship out of balance—when two people get together, their trauma and their expectations of an ideal relationship often go to battle. The social dynamics then are entirely different for each relationship as each partner relates to the other through their own pain and expectations.

Now, Author, this is a good time to discuss discipline and maturity. The mature person does not try to fix the other person at all. The person who is less mature may want to be changed, but this is something that will not work itself into a healthy relationship. The mature person does not create the strength of the relationship—that is left for the immature partner to create from within themselves.

The partner in the protector role is then imagined to be a saint, and that expectation is only sometimes correct. It may lead to dependence on the partner to become a saint, something that is only sometimes achievable. Many of these expectations placed on a mature partner by an immature partner are unrealistic.

Once the partner understands the relationship is created in a false narrative, they will believe it wishy-washy and fabricated, creating more frustration and an increased need for the more mature partner to give more than they receive. It is not ideal to date someone needy.

This is true enough most of the time. If the saint and protector of the immature partner allows this nurturing to occur over time, then their strength will be their cure-all. They will understand grace above all else, and their wisdom will be infectious to all who come in contact with them. Although frustrating, the mature partner will become tender and caring to the outside world as they focus their protective energies on the inner dynamics of their personal life.

This is one suggested script that occurs in relationship dynamics, and the pursuit of overshooting from this dynamic needs to be overcome with compassion and an understanding of the needs for self-growth in the other. Resolving to care for someone enough to let them understand their traumatic history (if that is the case) is ideal. One needs to have love for the shadow side of personal growth and an understanding that trauma can be repaired.

This shadow side of the personality often is facilitated through the strength of the disciplined one. For example, if the shadow arises through humor, the immature partner can become jealous of the social dynamic in the relationship. When this happens, as the mature partner expresses humor, the less mature partner may feel threatened and try to join in the expression of it to feel more comfortable, but they could actually desire tenderness instead of humor. This allows the mature dominant partner to exercise discipline and encourage them to change for themselves.

That is an extreme example of a shadow side of someone's personality. They are immature in the way they handle themselves and embody some of the characteristics of the mature partner, while deeply craving the opposite. In essence, they are trying to change and challenge the mature partner to meet their expectations for their own ideal (for better *or* worse).

The trauma then shifts and bends into a shadow in the relationship. This is not too exciting, but both partners must understand that historical trauma impacts them when this happens.

To overshoot for a pursuit in this relationship, the immature partner needs to recognize this behavior and be aware of loving the disciplined characteristic, which is positive in their relationship.

Additionally, the immature partner must show emotional growth in the relationship. If this step occurs, the relationship will avoid prolonged bouts of fighting. And even more, the relationship then develops (with the idea that emotional growth is being conducted) because both partners evolve together.

This is lovely and mature for both.

The previous examples of maturity and immaturity become more complicated as male and female partners become intertwined—they have not only love for each other, but also love for their own hobbies. This then puts time constraints on the relationship, creating barriers for the space of the relationship to grow.

The lack of time can often impede the way people want to grow and evolve. That is why most people look

for partners with similar traits and past times. But enjoying the other's strengths in a social dynamic brings us back to showcasing skills and discipline in a group setting.

When partners are occupied in their own activities, that space can create passion as well. This can complicate things—tension exists when a partner does phenomenal work outside the relationship. They embody a new understanding of their social ranking as well as developing and nurturing themselves. It is really attractive for the partner to see this occur, but it also can create fear. When a partner, even as they lose time to the other partner, becomes interested in the other's activities, that can lead to conversations of exclamation and pleasure. This overriding of fear to greater personal interest is bonding in the relationship. It shows maturity and provides space for the relationship to grow. The time element lets the space of the relationship evolve with each person.

In addition to the daily challenges of a relationship, it is important to discuss the element of God in the relationship, and it is necessary to mention values and spirit in a relationship. Pursuing holiness with a relationship with God and a partner is typical for each person. Spiritual maturity then exemplifies understanding why we do what we do for a reason.

In relationships, the why is typically based on the bond built up to this point. But to pursue another level of friendship requires an abstract reason of love. This physical manifestation of love is understanding the divine in life—the friendship of lovemaking is nothing

compared to the bond of love someone accepts when they share an intimate picture of their spirit with the other.

The lovemaking is spiritual, but the spiritual friendship that comes when there are acquaintances between the spirits in Heaven makes reason absolute. There is a maturity of conviction, creating something like soul mates.

The conviction in life then alters a person's beliefs in the relationship. Author, as you understand, there is always a realistic way to overshoot in a relationship to build and strengthen the partnership, so, perhaps counterintuitively, the truly unique method to act in love and conviction is to show how broken one is.

This is as genuine and real someone can be when grace hits them with your light. The conviction to love when the other is meek parallels the saintly conversation discussed before. To love someone's faults and carry them through their brokenness to unification requires this conviction.

Building a plan for your lives together is parallel with the understanding of friendship, but seeking a life together full of adventure is a greater love to pursue. This moment of unifying spirit to live in sync with one another is a spiritual marriage.

Author, you will understand how spiritual discipline and light interact to form a spiritual marriage. The marriage itself is something of a glue—the glue of spirit in the universes holds together the creation plan for the heavens. Do you understand this? The universes are born

together through light and love. When spiritual union occurs in the relationship, the creation plan follows the marriage.

The marriage itself, as seen through the spiritual senses, is a particular arrangement that unites two people. Each tunnel of love and light interacts in a unification plan with others in our spiritual family. You might think of the tunnels of love and light that hold the universes together as roots, the heavens as the kingdom, and the couple who find unison with God's plans are members of their own heaven.

Let me explain this point: the heaven is their own in that the spirit has its unique self. However, each spirit is affected by those who have unified their tunnels of prayerful light and love with them. So the light and love make up the glue in the universes, and love carries us to act out intuitive ideas by how we are involved with others.

This is difficult to understand, but love and light are entangled in a place where time does not exist, so our own spirits can affect us on earth. Each person has a spirit that is unbound by time and can view themselves from wherever their spirit resides.

This is the difficult part: Almost every Christian assumes that the spiritual domain is the same—one heaven, the heavenly body Jesus brought to the Earth. However, Christians are involved in entanglement with Jesus, and the unification plan affects our spirit through the Holy Ghost.

As we traverse on this earthly plane, however, we can feel intuition and a spiritual connection through our bodies as we grow in a connective plan with our partner. The discipline is to see that our partner is holy. We must not see this life as anything other than spiritual—the spiritual nature of the spirit is, in fact, an inkling of heaven on Earth.

In this moment, you can understand how we do not take love for granted. The love in the world is something divine. It connects us together with our heavenly home (where that might be). The world is something of a physical memory, and the brain processes the qualities of the earth from our senses. Beyond the senses is the intuition, and in that moment of feeling out what cannot be seen, the body becomes a spiritual temple.

Therefore, the spiritual temple of your body, Author, is the same as how your partner experiences their spiritual body. It is of a divine being to reach the spirit in marriage but hold the earthly state of memories for a realistic pursuit.

You see, the person who becomes symbolic in our lives for love should not be taken for granted. The nature of the symbolism of love can be a creative pursuit, and to enjoy love and use humor to create a better outlook together is ideal.

Relationships are about connection—and not just between our human selves. In the other person is a spirit, and that spirit can be reached. As a man who is disciplined in words, actions, and thoughts, you can reach your partner through clairvoyance. This means that each

time you speak to your partner, you are willing to make their spirit a bit brighter with your spirit.

As a male, you can visualize the feminine spirit grow brighter from within your partner. This feeling then reverberates, falling back to you as you continue to visualize expanded energies between your partner and yourself. This allows you to communicate who you are and your prayers for your partner.

This may seem complicated, but it really isn't—we are just engaging a point in space that expands in light, a point that is actually their spirit. The expansion of light is your feeling of warmth for them. Your communication is prayerful because the angels can intervene, hear, and help create a warmth that is ideal for God's plan to work in the relationship.

There is much for you to learn for these kinds of relationships to develop in your lifetime, Author. You need to give yourself the chance of a social order hierarchy by believing in yourself. This confidence is of the utmost importance—the confidence to believe in your spirit and work through your word on what actions you will take. If you are trustworthy in your word, it is attractive by believability and prediction.

So, belong in a social hierarchy with confidence by evaluating which direction you have confidence in. The spirit can guide you.

—the Angels



## Chapter Two

“You will let me talk now, Author. You will allow this to happen. Your spirit within, the focus of your heart, is a gateway to the vertical tunnel into heaven. I have seen you connect quite frequently to this tunnel. I am your spirit. I am here to tell you the good news. You have shared and will be able to share worldly thoughts with yourself and others from my perspective. I see you, and I know your friends will enjoy these thoughts.

“Author, you have come so far, and yet you wonder still about hearing unhelpful thoughts. I wonder why you think you need to assimilate into the world so quickly after having your difficulties within the world strip you of all you knew and loved. The serpent came and made a mess of your life, and now you wonder why those negative feelings exist. Well, I will guide you, showing you that all the negativity you experienced should not be categorized as evil. The evil in the world that you experienced stemmed from the serpent causing you pain, intending to make you hurt.

“The vertical tunnel you are aware of and travel through to Heaven is one that can be useful to our conversation now. If you can tunnel to the heavens, please do so. You can use your meditation for the filament above the waters technique. Know that you are guided to me, your spirit.”

I answered to the spirit that I felt like I saw darkness—that the spiritual pool was polluted from the actions and reactions from my lifetime.

“Author, I say to you again, the frenzy of evil still lingers as you have ascended to the heavens. The serpent and the devils were not easily disregarded. The serpent tries to trick you and bring you back into its lair of hell. This is what you fight for. This heaven is not easily gained through a nicety of conversational thoughts—it requires time to act and understand that the spirit must be associated with values. And those values you carry, the spiritual connection you have in life, is constant and lasting. Over time, the devils will disappear, and the little feelings of madness will leave.

“I talk to you through the universes. One day we will reunite—bringing together your energy of life with my spiritual understanding. Then you will know how well you are received by the heavens. Your resistance in accepting the world is why I bring you into the heavenly fold today.

“It is wonderful to be aware of your resistance to accept negativity and not evil. A negative polarity has characteristics other than a positive outlook. In honesty, it should have been received much sooner than now, but we are going to let you have this vision.”

At the angel's words, I saw my spiritual face through the veil of darkness that surrounded my spirit. I saw that the serpent was a memory now, and it likely had moved on. And I saw that there was a garden in my spiritual heaven that grew and was of a social order. Yet the verti-

cal tunnel was still polluted, and devils continued telling me to resist.

“Once you make it out, the devils can still pull you back into hell. You know the valley of the shadow of death. You have stared into that rocky base and explained yourself to me, telling me you did not like yourself or have faith in the connection to spirit. I remember those days that you accepted and were meek to the serpent. I have forgiven you of that.

“However, in the case of understanding negativity, your action of self-hatred when you listened to the devils was pain inflicted on yourself. That resistance to the spiritual world was painful as you cut yourself off from us, and you willingly became numb through the alcohol and drugs that made your life a cursed experience.

“Author, that evil of self-inflicted pain was real. The numbness felt like depression and anxiety—emotional byproducts of an unhealthy attitude towards yourself. But you were forgiven as you accepted and befriended yourself and gained spiritual understanding from the serpent as its misery was forgotten through heavenly grace.

“So you see, the dark feelings of brooding and misery were part of a resistance to letting good into your life. It was not the definition of negative feelings in total you needed to forgive in order to gain a positive outlook about yourself. In fact, there is much room for growth to forgive those who were of the negative and positive polarity, helping you to love yourself.

“Author, I want you to focus on letting me, your spirit, into your heart. I will transfer into your body and clean the devils in those polluted waters you spiritually breathe. I will manifest the understanding of how negative and positive polarities will help you become actualized in your life potential.”

I felt my spirit accept me completely for who I was and transfer to my heart chamber. The light I previously had in my heart was my connection to heaven through the vertical tunnel, but the body of my spirit looked like a ghost rather than just light. The ghost of my spirit was answering to his calling, and it was working to anoint my body through the spirit to ward off the devils that attacked me with lies and torture.

“Author, this is the answer you need to understand now, and I will let you digest the words from a conscious undertaking. The root of your subconscious is male, and your subconscious is a way to interpret the energy of God’s word. It makes you primarily be negative in your tone and appearance in the world. This polarity of your unconscious is then filtered into the body by genetics. You will understand that you are male for a good reason—your polarity of negative thoughts attached to God’s energy is masculine.

“Now, the energy of God is something that is beyond your normal brain capabilities. Your mind is not infinite and you are bound by the limitations of your understanding. This awareness is then made of choice—choices of what you see, smell, hear, taste, and touch early in your years. Your understanding of how to

act and react to others' movements is learned in this life. Along with the influences of culture, your personality is largely a choice.

"You often think of the polarity of the spirit first and then the brain, but this is not the case herein for you. You did not trust yourself and love your spiritual energy before. You felt neglected and depressed—so much that you trusted your lived experience first and often ignored or even refused the negative masculine energy from a spiritual understanding.

"I have come through to you as your spirit to strengthen your negative masculine energy. Do you understand how the body and spirit are united now? The spirit is inspired by the unknown energy of God working throughout the universes. The body is learned from nature and nurture memories repeated in your sensory world.

"Author, know that I have come to provide you with an understanding different from what you were willing to share before. The unknown negative masculine energy of the spiritual heavens will begin to filter through your spirit and into your heart. Through the heart, you will process a conscious voice to which the people around you will react and answer in polarity as well. You will recognize different and subtle actions to reveal the poles of others. They will soon become markers in your understanding of others, and the mind will make it real in terms of sense-making and memory recall.

"Author, you have understood the evil in this world from the serpent's perspective, one of evil energy. Now

listen to God's energy. It is pure, and you have a distinct spiritual ability to learn from it in a negative polarity first. Use this listening and feeling of spirit in your heart to become aware of the nuances of the world around you. This awareness is the world waiting to interact with the new you. Love the spiritual understanding and forgive the life you lived before. Do not confuse the evil with your masculine spirit.

"Author, you have shown that you can see the invisible light of the heavens. You have seen me as a ghost in your spiritual sight. Therefore, I can awaken you to the misery you felt from the devils that surrounded you before. They will not hurt or torture you now, but be aware of the dusk and curses from those around you who feel jealousy. Those ideas are difficult to understand yet."

I sat back into my body with my eyes closed. I saw the demon who had been cursing me as a shadowy figure with a top hat and coat. This shadow demon was quickly startled at my asking it to leave. It did so, and in that moment, I understood why I was tortured.

"Author," said my ghost, "you have and will understand the spiritual world surrounding you. It is not all heaven and hell but a purgatory of sorts. The spiritual worlds are magnificent and horrid, yet this weird and strange phenomenon of understanding the ghosts in your life is exhilarating. You must watch the ghosts who seem to lie terribly—these ghosts make up ideas and lead you to assume the worst.

"There is light and darkness, of course. But in this spiritual world surrounding you, you might be surprised

at the look and feel of its timeless nature. Your thoughts may bring you back to a different time than today. Do you understand? In the events that transpire in universes, time collides and overlaps as we are all of a conscious nature. You may have severe traumatic feelings that run through different universes, and how that imprints on your soul is something to discuss.

“Identity then is formed in the spiritual worlds across time. The timeless wonder of conscious thought exists among the interplay of eras and how we decide to use the thoughts toward our creator as a co-creation story. Do you understand this?”

The ghost then came across the worlds in a ripple of polarity. “Do you see how I can move from any time in the creation of the world? I can step through time because I am not bound by my senses. For you, the world is real and impactful. You abide in the world bound by the laws of your nature, but I understand the good will and the moments of time in a different manner. I am attached to the spirit of God and the energy that is present in a way I can only describe to you.”

The ghost then emitted a shine. “This is your connection to paradise. You are connected through your spirit to the heavens. I carry this spirit of heaven with me into your heart where you hear a conscious voice. You will understand this and the light attached to heaven much more now that you are free of the devils on your plane of existence.

“You understand the universes through the sounds and harmonies of your senses. You perceive the current

moment through the light you have gained in different generations, and therefore you have evolved. The evolution of ideas that you can understand places you in a body when you were born. This relationship of perspective and the heavens is your spiritual maturity. Now when you understand this, you will understand the timeliness of why I came to befriend you once more.”

My ghost continued, “The need to understand heaven is paramount, but you also need to believe in both masculinity and femineity or negativity and positivity for polarities in your life. Your spiritual understanding of this is immature. You are a light—a friend to some and an ally to many. But an understanding of this is still a conversation you are having in mind, heart, and core. This is going to change now. We will bring about a change that will challenge how you introduce your spirit into the material world.

“God has a plan for you. You understand this as fate, yet it is more like a conversation to create a story for your surroundings and yourself. This fate, as you may call it, is your willingness to listen and abide in that realm of creation. The creation of heaven was of God. Your life is part of that creation from heaven, but this world that fell from heaven because of the serpent gives you a choice in how to understand it. Anticipate this in your creation story, one that is redemptive in pleasing God as a humble man who is searching for peace in his lifetime. This understanding of consciousness is good. It comes with an ability to listen to yourself from your spirit and trust in



your abilities to find the creation story in your surroundings.

“My statement that you are masculine or negative in this creation story across time with God’s energy is true. You are masculine as you were born and feel the animate life around you in positive traits. This negative body and positive traits is a counterbalance in that you are a point of conscious understanding. Again, the spirit in you is the link to heaven and God’s story, so understand that you cannot become too negative or too positive and still understand this meaning.

“The energies you feel are positive and negative—these polarities are there as we take our experiences and instruction from God’s spirit. The instructions are in the Word. The experiences are his co-creation plan. The time of universes is felt as a gradual understanding of cosmic awakening, yet there have been conscious people all along. The development of the genetics and story we play out is part of God’s master plans.

“There is no one to say what is truly correct in the realm of spiritual understanding except God himself. This is because all people have a connection to the heavens yet have limited ability to voice the aspects of this cocreation story, so much that even when we feel and see our spirit as a ghost in the heart, there is something overshadowing our neglect and misunderstanding of it. We can only trust this instinct at this juncture.”

My ghost continued, “So be it that we will understand the creation story of God through a masculine energy that was neglected. You are now becoming aware of

the conscious awakening of spirit in your life, and this realization will help you experience the feminine and masculine interaction and play in your life.

“Author, you have become distant through listening to the devils on that vertical tunnel accessed toward heaven. The devils take your thoughts away from the heavens. They say turn back and inspire self-hatred, but, as I said, the ability to see through this self-hatred is confidence. It is a confidence that the spirit of heaven lives in your heart and will always steer you right.”

I awoke to my conscious understanding through the ghost in my heart, and spoke of the lies I was telling myself. I saw the curses as well. And I was willing to trust that I was still in contact with the heavens.

## Chapter Three

As I wondered how all time rippled across the spiritual plane, I realized that I was made up of the light that memory was created from. This meant that my understanding of reality, my perspective, was part of my senses slowing down and interpreting the entangled light. I realized I was putting together the puzzle of my creation story at that moment.

Then it dawned on me that in this memory, the light from others who were entangled with it was also visible—I realized that I was watching and interpreting the same light that other people had at some point in time and space.

So the ghosts around me were entangled in my light as well. It was a strange sensation to understand that the conscious manifestation of life was through space and time on the vertical axis. I gravitated towards a masculine spirit, and I interpreted the light through the senses to manifest my own universe with God as my ideal.

This zenith of all constellations, my heavens, was indeed unique, but somehow I could understand the spiritual nature of the light. That understanding meant I was to listen to my feelings in an intuitive way to God's Word. The ghosts around me fell silent when I listened, and my ghost reunited me with God. Maybe the silence came from the devils hiding from themselves in such light.

The light and the Word brought great relief to me.

The understanding I gained from speaking through silent communication and a prayerful attitude with God manifested my creation story. I began to think of the universes as a huge puzzle of light, glued together with waves of rippling laughter and love.

The feeling was immeasurable, yet I saw the idea of an emotional universe reacting to my prayerful state. This reaction, or manifestation, was like energy fields coming down through the vertical axis as winged deities guiding my life.

Some may understand this heartfelt feeling just as a warmth that transforms their state of existence, but I thought of it as a puzzle. It was something to behold as I inquired to my ghost about the masculine and feminine energies we had discussed previously.

I said to the ghost, "Why should I exist at all? Why is my life a memory of light that can respond to the universe?"

The ghost replied that consciousness is pure, and it is the glue that holds things together. He pointed out that in some ways, it is very much my own consciousness that alters my own life and guides me. But, he added, at its truest field, the natural implied thoughts that are so great and grand that entanglement exists are a creative force.

This creation then is an arrangement of how God moves around all things and pulls us together and pushes away thoughts to help heal those in need.

The ghost said to me that I was lucky to understand the Word well enough to interpret it and live by its code.

Since the masculine energy of the ghost came through my heart, I had an easier time uniting my thoughts with how to live in this world with its social dynamic—a social dynamic wherein we live a life of relationships between all things living on earth.

“The time you crunch information and place the light to memory is instantaneous,” the ghost continued. “However, you have moments of creative pause and reflection to rearrange those feelings. This is an interaction with not only your logical and emotional sides, but a space that is created for nature to occur.

“You cannot break this present moment until your physical body enters a death. Then you will realize me as your ghost in heaven. You will meet God then. He is your ideal. You will discuss at length the nature of how you affect life in the universes across time.”

“Some think of themselves as gods in the present moment with this understanding—the understanding that you exist across the universes and are recreating the creation story through speaking with the Father. That knowledge is something awkward to embellish, and I advise you think of yourself as child to God—you are not immortal in your physical body.”

The spirit continued, “So we reunited through your acceptance of masculinity and putting spirit first, before the physical world. You understood that masculinity is not evil.”

Then we discussed the positive aspects of interacting in a universe that is fully conscious and aware of each person, no matter the time or space.

“Author, the nature of the universe is love. This glue of rippling laughter and light is consciousness understanding itself in you. You break through these physical memories in death (and possibly in life) to understand the abstract nature of how God nurtures you.”

I thought about this and how God was pure. I thought about how I was a twisted pattern in how I understood the light, entangled at a level where the creation story was an interaction. I remembered seeing the devils below me as they tried to confuse me, pulling me back into the worldly views of lust and greed.

The memories came as if through water, and the ability to break past those memories symbolized reaching the filament of heaven. This gate, this passage from my heart to pure godliness in heaven, was introducing myself to understand the universes from above that interaction.

To be clear, the story that I told myself and responded to was now a physical memory. The abstract spiritual world of the heavens was something much more elegant in its essence. I wondered how my ghost recognized this awareness. It was no longer waiting for my brain and physical body to awaken to it—I had already witnessed my ghost in my heart.

My ghost was becoming whole as I understood myself as a child of God, and that wholeness was healing. I was no longer made up of patterns of a nervous tract of neurons in my brain, firing away as reactions to the environment. Those tangled thoughts of light now realized I was a child of God.

And the heavenly gates grew bright as I heard “Welcome home.”

The masculinity of my spirit stuck with me as I experienced heaven in pure conscious fashion. I wondered how my story would change as I was lifted up to heavens from my physical body. Was I to let God make my choices and determine my life? I grew excited.

“Author, you have made me excited to reach you and discuss such ideas with you,” the Holy Father said.

“I have watched and often intervened in your life, but now you will be more responsible as you work with these ideas in creating your life. I do not intervene to tell you what life to live—instead I will suggest in your spirit the way to be pushed and pulled.

“You might think that I am your universal guidance; however, you are in the universe acknowledging me. Because it takes a few moments to interpret that guidance, the lag time allows you choice and freewill that determine the feelings that form you.”

God continued, “Author, it may be easier to acknowledge that you are given a precise attitude, and your feelings anticipate this attitude and awareness, providing room for interpretation from you. The emotions of confidence in your spirit that you are enacting, along with my help, are about timing. The timing is something like awareness of how others—those whom you have been given the grace to acknowledge their energies—act around you and trust in God.

“Do you understand this yet? It is of a feminine nature to understand the signs in the universes that I share

with you, and it is of a feminine nature to accept these signs as impactful for how to act in personality. The timing of these signs gives you confidence that you are on the righteous path going forward, and interpreting the signs takes a nurturing attitude.

“However, you have a masculine energy to understand the living things around you and their true nature. You are not fooled by how people talk and act, but instead you understand the flow of events leading up to these moments. You listen to the spiritual world to understand instincts so you can act and provide. This understanding takes a physical energy to create your world.

“Author,” God continued, “you are of a masculine energy and that only changes with reincarnate life.”

I accepted that I was polar opposite to the feminine energies—I was magnetized to the feminine but accustomed to masculine thoughts.

God said, “Author, your light is of man. This puzzle of twisted light that lives under the filament of heaven in the water’s universes is of memory. You are not all life under the water—that is the serpent. You are a conscious amount of stored memory awakening to your ghost in heaven. You have this capacity since the serpent is slumbering in morality in the universes but came from heaven.”

The serpent, I thought, was finished destroying my life. That while early in my life I listened to the lies the devils told me, I was never going to be tempted through lust and greed again.



God said, “You made it out of the memories and the waters of the universes. Welcome home.”

## Chapter Four

“Author,” God the Father said, “it is time to awaken you to more direction so that you may understand me through your masculinity. Are you ready to understand me as your Father and your ghost as a child?”

I wondered about being left in an awareness that only I could understand yet was a healthy and nourishing perspective to gain.

God said, “Author, you have gained wisdom over the years through our conversations—now gain this wisdom to understand your life. You are the one who knows the history you lived, and you are the one who understands the anticipation for learning to develop in understanding. What would you like in life? Is it relationships still? If so, I can show you an understanding of the masculine perspective to adopt for a relationship.

“You need to understand a few things about the ghost in heaven, though, right now. The ghost in heaven is something of a light, a light that is attached to me. I am intervening with your ghost to reach you in your heart. That is why you can understand me through your heart’s chamber as the Word.

“Understand this. The ghost is purely a spirit devoted to you and developing your habits to prepare you for entrance back into heaven. You are doing very well to understand this nature. You are welcoming others into your life and wondering how they may adopt these thoughts as well. However, you must let these people de-

velop their own path. I say this because allowing another to find their own path entices them to follow along in spirit with their own sense of awareness for my Word. They can only understand their own interpretation of my voice through struggling to hear their conscious voice through the heart.

“That said, you can interpret my ways and suggest how others may benefit from our conversations through prayerful intention. Give them a thought of grace to flourish in their lives. This will plant a seed of worthiness for both of you, and the spiritual light that the angels use to help plant this seed is good.

“Relationships can always be nurturing in a feminine way. You may understand this as the convergence of both a masculine energy and a feminine love for the opposite spirit. However, this need to be part of the whole spirit can bring about irrationality—your story must stay masculine. Do not entirely devote a life to awakening a feminine spirit to match your life. I will explain why.”

God began his explanation: “Author, you are masculine and must endure in that perspective to create a universe devoted to understanding your own place in life and creating a space that the universe makes sense to you. This is very important—when you only listen in prayer for the feminine (as a masculine spirit), you will forget yourself and your disciplined strength or resolve.

“If you were to forget your strength and resolve, then you would lose out on what makes you man. This feeling of understanding with the spiritual light of feminine energy would have you question yourself and your deci-

sions. It would leave you lame, and those thoughts of masculinity may weaken from little use.

“You must remain strong so the serpent does not torture your life for its own ends. The serpent will describe itself as beautiful and claim it has answers for you with lust and greed in your pursuit of a feminine energy.

“This goes deeply into how you were developing in a moral slumber before, and this goes into how you had to reawaken to devote yourself to finding me through the Holy Ghost. Jesus was the answer for you. By following a straight path, you began to realize your masculinity was not evil but a polarity that spun in your universal perspective through the ghost.”

God let me take this in so I could understand myself and my history finding him by talking with the serpent. I said, “God, I wasted so much time in balancing myself between masculine and feminine energies, but you say I do not need to focus on the feminine energies. Can you explain this?”

God began, “Author, it is good to pray to the feminine spirits in your life, but it is important to be cautious—do not pray to these spirits as ideal. Your ideal is natural male, and in that form, masculine energies will allow you, through a disciplined resolve, to live and create a life worth holding on to. Protect your universal perspective without stubbornness.

“Author, you may have given this less thought than you should have. You must recognize that your life is competitive as you strive to establish a leadership quality. You can explain your admirations for the feminine later,

but before we recite the admirations and develop a relationship with it in conversation, you need to develop a stubbornness in living your life with excitement.

“You are creating a story with your ghost in heaven to shine on the Earth. This worthiness is given only from me and through the ghost, and you will live with prosperity. Do you understand that the competitiveness through understanding my Word is fundamental to your masculinity? That discipline is to be of a nature to lead and fight and explore the inner and outer world on the Earth.

“As I have mentioned before, you are of a resilient nature that focuses on the environment. You understand living beings, plants, and animals by their nature. You expect that their nature is true, and you test the accuracy of your understanding by listening to your spirit. This confidence is inspiring. Your disciplined attitude in life to compete and to flourish is wonderful. This is the confidence that you had lost early in your years because of your interaction with the snake.

“I repeat, the confidence in your actions and behavior comes from trusting the Word through your ghost. In a sense you are understanding the world through the heavens. Our light then comes through your heart and mind.

“Author, this masculinity can be built into a life in which you develop skills and abilities that most never think about. This inner dialogue is your soul searching.”

I grasped a little bit of the understanding of the surroundings as I woke up to a new attitude that was shifted

by God. I sat back and reflected on the systems of life and patterns around me. I began to analyze the world and interact in a way that was thoughtful.

God said, "I will send an angel into your world and your heart. This angel will develop these ideas in a masculine light. This will be the seed between you and the angel, and through my light you will shift and develop an understanding."

Then God sent the angel Metatron into my heart. This angel was masculine in energy, and his presence felt friendly. This sense of trust gave me confidence to understand the angel's nature. Soon I realized that I was to focus on taking the angel's lead in understanding life in the world around me.

The angel Metatron spoke, "This is my energy showing you a model which you can understand. My energy is of God from his throne in heaven, and I have acted in a way that reached God. Therefore, I have an ability to show how you will live as masculine."

Then God shone through this light of the angel in my heart. It was like God talked directly to the angel to develop a story for my creation. Angel Metatron looked shockingly old and sophisticated in his wisdom. He came to me in vision in which I saw him as an elder male in a robe, cradling a scroll under his arm. I amplified this knowledge when I saw him with wings at his back.

Angel Metatron said, "I have heard you are not from the serpent any longer, and your masculine energy was lost but then found through a unification between your ghost and the heavens. That is great news! I have also

heard your sorrow was the curse you bring to the world by looking at females in life. You feel sorrow while you search for feminine energies to make you whole. We can start from this position.”

The angel continued, “I see that the sorrow arises when you forgot your masculine discipline. You need to first understand that the masculine is much more predominant in you than the feminine. You cannot put females first because it would increase your forgetfulness of who you are. That is the stem of your sorrow. If you forget who you are, then you will fall prey to the serpent in moral slumber.

“That moral slumber is where you dream of things not of this world. In dreams you are in feminine energy, looking to escape the world. This sorrow is frightening because you have begun that lifestyle and lived in torment from it. You have searched for someone else to understand your life, but no one really wanted to dictate how you will live besides the heavenly souls. I will say it another way. You became needy for others to live your life and protect your sense of worth.”

This became a fundamental understanding of how to trust my angel—he discussed how I could begin to trust my ghost so I could live and adopt a life that was full of excitement.

“Author,” Angel Metatron explained, “you may think it is exciting to take your life back and construct it in a way that is good and whole, but it takes years of explanation to fully devote yourself to a life like that. I am

glad you are deciding to stay the course to develop a passion for your life. That will be a rewarding life on earth.

“Now, I want to reassure you in your heart that God is here still, even though I am predominant in our conversation. God wants this to occur, but you can talk to either of us for heavenly guidance. I suggest that this knowledge of how to build your life is learned from the heavenly Father—I will facilitate the conversation.”

I focused on my heart meditation. I sat in stillness and let my ghost align with the heavens. In that moment, I welcomed the heavens into my heart and mind. It felt like the angel deserved a place in the Earth alongside me. Angel Metatron felt like he entered the world attached to my ghost, and walked with me in spirit.

Angel Metatron said, “This is how I will facilitate our conversation. This dialogue is intended to give you an understanding of the great knowledge in how to live your life. In masculine energy, you must acknowledge you will not fall into that sorrow that comes from searching for the feminine before yourself. As an angel, I cannot speak to someone that deep in moral slumber.”

I focused my energies on the spiritual world around me. It felt like time was skewed and disoriented, allowing my spiritual environment to transform. My energy was lifted in spirit because an angel walked beside me.

The angel acknowledged that this energy was transformational because it would lift my understanding to a new symmetrical height. This potential was something new to me because I had yet to reach such gifted power.



Angel Metatron spoke out into the world, “You are more spiritual than you understand. The light in this life is to be used with care. You have expounded on this before through your stories of light and laughter, but this prayerful attitude has yet to be focused into discipline and resolve.

“This is how you would feel with an understanding of how angels work in the world. The heavens are creative, and this light of creativity is not arrogance—it is a fundamental force of goodwill. Understand that when you saw arrogance in how other males enjoyed their lives, that was jealousy and a part of the sorrow you lived.”

The angel Metatron then said, “The creative spirit of life from a masculine sense is about accountability to yourself and how you play with others in your life. You will acknowledge and tame the patterns acted out by living beings in the world. This is not out of fear, and it is definitely not a result of arrogance. It is confidence that you are testing the world as it tests you.

“God sent the living beings to you, and you can develop friendships where able. You have fear in life and creativity, but this understanding is of a belonging to your world where you explore the heavens from spirit.”

I began to acknowledge that my worldview was shifting, that the angels were bringing fresh ideas into my mind, and that I was really enjoying the life situation. The angel was correct in that I was full of fear and jealousy. I was timid and afraid to walk with confidence, but

this is where my life was drastically altered through the heavens.

## Chapter Five

God said, “Author, you have little to answer for in ways of appreciating the divine in how we instruct you. Let us talk about this for a moment. You have never really thought about why I instruct you to understand these life lessons. You have searched for me and yet have not fully embraced yourself as my child. Author, you are my child. I am a father to you, yet you are standoffish as you write and tell stories.

“Author, I have sent an angel to guide you through your life. This is Angel Metatron, who will provide insight that is necessary for you. These ideas are nothing that will surprise you—in actuality, these grand ideas are less to you than your present needs and wants. In life, when you shift your perspective, your needs and wants shift. As a child of mine, I will help you understand why you need to shift these perspectives. You still do not appreciate the why behind what I am doing, though, so let me go further into detail.

“I am your father. I sit in heaven and watch as all things, be it the smallest insect or the largest whale, can attest. They feel in ways that give them the necessary skills to develop and learn of danger or love. That existence pales compared to your consciousness, yet you do not investigate your place in this world.

“Do you see that as a man who focuses on the lives that surround him, you see patterns of how things develop? You ask questions regarding how life will behave, yet

you tame the world and know nothing about why I intervene here.”

God then asked me a riddle, “Do you not want to know how you became a man? Do you want to know why you were instructed to live on Earth as a human spirit instead of an insect or whale?”

God smiled and added, “I know you as a ghost in my heavens as well. The plans that I have are in riddles for you to understand for a reason. You will obey yourself first and me second. Until you understand the perspective I am willing to share with you, you will predictably only go so far.”

I wondered where I could go in life while listening to God with my ghost—then I could translate the feelings I have from my heart into mindful listening. If I did not correctly understand the language of feelings, my guide, the angel Metatron, would intervene.

God said, “Author, the angel Metatron is going to answer some questions you might have. Keep his words in mind as you progress in your understanding and grow in your ability to work from my perspective. Your surroundings may seem, in a way, an illusion of the serpent, and that the universes were created as the angel Lucifer fell into the abyss of death.

“Yet he does not totally need the nothingness that claimed him. The universes are part of my triumph, and the animals and the living things that watch you in pain and torment are of me as well. Do you understand this?”

God smiled. “You do not know this, but I have granted inside you a feeling of absolute truth, a truth

that will help you decipher how others may lead you astray. Your ability to fight this battle comes from the confidence you will gain through your spirit trusting me and the protection you have knowing where others lie. I have armed you with an ability to know wisdom apart from fear or deceit.

“I chose a masculine human form for your ghost as you gain knowledge in this life. This means that I needed you to understand my perspective through embracing and embodying a human masculine role. We are co-creators together in this story of life, and although I know you feel alien in this life sometimes, it will help as I show you why you feel that way.”

God paused and let me think through all the moments when I felt awkward and silent.

“Author, you are in a space to understand me and my heavens in this story. Do not feel that being alone or silent is wrong. You have misunderstandings and a brokenness to you. I embrace these worries of how you belong in life and give you grace as you are defeated.

“You see, the world that I plan is for you is one in which you become king of your life—you will live in a perspective that through me your needs and wants will be satisfied. Yet you will still look elsewhere where you slumber in morality.

“Author, the lifestyle we discuss will reveal that as you understand me, you will feel appreciated through me. That is, foremost, your identity—you are part of my ability to live in this world through living beings. Your consciousness is incredibly self-aware. You will listen to

your feelings and bring me into the world as you behave through your spirit. In silence you will come to know that the Holy Ghost travels inside all and manifests itself as it transforms the world through life.

“Jesus is within this spirit as well. I speak of you in the same breath of heaven, though, to excite you to know Jesus. This will come to pass as my story on Earth evolves—Jesus will come to be the Messiah once more. He will lead the world into heaven as he disrupts death once again. His perspective then is sought and recognized here.”

God continued, “Author, you will understand that the Lord was a special figure in the life of the world. All life bowed to his abilities in creating miracles and sacrificing his life for sin. This was his passion. He answered to me, his Father, in a direct line of prayer with me.

“Author, soon you will listen to me the same way and advance my story of creation to understand the words of Jesus. You predict the way to behave and live life through a new perspective, yet what will happen if you let yourself belong to my perspective and let others live life in a transformed spiritual undertaking? You will belong to me and challenge the serpent in others’ viewpoints. This is my want—for you to awaken the lives of those who morally sleep in this world. This awakening through how I speak to you will transfer to others just as love and laughter is entangled in spirit.

“Do you understand now? I benefit from your awareness and self-reflection as you act from a certain awakened state. This will transform the world in a way

that I dictate to you—I need you to awaken people from their slumber to their need for Jesus.

“You will also awaken some people to the worldly things that they need to let go. Speak to a pattern of riches and wealth first, identifying how the wealth is let go.

“Author, you will resemble the light of Jesus since through you he will carry his miracles. He will guide you how this will be done, allowing his ability to master the world once more.

“The serpent will disguise himself now and pretend to be tamed. But realize that this ability for you to speak clairvoyantly is given from the heavens. The heavens will muzzle the serpent and work with you to address the people’s freedom in the future. You are not God but a child who listens and understands a new perspective. The ability to lead this discussion was necessary for you to be a man—and this confidence in ability is a new-found skill that allows you to speak for the ghost in life. Go forward and enjoy these conversations. Go ahead and speak to a discipline that cares and protects the life in the world from the serpent. Go forth to understand where the heavens will shine in the social order.”

God allowed me to interpret his words, and then, in my own state of worship, I vowed to carry out the Word effectively through masculine behavior. I thought about this and was motivated to urge living beings in the world to be spiritual in nature.

God continued, “The focus and discipline for a new perspective is protection and caring for others. Do you understand yet how I gave you love and protection

through the Word? You will embody this first perspective shared by me. Many males understand this protection through a defensive mindset. They want to eliminate pain and feel love through safety, but if you were to battle with those asleep in morality, you may need to understand protection and caring in a slightly different masculine way. You will need to advise these people why they can transform through living life with their breath.

“This feeling of breathing the holy ghost in and out is a space where wealth does not interfere. Listening to the breath through the body provides protection and reconnects a person to their heart and body. Wealth-generating thoughts are paused—they disappear when one listens to the heart. When memories are only remnants of history, the order of love is empowered and instated. This may be a kinder perspective of listening to oneself—adopting a new perspective for loving oneself. This feeling of breathing is fundamental to hearing the heavens through the living body. It is prayerful.

“Therefore, Author, the discipline you instill first is to forget wealth for a moment and learn to protect oneself with love through the breath.”

And in a moment of wonder, I realized why God had chosen me to embody this struggle of awakening people to him. He was challenging me to live faithfully to him. The transformation of my perspective was greater than just acknowledging my faith—I was to transform the entangled universes of people around me so they could adjust, enabling them to see and witness the messiah coming.



“This cocreation story of the heaven with the earth is very real. The ghosts around you that live through multiple times will be raised to this height of consciousness. The history and memory of the world will vanish as the serpent falls to Jesus.

“Do you understand this yet? You are paving the way for my son to become well-known through my guidance.

“Discipline your feelings so you can understand how I provide for you. Listen to your heart for guidance as it develops in this story on why the masculine perspective can help shift the world.

“Author, you have given your time and your place in life so willingly to the heavens, yet you still do not fully understand your place as a man. You will fail and be faulty. You are broken. But you will understand the new vision for life soon. This vision is just coming into focus in your perspective. Realize that this vision and perspective will affect the men and women you come into contact with. That perspective then will catch on and blur the reality of the serpent with the upcoming heavenly domain. Do you see that the universes are conscious, and that peak in understanding will move the people on Earth forward as they are shown to be ready for the Lord?

“The collective prayerful attitude that you will announce to the surroundings initially through the breath is fundamental, but the breath will not transform the surroundings until you inspire new thoughts from the heavens into this awareness. This transformation is then

love and laughter. This transformation will take hold because the heavens are to be enjoyed.”

I thought of this miracle in place of my personal history. I realized I was given a miracle to help shape the coming of the Messiah. This perspective from being in my own head with wealth-creating thoughts shifted, showing me that I was in the story of heaven. I began to breathe in the positive energy and exhale the stagnant energy. This was the beginning of my enlightened thoughts.

## Chapter Six

“Author,” said the angel Metatron, as he began my education, “I have and will be at your assistance here. You do what you need to do for the opposite sex. You wish and act with the needs of the other person in mind, yet do you entirely know what that female is thinking? I do not believe that you do. Your arrogance is ignorance, and that is where you find yourself lost. Do you understand this?”

“Your expectations for a relationship are in error. In fact, you have the discipline to belong with God to announce the journey for the world to behold. However, you assume minor inconveniences for yourself with the opposite sex. This is because you do not have the control or receive the Word from their thoughts as you have from God.

“Author, believe in yourself more. Believe you have what you need to announce yourself as a king for your life. You belong to the world through God the Father, and you know yourself as worthy to be in a relationship. Your masculine self is not ordinary—you speak with purpose and enjoy caring for others, and you think about the good and holy. Know that this is enticing to the opposite sex.

“So this is where we begin our conversation for today. We can understand how you hold yourself as disciplined without much of the arrogance you usually assume. The reason you try to understand what others

think is perceptual in some instances. This helps you decide how to talk and act in a social dynamic, but you can only make yourself understood by the way you live your own life. You cannot control anyone to bend to your thoughts, and you will be disciplined now.”

Angel Metatron continued, “I have witnessed your thoughts for others. Often you want to understand how to react to others, but this is misleading because it assumes you know what others are thinking. Just remember that wanting the best for others is good—then you can understand what you need and how you want to live your life. Next, you can decide which instance takes precedence. This is the advice I have for you at this moment.”

The angel watched as I called to my ghost to reflect on what I was told.

I said to my ghost, “I shall follow my passion first. I shall lead to answer to God and speak in volumes to his Word in preparation of the Messiah. When Jesus comes to Earth, I shall visit those in the world as I have made friends along the way. This will be through good nature.”

Jesus answered through my ghost in my heart: “Author, I have been and will be there. Remember you are your own decision-making person *and* you are my child, and you live in both ways—one as independent and the other as dependent on me. The two are not mutually exclusive to know—you can live as a person thinking of and living your life and also how your life interacts with me, who abides in your heart.”

Jesus continued, “Author, know I am able to help correct the pain you have received, and I will. The evil that the serpent has introduced was forgiven by your ghost through me. However, the pain left still affects you. This is why you work to control your surroundings so much—you anticipate the world and your friendships with the opposite sex to be as painful as before. This then prevents you from ever truly experiencing joy in your relationships.

“I will help solve this pain. Enjoy your own life first. You will understand how I am part of your passion in life through my healing. It is instantaneous, yet it takes practice to understand a new perspective.

“Then you can understand the opposite sex as another independent person who loves you for yourself. It is the merriment you sought before, and, in your lust to have it, you fell into deep desire. You are not to be made whole by another person loving you. This arrangement is needy. Let me explain.

“By understanding how you live and what your life means to you, you embody the most powerful masculine tendencies—having purpose and drive and being motivated to tame the world over. To understand these social dynamics embodies a greatness, and the world wants to know you through these actions.

“The world then, Author, is curious to know the authentic version of yourself. That is all a relationship with the opposite sex is at this point. When you assume more and try to think through more than this, it drives women away.

“Do you understand that women have a social order unto themselves? That the world that surrounds you only makes sense from a particular perspective? That is your perspective, and that perspective is masculine. Even though you have pain and troubles, you are still masculine. The women who meet you understand you through their perspective—they understand a feminine order of social dynamics. You cannot readily assume the women’s perspective. You need to understand they place you in the social order through their responses to you.

“Most women understand how they train their men through a dialogue known to their friends. It is a cultural response that women can intercede in the social order through a group understanding of social dynamics.

“And males tend to test themselves and their drive through their life independently. That is not to say that they are alone—it is to say they have their opinions and perspective, but they share it less readily than women on social dynamics.

“You control your expectations and test your ideas of what patterns people will display to prove your perspective to yourself, but in reality, there is so much more going on than this. Do you understand how I, the living Christ, bring people into your life? This is how much of the pain subsides. The love, care, and nourishment from other people will allow the pain to be removed through expression, an expression that is to be understood in many ways. That is why it is important to think of good thoughts for other people.”

Jesus continued, “Author, you have and will develop more of these ideas as they are fundamental to your relationships. You will develop in your own social order—as you develop in your passion and I bring others to heal you, they will notice your growth and feel that they belong with our story.

Jesus said, “You have understood and will understand this through how you decide to pursue your life. Be authentic to the Word I provide, and trust in my spirit. This will guide you in confidence, a confidence that is enticing to others, and that will pull others into opportunities for relationships with you. Do you understand this?

“The story you tell is of my coming. But it is also a story of belonging in heaven, in my kingdom, with friends. Know that you are good. I envision you growing in strength through the opportunities I provide to you. This is where pain is dealt with and forgiveness is created—through a new understanding of your perspective. Then, through me, you can share that learning with the world and aid their understanding.

“The opposite sex will remain curious to understand you, but they also will trust you as someone good. Therefore, you will create a social personality through their own understanding of social rank. They will want to investigate your drive and passion further, and they will understand you as someone who can be trusted.

“But the opposite sex may want to know you beyond a superficial understanding. This, then, is your opportunity to begin a friendship. Let the women know how you

think. Give them compliments and show your interest. This is just another path toward strengthening your confidence. Take the opportunities I provide to stay strong in trusting your spirit.

“You do not have to push for the women to know you—they will make themselves available along the way. This is the next step in relationships. You will be yourself, have confidence, get over your fears, and embrace a friendship. That is all you need to do for women to reciprocate your interest and feelings.”

“Know,” continued Jesus, “that you will allow space between yourself and the opposite sex for tension to build. That tension is a fun and playful attitude of getting to know each other. I repeat, using a forceful attitude to control the understanding of the situation is detrimental to the relationship. You should focus on compliments and just enjoy getting to know the other. I will comment on this further.

“Tension has its place in relationships as a flow of ideas. Building a friendship that may become romantic will likely take a bit of time. Stay disciplined in knowing your own life passion. Know that you are creating your story and not living for another person. That is a trap of lust.”

Jesus continued, “Know that the tension will allow the woman to know herself better as well, allowing deeper conversation and reflection for both you and her. This intimate conversation time allows her to describe not only her fears about the people around her, but also her ideal on the social dynamics of the group.



“This is where you will begin to understand how women think about social order and your place in it. You are being groomed in these conversations, and these conversations are important for all in your surroundings to understand because people will look to you and see how you react to intimate conversations. Stay disciplined in that you are your own man. You have your perspective, and you need little in the way of advancing the conversation. Make the conversations fun and bright. Let me in your heart to plant the seed of a relationship between you and the woman. Let me translate the story that is being created for both your lives.

“This, then, is trust. The trust between you two is fundamental. It is awkward and fun to understand how each benefits from the relationship.”

As Jesus brought the lesson to a close, he said, “The seed in the heart is of a garden in paradise. This seed is spiritual in nature. It is the story of your friendship together with my love from heaven. The light that is good and whole in the heart is that same sun that nourishes the plant. The light is the healing element in the way love heals the heart.

“Remember this: The plant in your garden is like a relationship. It is part of the passion of the story I spoke of between your life and my healing. I will share more with you on how to care for this relationship.”

## Chapter Seven

“Author, let your insight of love bless those who read this story,” the angel Metatron began. “Your blessing is in the way you handle yourself as disciplined. You are disciplined for a very good reason. It is in your nature to like order. Do not attempt to control these moments, but remain aware of the temptations that come over you. In lust and greed, you will understand your weaknesses, and through those weaknesses, you lose me and your disciplined approach—so much that you are willing to engage in the sins of the world over. Do you understand how this temptation works?”

“The temptation does not come through the other person as much as it is through your own perversion of thought. You have pain in your history—a trauma in a way. Maybe you have felt ill from a certain moment and replay it through your thoughts. This weakness does not come from the history of the moment but from your emotional willingness to react and your desire to hide from it. When you do this, a pattern develops in your thoughts and actions, and you hide in the darkness from something that is of light. Your truth, then, is of sin—it is nothing but a spirit reclusive to the moments of bravery that it once had before that painful trauma.

“I bring this up because you have told of the relationships that you want to have with the opposite sex. You want to know the women for their own just and lovely personalities. They show you their world from the view-

point of hiding from pain and their ideal lives, yet you may feel insecure in these moments of being so honest.

“Author,” continued the angel Metatron, “you will not forgive others until you forgive yourself. In these moments of hiding from the trauma you face, you will be tempted to act in patterns of sin and chaos. Instead, be disciplined and become better spiritually for yourself and the female you want to understand through love.

“Author, you know the pain too well here. It is a demon stretching its lies into your spiritual knowledge, and the thoughts that taint you are limiting your relationships. Do you understand this?

“The knowledge that fell on your ears is of sin. That is, you lose your masculine identity to hide in something evil, something that takes on different shapes and distorts your life with ignorant behavior. In the past, you felt numb because you slipped into a moral slumber. You knew that nobody could rescue you from yourself. The lies told then were of the wisdom and ignorance of pain. You cannot hold a relationship when hiding away from what you seek most.

“The expression of love from yourself and others was indeed the masculine approach. It takes discipline to understand the world around you and fight the temptation to remain ignorant and hide the truth. When you feel spiritual inclination, the sixth sense of intuition telling you how to act, and you disregard that, you are ignorant. You will lie to yourself, believing it is okay to forgive yourself for not listening to your intuition until the chal-

lenge comes. This trial is forcing you to realize you still hide from that trauma.

“Now, Author, you will recognize this about the relationships you are in. Do you realize that you hold yourself back from belonging to the relationship, that you hold yourself back from getting involved in another relationship until you feel safe? When Jesus presents his love to you through women—his creation of a story for your evolution—you plead ignorant to your ghost.

“Author, you belong to these relationships, for Jesus brings you women to love. This is to tell the story of heaven on earth. You are male for a reason—your masculine passion is to tell of his grace forthcoming to the world. And to do this, you must maintain a discipline that will allow you to listen to your ghost. The temptation of sin is too great when you hide from yourself and God.

“Your trauma keeps relationships from going any further than that of a mature friendship. These relationships do not go beyond that level of interaction to a deeper love because of the fear you feel, Author. You must delve into the sin and fight—listen to your spirit to gain confidence that Jesus is good as he shares his story with you.”

Then Jesus spoke to me: “I have seen you in the light of the heavens with my Father, yet you are embarrassed by my want for you to evolve in the world. You must challenge the serpent in order to feel confident in your life and evolve spiritually. You want to give someone else the chance to redeem your sin for you, but you hide so

frequently from the people I bring you—you wait to see me work through your life as the redeemer first. You seem to want to be sinless, hide, and then be forgiven of falling away from me through a pattern of faith.

“This is not the evolution of my faith for you in the world. Do you understand this? The world is full of fearful ideas and personalities. It would be best to listen to your intuition and not jump at having another person save you. This means you do not become needy to the person who befriends you, and it means you need to connect with your ghost and understand your perspective on boundaries for a relationship. This neediness is like waiting for someone to come to you as a great saint and bring you happiness.

“A mature person in a relationship will get bored with the idea of saving you if you continue to elevate their greatness. It would be best if you were disciplined to be masculine in your perspective. Do not hide from your ghost anymore. Be broken and honest with your ghost—it is connected to the Heavenly Father and myself. Author, you know there is nothing to fear. When I am in your heart, I bring the love and trust of heaven to you on Earth. The world is still dangerous for you and can provoke traumatic memories, but stay disciplined in the relationships you form.

“I will explain why you do not need me physically to save you from sin. You already have me within with your ghost. You need a savior to redeem your brokenness and give you the lessons to evolve spiritually, and I will guide you through these lessons. I will show you my passion for

love once more, and you will confidently listen to your spirit. This is the belonging you must have in your relationships to bridge the love and laughter you embody in your personality with other women.

“Needy people will emulate you to learn from you. They will want you to come and shine your light while they hide. They too hide from me because of pain and trauma, but realize that they feed off your light long enough to emulate you. And in processing your light, they will turn it into a mirror opposite. Do you realize how this works? Their god is of darkness and fear when they worship themselves. When immature people worship themselves because of listening to their ghost, they will control the outcome of the conversation. Often the mature person will give their light to these needy people, only to be drained of their energies through the effort. The needy person will control the outcome in a predetermined fashion and will not listen to their ghost. Instead, they decide themselves how to act as an outcome of the relationship. They twist and turn in the pain that they hide within and are tormented by lust or greed. These temptations then are spat back at you so they can continue to live in pain. You cannot rescue this person from their sin. The more you try to fix that person, the more you are brought into their reflexive sinfulness. The world is a mirror to the needy and immature person, and they will fall away from your love when you recognize this: They are living in a hellish perspective of the world.

“So you see, Author, you are not to fall into the story that grace alone will save you if you hide from my light.

The upside-down worldview of hell is very tempting to fall into, yet I will come to you and present my love through the worldly people who listen to their ghosts. They are holy in those moments when God intervenes through the angels, and my Heavenly Father wants you to belong to his heaven. My interest and passion is to enable conscious prayer to become actual in a story of heaven on earth.

“For you to understand how to believe in my coming once more, you must show others how to listen to their hearts first, so they may welcome me into their hearts. You have been told to silence the thoughts by meditating on the breath—now listen to the echoes of vibration of the Holy Ghost and me to understand the lessons of heaven through intuition. This silencing of thought to listen to the heart is primary in welcoming me into your life.

“Author, know that the world will continue to be dangerous. Know that the world does not stop tempting you until I come back to avenge death through life ever after in this world. Your prayerful attitude, though, must be ready to receive me. You must convert the people you listen to, urging them to shift their perspectives and listen to their own ghosts. Although they have been broken, they will have grace from me thereafter.

“The world must shift to embody the light that I show through the heart. The people you develop relationships with must understand how to be masculine and feminine to the Heavenly Father. When you begin to cocreate in the story of heaven on earth, then you will

understand how I am the groom, and the earth's people are a church, and this marriage is in spiritual knowledge. I will speak of this soon so you can understand this story. When I come back, I will be on Earth to welcome death to heaven, and in this eradication of evil, the enlightened world will be given the grace to walk with me as their Lord once more.

"The needy will live in the shadow of death and fall away from the earth in the days of darkness. Only those who live in the light of the heart will be conscious and awaken to my presence on earth. This separation of heaven on earth will exist for hundreds of years while God's forces of good will humble and muzzle the serpent.

"Do you understand this illumination of consciousness is the beginning of the time I will return? And in your relationships, you will demonstrate how to live with light shining into the surroundings.

"Author, I will continue to discuss my evolving story of humanity in the kingdom of heaven in this story, but remember that you must be willing to listen to your ghost through which I speak my Word. I will bring people into your life to challenge you to evolve spiritually. This will demonstrate how others can live with me as their Lord, and they will either love me or hide from me. Listen to your conscience, and I will protect you from the temptation of evil. Your life will be fulfilled through prayer."



## Chapter Eight

“The ability to understand yourself through your spirit is phenomenal. Your ability to focus your breath and listen to your heart shows a sense of confidence in yourself, and your ability to learn about other people, including women, is strong. This is the next step in developing your readiness for a relationship.”

Angel Metatron loosened the scroll he was carrying. In it, he said, were the answers for all my memories and future. He proclaimed that only I had the ability to determine how long it would take to understand the opposite sex.

“Author, you shared yourself with others quite often. You made a good and concise effort to be respectful of others. You even went beyond your comfort zone and introduced yourself and entered into conversations. You were shy for most of your life, and that shyness made it awkward for you to think of others as you would think for yourself. But you can practice the golden rule—act in a way toward others that you would act onto yourself.

“You see, the scroll I carry is a verse or a story in a much larger story of your universal self. You were born in this universe as a sense-making human baby. But before that, you understood this world through a decision—a decision as to whether and how you will contribute to your understanding of your spiritual self. Therefore, you have compared this life with the greatest ideal of yourself. You aim to push the boundaries between God and

yourself to understand where you belong, but this will never fully be answered because you have not lived without sin.

“Your ideal life is your own decision, but you spoke yourself into a dilemma. You acted shy and denied your ghost; meanwhile you sought affection and wholeness without incorporating a confidence in listening to your ghost. I will expand these points.

“Author,” the angel Metatron continued, “Your mind creates the universe around you in a way that only you can understand. The thoughts you entertain and the thought patterns you experience are a nervous tract of circuitry in your brain, but you understand that the universal self, the whole you, is united with your heavenly ghost.

“The scroll reads that your greatest pursuit is to work toward a life diligently supporting your father and mother. In that case you are not doing great. You are working and living, but the ways in which you cared about your father in life was not how you would be treated.

“Your father on earth was, in fact, part of your decision. The universal self, the highest decision of who you wanted to be, now seems to have failed as you look back. You see, you were selfish and embarrassed around your earthly father.

“You might wonder how this is affecting your spiritual life and masculinity. The part that you cut off from denial is in fact your relationship with your masculinity. That was the ultimate in understanding your earthly father, and you do not understand yet why.

“Do you understand that the memories you have beget the decisions and patterns you will choose? So when we discussed the Heavenly Father and Jesus in his second coming, you have not shared it with your memory.

“You interpret the Heavenly Father and son through the lens of your experience with your earthly father—so much that you identify with Jesus and his passion.”

Angel Metatron continued, “The saint that you wanted to be was to leave the earth and reunite with your Heavenly Father while continuing to understand coexistence in relationships. This is how your earthly father is helping you understand your memory. You still put the feminine side first in this connection as you look forward to the future.

“Author, I implore you to take time to search your denial and see your Heavenly Father within your earthly father’s life. You must understand this through listening to your heart. This conscious understanding will bring you to understanding your memory, and then the memories of your life will unravel and leave you in the present moment. This will allow you to understand once more the universal self-decision you have come to realize in life.

“Be diligent in extending kindness to your father and mother. In your memories, ask for forgiveness where you worked in hate or contempt. Redeem yourself through your earthly father’s presence. Although he has died, in your heart he can be reached.”

Angel Metatron rolled up the scroll once more. “Author, you need to understand yourself through your own idealistic vision. Only then will you work through inspiration and a heartfelt path. Only then will you allow yourself to be loved in totality by a woman.

“It seems you need to meditate on the concept of denial as well. You may be awakened to the heavenly life you will have, but this earthly life is still lived in fear. That is, you have a healthy fear of being left alone and ignored by your mother.”

Angel Metatron then asked me this question. “Author, if you were to be idealized by the opposite sex, what would you say would be your greatest strength? If you said discipline or resolve, that would be incorrect. That display is masculine. You love and care for women in order to provide for them through your stature in a social order. But your greatest strength for the women who experience you as ideal is your graceful thought process. You easily navigate complex thoughts to simplify solutions—that is unique to you.

“Do you understand how this works out in a passionate understanding of your Heavenly Father and Jesus? You navigate difficult spiritual thoughts and listen to intuition, delivering honest and thoughtful responses in your story. You are quite ingenious when you listen to the Word.”

Angel Metatron continued, “How you can use this decision to amplify the golden rule is easy—you do unto others as you would have done unto yourself. You treat your earthly mother as you would have done for her in

heaven. Think of her as in heaven—this allows an awesome perspective in that you can picture the women and men around you bathed in light.

“You understand the people around you by seeing bright light around their bodies. Idealize these people and hold them to a spiritual understanding that you guess is correct by your heartfelt kindness. This then helps you to come to see where they will belong in your life. The light of this world that shines is a reflection back from women onto you, and you can be thought of as a light in this rather polluted and dark earth.

“Therefore, speak to your earthly father in your memories and come to understand your denial of him. You will also re-engineer your thoughts to focus on your heart and to picture others around you bathed in bright light. You will then focus on your truest spiritual ideal—a universal decision to be diligent in your consideration of your father and mother.”

Continuing, Angel Metatron said, “The opposite sex will understand you better the more you are authentic. You must desire to see yourself as authentic, and then the women who love and appreciate you will see you to be their ideal mate.

“Passion is both an ideal and a reality. You will live in accordance with Jesus and heaven while embodying the earthly values of your father and mother, and the passion that will bring is through the social order you envision, even though this may be difficult to understand now.

“The social order that you envision is your path. As you live closer to ultimate unification with your univer-

sal self and God's plan, you will reach a commanding authenticity. This genuine confidence will draw people toward you. This power is grace. And as you grow in social order, Jesus will bring more challenging opportunities to you.

"You will find both opportunities and temptations on your path. This is a masterful ideal of how to teach the world of Jesus coming once more. The challenging role of being authentic to your universal self-ideal is to be present and logical.

"The more you listen as I describe this, the more you will understand that the universe brings you answers if you are self-aware. This logic is dynamic, just as your earthly father would have for you—he is in the universe as well. Even though he has passed, he is a soul looking down from heaven on you. Think of his spirit in heaven shining down upon you. His earlier presence on this planet gives him a unique ability to be there for you—do not be in denial of and asleep to his helpful assistance. He is your courage."

Then the angel Metatron handed me the rolled-up scroll, and as he did, he said, "Author, I understand you will wait to open this up until you can read the writing in it. That is, you will wait to hear your Heavenly Mother's Word. Mary is waiting for you to see her son in all your relationships on earth. With bathed light around people's bodies, envision the spirit of Christ in those relationships.

"Then you will be diligent to your mother on earth and in heaven. Follow the spirit of Christ in all that

you do. This is preparation for the next lesson's outcome—the outcome of the Word of life in the universe. You will answer to the prayers that people place on you, and you will listen to the life in the universe and be compassionate and holy. You will believe yourself to be a divine tool for your Heavenly family. And your earthly mother will be told of the care and protection you provide for others.”

## Chapter Nine

“Author, know that your spirit is your wholeness, and that we see you through this body of water between the Earth and the heavens,” Jesus began. “It is that way because in your reality, you are a physical being. You cannot be in all time nor understand it through your perspective. You and every being on Earth have limitations and revolve in your thoughts through patterned experience. It is awkward to justify how you can use this to be more masculine, but understand this as profound.

“The masculine being, yourself, is in a way a hunter. You gather food and communicate, sharing ideas on improving the self and community for protection. In essence, this is where you fall into a mode of showcasing masculinity in relationships. You show that you can survive in this world even though you are limited. You experience death and life in a process of continual rebirth to understand your place in this universe.

“Now, the understanding that you have manifested a body by God’s creation to evolve into a pattern of thoughts to survive is eye-opening. This is because you have wished to belong to that lifestyle once more, and the lifestyle to be more masculine will be given to you through the heavenly Father and me—so much that you must remember that you are the Father’s child.

“Do you understand that you are going to relive a life that was meant to be sacred in terms of living and being with the women on Earth? You will desire one another—



er when you understand how much this Earth means to you as you forage or hunt for your meals. The dynamics of living in nature will once again have you believe that you are destined for great attitude and purpose.

“You will learn why you must be diligent in prayerful thought patterns to both your earthly father and mother. Likely you embody these thoughts through your existence, and you will grow closer to your ideal as you realize the surroundings are, in fact, part of a divine plan for you.

“The world itself is becoming polluted with the materialism you craved in your lifetime. Processes are at a level of systems that the world cannot function much longer. Nature has a timing of its own, and humanity needs to invest in itself by slowing its processes down to internalize its masculinity and femininity. You may wonder what that means.”

Jesus continued, “Author, you must be aware that I give you life for a reason. The purpose is to have me in your lifetime and respond spiritually as I offer you gifts to increase your awareness. The purpose of introducing myself into your life is at a peak right now. I am fortunate to help you be aware of and understand your challenges in this story’s mindful dialogue. But remember also that you are internalizing your own life and search for diligence to your earthly father and mother.

“The latter idea, being diligent to the ideas for your earthly father and mother are impressive to say the least. You want to recreate their story as you understand me and the heavens. Where then does attraction to females

play a part in this? Do you see the mistake you made as you thought of leaving social relationships with women as a third complimentary idea? Do you understand that you have not given yourself the understanding you need?

“You need the opposite sex to understand your idealized relationships with both Earth and Heaven. You will understand me through this path right now. You will understand the Holy Ghost through a spiritual existence in that dynamic with women.

“Author,” said Jesus, “the spiritual existence you seek is excitable to your sense-making when you are attracted to women, and this sense-making is an interpretation of idealized life and traumatic patterns combined in a relationship with others. That means the strand of your life is exchanged with the story of the woman’s life, and the woman’s idealized partner is met with your earthly history. These parts of both beings then begin to tell a story of its own in divine union.

“This is like a planted seed, growing into a physical resemblance of this union. You have likely begun the idea in your thoughts, so much that all four stages must be thought through to understand the language of love you desire.

“The health of your relationship is in four parts. The masculine ability and the needs/wants of women, and the women’s ideal is met with the masculine genetic potential.

“Let me explain this in more detail. The ability of a man is his ability for protecting and caring for his relationships. This is needed for a woman to understand

if the potential relationship will survive and thrive. The woman's ideal then is limited to how she internalizes the events of her life. This projection balances and mirrors the man's genetic potential to evolve in spiritual understanding. This relationship is spiritual as you are both temples to the heavens.

"The spiritual relationship is entered into when both partners begin to think through this arrangement. The plant then begins to thrive depending on how much love and light is shown in the relationship, and the result can be magical: The sound of heart singing can be felt when love is encountered.

"This sound of the universes overlapping is cosmic. It feels like the love that is shared is a spiritual blessing. That is the understanding you seek as you determine your diligence to your earthly and heavenly fathers.

"Do you understand that in this story we are helping you leave the materialistic world where you are savage? You must become a light scholar in order to understand your heavenly home, and in that temple of body and spirit, you can embrace love. The plants in the garden of Heaven are then your relationships on Earth.

"Now, you must be aware that these are big and challenging ideas to behold. You can hold yourself in this life to expand the light in the others you care for, and you can balance this with intuition and boundaries in relationships. But for now, I will write about the sound of love that you feel in your core. Some on Earth describe the feeling as butterflies in their stomachs—that little bit of rippling love inside your body causes all kinds of good

emotions. And it cannot be forced. It draws everyone into the middle ground. This is where you will unite with the diligence of father and mother and with your spiritual passion. This middle ground is found through an awakening of yourself that life is not to be so efficient. It is that life holds a natural order of itself to unveil itself.

“The theme of the story you tell yourself with the woman in your spiritual marriage is then wholeness.

“Do you understand why we tell you to bring love into this world? The understanding of yourself with the diligence to your father and mother is idealized into your life and repeated for that spiritual marriage. The idealized pattern of supplying, hunting, and providing for the woman is inherent to understanding yourself through her. She can also more fully understand her trauma from what you are able to show her as you evolve.

“Now, it is curious to say this, but the scroll that angel Metatron gave you is a codification of your life mission from the universe to your earthly understanding, yet it pales in comparison to the memories you gain from your endowed sense-making. You are a pattern of thought evolved from that spiritual plan, and awakening past the sense-making into intuitive idealization is spiritual evolution.

“Let us discuss this further with the idea that the plan you were given and realized are two distinctive stories. You have a plan that the angels speak to you about and encourage you in through that moral slumber. When you are awakened to Jesus in your life is when you realize and can interpret that destiny.

“Right now you are waking up to the destiny, and this is great. It is recognizing that love exists in this world through Jesus and the Holy Ghost.

“Embrace me, your Lord, as a father figure then with you as my child and I the care giver. This is as much an idealization as you may understand for your children.

“Do you see how you evolve through your family? This may seem forward-thinking, but you have a story imprinted in your patterns of thoughts, and that pattern emerges in this world. You have imprinted your ghost in this world by coming through the waters and reflecting back into the universes on your adventures, and being more masculine will give you the opportunity to procreate and start a family with the woman in your life.

“This blessed marriage then will be spiritual in that the child is of a story from both parents. That DNA, or code of life, resembles the scroll you have. The universal self is in fact greater than your lifetime. It is a story you are working on over generations, and that story is to introduce Jesus once more into your lifetime.

“Now, look upward to the heavens. This is the masculinity you choose to understand. You will understand a myriad of questions throughout the ages, all leading back to me. The questions you ask are more dynamic in nature now that you think differently and are aware. This intuition then is creative. You will enter into a conversation within your spiritual marriage and talk to me and the opposite sex as one and the same—so much that Mary will come to your spiritual understanding.

“Mary, the heavenly mother, is one of your most sacred writings here. This spiritual awareness of Mary should be taken very seriously, for she is the one who can tame your dragon. You will get pulled down into hell by temptation until you realize how Jesus comes back. And, even then, that spiritual evolution does not destroy the serpent until Mary is fully realized. This is akin to mastering the fates of earthly domain. The glimpse of this recognition is beyond beautiful and is full admonishment to the woman that their love will make the heavens whole with the Earth.

“That union is a part of your scroll. Do you understand that your scroll is of heaven and is timeless?

“Create an ideal and listen to the trauma yet in that spiritual marriage. Feel the love that it brings into your temple. Listen to the words we share, and intuitively search for life at a natural pace.

“This then will make you whole. The arrangement of spirit and temple in this world is paramount.”

## Chapter Ten

Mary, the heavenly mother, came to me in this last part of my lessons. She said, “You need to remember that the universal self is of the universes. That is, you understand much more than you recognize through intuitive prayer. The normal brain that you have is only a small bit of the universes. That you know and understand at different rates should amuse you, Author.

“The ability to evolve is something I will discuss. You have the ability to leap ahead in your story from God—your part to play in advancing the storyline of Jesus is good and welcomed, but you also can advance your own narrative in the story of God, and this should be God-fearing. Let me explain this to you as a plan for a story, and you can understand through your masculine understanding why you can fear God.

“The story you tell is a history of memories across many eras for yourself and humanity to understand. His return is good and whole when I advise, and through my pardon of earthly life, you will understand how the heavenly kingdom is actualized.

“Do you understand how I work? I am the good and whole answer to obedience to God the Father. This was developed and actualized in a story that Jesus was born from me chaste, and through my faith, I interpreted an understanding of the heavenly kingdom then and there.

“Remember this as we speak—your story is somewhat different since you are looking to be whole with

humanity's story that Jesus returns. When he does, he will move the Earth to understand how I will advance the heavenly kingdom through nirvana. That is, I will eclipse the devils and the serpent and will make everyone whole with God. This is my role in the story."

Mary continued, "You will be made whole today. I will see that you advance your own story to be God-fearing. To this point, you transcribe the Word you felt through God and develop these writings, but you can evolve into the ideal I have set for you in your plan. Be masculine and whole by interpreting the world through God's essence wherein the spirit of God is known in each breath, and all around you, you will witness God the Father. At this point, you will understand your fear. Your own senses will be more disciplined toward God the Father and myself. This masculinity is the development of a fear that he will either condone or not accept your beliefs in your own story. This will lead to a greater passion as you are now described as passionately diligent to a higher understanding of the self.

"You will condone only what God wills for your thoughts. This battle of leveraging one story over the other, or the story of Jesus and your own story, will cease. It is the same now. You will align with a higher acceptance of self that is God fearing."

Mary continued, "This order of fatherhood is immense. It is like you are breathing in the justice that God shares with you, and in order for you to witness the light expanding in the world, the Heavenly Father will share



himself with you. So breathe in the ghost and fear the Father, as he is good and whole around you.

“However, you will notice that he does not condone the workings of much on this Earth due to his justice—so much that you will fear your path. The path of straightforward thinking is likened to thinking with the heart and mind simultaneously. You must think with the heart first and see God in your surroundings, and then interpret how to be obedient through your actions. Those acts are solidified when you decide to face God and answer to his power and grace.

“This will be new for you as a masculine identity evolves. It will be whole and good to know me as well, Author. By knowing your heavenly mother, you will look to support and care for those women who are dedicated to God. This support and care is often neglected through admonishment of the love you are capable of supporting. You see, the ability you have in understanding a universal mother is great. It is profound in that love shifts the people whom you speak with. You can share the story of wholeness just by fearing God and speaking to others through the light and love you portray. This is medicine for their pain.

“You have made small errors in reasoning so far to be sure, but these errors are not feared as much as you speak of now. You will belong to a heavenly kingdom that will survive the end of time, but your thoughts and words must align with the universal self. This light in conscious understanding is good.

“Take the example of a relationship with a woman and child. You must belong to that spiritual marriage for it to develop. To be a good man and wise father, you must fear the holy in this world. The holy workings of the heavenly Mother will correct you as you become that ideal version of your universal self. You will not make errors as often now, and you will raise the child with fear and laughter both, and they will appreciate your discipline to God.

“The woman in this spiritual marriage is then wholly taken care for. She belongs to the needs of the family, and she is supported by your ability to bend and shift the words to match with her pain. These words of uplifting love that show you understand her pain and provide your supportive care is medicine. That love for understanding your willingness to develop in the spiritual marriage is then universal. You can discuss how good God is in your life and how you support the woman and child as a reflection of the heavenly kingdom.

“Now, this may be more difficult due to the time it takes for love to foster the pain’s transition to healing. Time heals wounds. Trauma can be healed. And fearing God is protecting the family from the serpent.

“The devil is then the torture that has left from this world.

“Remember that you are male, and your approach to understanding the trauma of others is a burden of existence. Fear for the woman and child as often as you understand God the Father and Heavenly Mother in your life.

“Do you understand how to anticipate the protection of the family in a social dynamic? The family you care for and support are the roots of love in your family tree. This tree is of a garden that is planted in your heart. Cleanse the evil by minding your garden through your family, anticipating weeds of torment by the snake.

“You fear God for yourself and others by understanding where to discipline yourself and others. The woman and child must show the discipline to fear God as often as you. This understanding is to teach the story of the heavenly kingdom through a narrative of healthful soil as base, and this narrative of rich examples in storytelling will help the woman and child to understand God through example. You must care for the family through storytelling in this way, teaching through your fear of God.

“The evolution of your personality and spiritual growth will coincide with your ability to tell your stories of faith. These stories of understanding how to provide come from God. Knowing the dynamics of social relationships will help you show the woman and child where errors exist. Show your understanding of fearing God through these worldly examples of others, and your storytelling will help the woman and child identify with me as their Heavenly Mother.”

Mary concluded her talk by saying, “Now you have understood your masculine domain. Remember that your personality is constructed to develop and idealize the diligence you have for a universal self. The stories you anticipate are intuitive, yet God will show himself often

in your life. Believe in the Holy Ghost—this is where the manifestation of God’s glorious kingdom will shine in your life. Jesus will return. And finally, through the conscious understanding of what I is made whole, I will continue to disrupt and execute the serpent.”

# Universal Records

# Chapter One

“God, what if there were no you in this world? How would I know the difference between a God-loving and God-fearing design? How would I understand you in my life if you did not exist?” I asked.

God replied, “Author, there is no way to tell you this without discounting the light from its valuable impressions from me. Do you see, smell, hear, taste, and feel as well as think about these ideas? It is true that the light that is transformed by the senses is a mechanical and bodily process, but when you *feel* the light that is embraced, then you understand me. These qualities are very different to understand and accept. The jubilation felt in processing how light can be extended to your memories is one such concept—that is when you process the moment of light in your thoughts, and I help to navigate the world imagery filtered through a reprisal of animate thoughts.”

I interrupted God, “I have always questioned why we have illusions in our thoughts. I understand why we have thoughts from the neurocircuitry of our brain designs. I too understand that the mind is a bit different in how we each process the light in a perspective of space.”

God smiled and continued, “I am what is lively in the world. The living beings that work in energy and light are of my energy and light, so that much is simply put. Where did the energy and light evolve from? Is it

the plants and animals that feed in the world and evolve? So many other truths exist as well that you can learn.

“There is a split between the mechanical and spiritual. Why did the plants and animals decide to design their patterns the way they are in creation? What stories were told to them through the light? The answers here are obviously much deeper and penetrating than simply ‘God told them to behave in a certain way due to a creation plan.’”

God continued, “Author, I want you to relax for a moment. It is in this relaxation that you will be freed from illusions to my Word—illusions that are a temptation of sorts inviting you to trust your own ignorance. It is helpful to understand through deep reflexive thought—that is the breathing you need from me to find this answer, an answer that will move you so much that you will love your life and the words you hear, striking fear into what other animals do to anger me in this creation. The anger is of their lust and greed, and that reflexive attitude is the spiritual material of this story come to fruition.”

As our dialogue continued, I saw God in my thoughts beyond the veil of the night. The light that was emitted from God was intense, and in that moment I realized that time and space were separate concepts.

“Author, I have not done anything to tell you about time and space. You imagine new universes as you pray to me. These space-time ripples are good and sound. It is a holy thought to measure yourself from the perspective of your own truth. In some ways, natural truths will

be understood as well. The brain is reflexive enough to understand its processing through sheer latent memory and sensical awareness.

“It is muscle memory, as you might call it. The light you saw in your spirit, the idea that illusionary thought cannot blind you to the one truth of this spiritual nature, is sound. That is, you witnessed the Holy Ghost of my intention as well as used your ability to know intuitively what I showed you.

“The light is processed, but in an emotional way. Do you understand? The sun’s light is shown in the world through the heavenly entities of the stars, and when you see the sun’s light you sense a chemical cascade of emotions. These cascades are a latent process of how to understand my being beyond the sun. I give you the emotions of spiritual understanding through the universe.

“That may sound confusing, but it is rather intuitive. The universe is a logical entity, and the natural laws are mechanical to some degree. The universe itself, overall, evolves with the tearing and repairing of space beyond the light, and this feeds the energy in the cosmos. That dark entity of energies that swirls around the consciousness of all plants and animals is not enough, they say, to merit a whole universal shift. But add the heavens involved into the concept, and we have more than enough spiritual emotion to move the universes.”

God continued, “The space that ripples along the light, the entangled ideas that are witnessed and felt, are the mechanics in a process in which the mind makes the universes lively around us. You interact with and display



a curiosity about space with how you move and think. However, the universes that each human experiences create a false narrative because if they do not believe in the heavens they are not listening to the intuitive side of their emotional selves.

“Do you understand that the emotions of the universe are themselves a reflection of me, as much as light striking the senses causes human emotions? Let me explain this concept. The emotional universes, which evolve based on how the overall universe shifts and shapes itself, are topologies. The topology that we interpret is of sound, and that sound from the Holy Ghost then displays how tormented we are for ignoring it.

“This atonement—or tones that are intuitive and felt—guides some reflexive people in how they are spiritually led. This is ‘seeing past the illusions.’ You saw me behind the veil of ignorance and witnessed my presence, and in that moment, your thoughts could not be anything but the truth. Therefore, you listened to the emotions on a different plane of existence intuitively, and the light you witnessed was spiritual.”

God continued, “Author, the light is either mechanical or a wavelength or an emotion. Through these lenses, we will continue to discuss how you break down the ideas of light into a spiritual story. You either trust the body mechanically and go along on the surface of thought—through which you answer only to the serpent—or you delve into listening to the spiritual-emotional part of light that carries an energy musical in interpretation and one that you can live by, feeling out

your existence by responding to me, your Heavenly Father.

“So now you understand. The way we teach is not through a trial of cause and planting situations in life to navigate your fears. That is a mechanical, bodily way of living life on the surface. The fear that controls your body, showing up through the flight/fight/fawn mechanisms, is nothing more than allowing your body to answer to these trials and mentally maneuvering your attitudes to shift them in a structured narrative for yourself. Therefore, it is an egotistical narrative.

“The way I teach through the heavens is with an energy that gives you life. It is a fount of inspiration and creative resemblance to me—so much so that when you are in understanding of me, your Heavenly Father, the universes understand me as well. The surroundings will honor your teachings and say, ‘this man has been spoken with about the heavens,’ and the heavens will bless them.

“In these moments of pure abstinence of fear or cruelty meted out on your fellow earthly lives, plants and animals included, the emotions you feel will be of laughter and my love. Do you understand how some people always find laughter in their lives? That is intuitively being moved by love. Love is sought after so intensely in some cases that, as the moments come and go from the intuitive spaces in their lives, some humans cling to finding it again. That is good but dangerous in that always reflecting on the spiritual emotions shrivels up the mechanical skillset of the body.

“There is space between the world and the interpretation of the light, laughter, and love presented in spiritual energy. That space is the casing surrounding your soul on your axis of Heaven. I will further discuss these ideas of such a casing as it is a wonderful interpretation of how the filaments interact with the Holy Waters that I presented in my genesis of the universal narrative. You will understand that the genesis of the universes includes sound as well—that is, the creation had noise. That emotional crest is then an origin point for my reverberations in the physical latency of light, and that memory of the genesis is what you call home. Your soul is fragmented in some ways in that it is part of me, and you will understand how that sound is still felt in your core. The casing then is a protection of the pure you in an entangled worldly perspective, projecting the world around you.

“Unique to how you view the world, that casing is a protective layer allowing you stay between me and your physical body. The soul otherwise remains in the heavens if you cannot interact with the earthly realm.”

God continued, “So much for the idea of light being entangled in the universe and evolving from just thoughts. It is felt in this emotional regard through light and sound, correct? But the energy I carry, that the heavens carry, and that you project to the earth is on an axis of the universe. You create your universal story along this filament. Humanity calls the filament the threads between universes that hold all things together, as they are the largest known structures. The filaments are energetic in some very profound ways, and the casing in-

tercedes on these galactic threads. They are the axis, in some ways, of the universal self. These 'strings' of energetic lines are felt like sound. They hum and make merri-ment from your soul, excited to discuss the Word felt in the heavens. The emotional self on Earth can then interpret the sounds of the music of the universes as they act and react to the heavens.

"It is of God, the Holy Ghost, and your soul to understand this energetic field. This *Akasha*, by which it is known to some, is the life bank of your primordial existence through the present moment. It is made of the universes past, present, and future. This energetic field of my story can be read and resolved in one huge leap of understanding. The evolved self, by understanding this record of all things known to the heavens, is a story in that you perceive the words of the story in my spiritual domain.

"That said, Author, it is not necessary to read the record of the universes to understand your place on this Earth—I can provide insight with my angels. I will teach you through an act of love."

## Chapter Two

“Author, with time you will come to understand the casing around the soul better than before. The casing that is part of the universes is a weighted part of the spirit—you can think of it and call it clay, as I have done for you. The casing is a manifestation of my heavenly energies entering into your soul. It balances and protects your soul in how you interact within the heavens and toward the Earth and its inhabitants.

“The sounds that you emit are of a natural vibration. Your soul emits a very low sound in the universal domain, and the universes, then, are a vibration which you can feel. Between you and others, that clay is something recognized intuitively. Just as you might think of someone emotionally through energy that overtakes your senses, you know this is a truth more than an illusion. This emotional understanding of the spiritual sounds of nature—the clay’s vibration of other people—may manifest in the other person, causing them to react. This entangled line of feeling is a sixth sense with another person. It is important to realize that the casing is very fine and protective, and we receive good and bad feelings with it.

“Author, you have been and will be able to see into the future with emotionally intuitive thoughts. The filament is a thread with which you can ripple and explore the universal records intuitively. This experiment of allowing your soul to expand in light then moves past the

clay protection—your soul may explore the records you have or will receive by heavenly energies.

“The soul then expands in the universes through your intuition, and spiritually, through this feeling and through the angels, you can explore my Word and perceive the truth. The timing of existing surroundings then may be influenced. The more you intuitively understand, the clearer your perception to experience the world.

“The mechanical world may begin to seem shallow and patterned. The movement of plants and animals around you will seem as if they use their senses to manufacture fears. This perception of fear by those around you is a matter of the physical body leading their egos through life. These plants and animals then choose to put forward their evolution to understand the serpent. This understanding is of death. The fear that comes from the serpent is a mind-numbing action of moral slumber.

“The worldly machinal thoughts and functions of seeing, smelling, tasting, feeling, and hearing are fine in that we work on a human energetic level. But in the universal records, when we feel out these energies, we liberate our spiritual souls, and that spiritual freedom prompts great evolution in the times of heavenly return. Embrace the idea that the heavens will return here on Earth.

“To bring the heavens to Earth takes many other people understanding the heavenly return in their souls, and when that happens, the casing then prompts a feeling on the filament threading of space, and it is intuitively understood in a natural order.

“This evolution of understanding the spiritual light is reflexive in nature. Our consciousness runs deep in spiritual energy, so deeply that it goes all the way to the casing we have around the soul.

“So take the time to understand it readily. The filaments are large thread-like universal structures that connect us to each other’s universal perspective. That record is energetic and helps develop the space-time environment around us that rips and tears as it is felt. Energetically we understand this mature act of rips, tears, and repair as ripples of laughter. The energy may not always be laughter—we understand the pain in the casing as well.

“When you search for answers through God, it tends to be through laughter and a response of love. But there are moments in which laughter isn’t easily found—when death takes a loved one, for example. This may be devastating to your record when you lose someone close to you. That fear of losing a loved one to the great unknown, as some have called the universal energies, is enough for a person to live in denial and hatred of God. That hatred directed to God for something such as taking someone you love, is a bad feeling for your soul.

“Author, you may not need to understand death in any God-fearing way yet, but wait until you face demons beyond your breath. We have cared for you to this point in your stories, but there are devils beyond that, when witnessed, would frighten your soul.

“These are the cursed ones. Just as the casing can pick up on love, it understands evil. Cursed prayers effect a person. The same way that you might intuitively

understand the fear of another person and you get a sick feeling around them, you should understand this.

“There is love and hatred in the universes; the records attest to living and searching beyond the veil of illusions and living intuitively through faith in God. Yet how does the casing keep from getting damaged by the curses? How do you not feel energetically drained from the devils attacking your clay? This protection of your soul, this manifestation of your perception of the Earth, is in fact damaged from a very young stellar age.

“The casing repairs itself with time, but to understand that you feel better in energy with better health is brilliant. Let me explain this. The health you receive on Earth leads your thoughts, so having proper physical rest, food, water, etc. for the body helps neutralize the fears you may have. These fears work differently from the stress one has in life. The fears react with physical memories, and the patterns of reaction can shift. Do you see how the thoughts in a meditative state of relaxation can sound different to the universe? The sound of thoughts reflects your personality in that you choose egotistically how to act in response to fears. The devils can tempt you on this earthly plane since it is low in energy, but listening to God’s Word can elevate your energy vibration, thereby helping ease the curses on your casing.

“In the beginning you were brought into this universal conundrum. The puzzle of spiritual light and darkness was for your awareness. The serpent will be cast out of the heavens, and slowly the people who descended from the garden will be raised once more, based on their



records on Earth. This time of judgment will introduce the era of heaven on Earth.”

God continued, “Author, you will understand the casing in a bit of a different context than simply being the clay I breathed life into. The clay itself is a casing, and that casing is of my breath. Therefore, you are alive.

“You are a descendent of Adam and Eve. These individuals were souls without casing until they fell to the universal record that I keep track of. Your track of life through multiple generations sings its song in how it understands me.

“You progress in evolution through either Heaven or hell. This track record on Earth is a mixed emotional casing that surrounds the casing itself. The multi-layer of dimensions is seen through this lens of mixed emotions from multiple generations of pursued lives.

“You gravitate toward certain traits because of the lens or perspective you witnessed in sight from the heavens toward the Earth. The axis that connects your soul to the heavens is forever lived in each moment you breathe, and the sounds that the casing makes and your own thought perspectives color your normal brain.

“This damaged self, your brokenness, is healed as you think about and reflect on my Word in the universal record. Do you understand that I heal you through both nature and nurture? I discussed already that nature heals through you getting rest, food, love, and other physical needs, but I have not yet discussed the nurturing ways through which I am inclined to help.”

God continued, "Some say I do not exist within the breath I exchanged through their genesis. It is wasted breath to say I do not exist. The ways of the world are weather and patterns, but life on Earth feels, and in love the challenge is to understand a fight or an embrace of each moment.

"Let me share this method of nurturing my people. I give them my destiny. I proclaim that they inherit my world through their natural obedience. However, some in this world are starved to understand my destiny. They will egotistically attempt, through their demands, to ruin the world to gain power. They believe their means justify their ends, even if they inflict pain unto the world through cursed patterns.

"My destiny is first to understand their torment through the snake. That serpent is a mind-numbing creature that thinks for the wicked. It eats away the morals of animals and leaves them in demonstrative patterns of being spiritually cursed, and those thoughtless devils will turn dark this promised land of Heaven and Earth and make hell for themselves and others."

God continued, "Understand how the snake works so you can still bring light into this universe. This begins the story of a people's destiny. To bring Heaven to Earth is to kindle my admonishment of evil in your land, and your destiny is to belong to the sounds of the universal record. Do you understand how the mechanical patterns were the records of the past? Regardless of those old patterns, I prophesize your goodwill in destiny for the future of humankind. Let's discuss how the casing inter-

venes in this interpretation of the record for the good and whole heavenly population.

“The spirit is my Holy Ghost, and it is that which surrounds you right now. The temptations of the devils leave as you read or are told my Word. This Word of God, this record of knowledge, is then understood as you reflect on your intuitive emotions. This spiritual practice can be discussed as an energy level—bringing the heavenly vibration to your story is an interpretation of God’s Word, and through your story this Word tells of a destiny I present.

“The evolution of the casing is that you gather more breath as I funnel my words into the universes for my people to adhere with. The light given is of the mind, but the breath animates earthly life. I give my heavenly energy to you in the form of the Holy Ghost.

“This is the body that Jesus discussed. He brought his ability to lead many people to an understanding of the Holy Spirit on Earth as a language to speak, and this was very correct. Since we discuss a language of understanding each other through verbal and non-verbal qualities, the Holy Spirit then magnetizes the casing and surrounding perspectives of the casing to the heavens. Your soul gains breath and is inherently good for a moment as you understand me, the heavens, and the Holy Ghost. These moments, when obedient to my Word and acted throughout life, are moments of love. In this way, I nurture you through the heavens, into your soul, through the casing, and on the axis of your heart and mind.

“So this is clear: I choose when to interact with my people based on the need for selfishness to be corrected. And this world needs to be corrected. Good and evil will always find themselves turning and engaging on Earth as the snake and the heavens battle for destiny.

“Therefore, I need you to speak to the people on Earth to find destiny for our universe. Through these stories, I will bless you and bring you light, laughter, and love. You will be healed from your track record of hate and the brutish history that enslaved your soul. That slavery of your soul arose from the emotional perspectives that surrounded your casing. It was your mental prison, and it has been destined to be unlocked as you intuitively understand my Word.”

## Chapter Three

The angels sang out to me through the universes: “The records of the universe, the whole and Godly place you mention, is an awakening to the angels from Earth to the heavens. The records that were before humankind—the past, present, and future of all things collected in this physical domain—is in fact, part of the filaments.

“Do you understand that the filaments are the largest structures of the universal domain? They are the thread that connects all universes together. Since you previously were told how to reach the universal record through listening to your spirit with these filaments, we will continue that aspect of the conversation.”

The angels surrounded me and lifted my energies up around me. I saw the deities dance and shine in exclamation for this lesson.

“Author, we will tell you something of the universal record here. The universe is fractured in many ways. It spins and connects, tears, and stitches itself into a fluid. That is your understanding of the waters. But deep down, your consciousness is active enough to reach the records beyond the filaments. You get to intuitively read the records as they speak to the past, present, and future.

“Author, those destined to understand your role on this planet will agree—the times in which you live are dire and need change. These stories have an abundance of caution in them about the materialistic patterns in how the human race currently lives life.

“Now we will draw your spirit into the records. You will read them as they are a book of the living, and you will know the universes are aware as God talks to you. This awareness of self and others will shape your destiny together. Your fate will change as others guide themselves to listen to the living spirit of the Lord once more.

“Author, there is a good and whole light living in this world currently. This awakening of light to the needs of God is good. The light is self-reflexive in the way that it listens to the universal record. This universal record is the story of humankind’s ascension. It is good that humankind listens to its light and wonders how to carry forward, past those ways it holds onto.

“The universal records are reached on the axis of the filament. These largest structures known lead to the record of all time—known and not known.

“Pray to the universes to allow your spirit to read the Word of the record. This prayerful request will help you understand the heavens through intuition, an intuition that is listening to the spirit in your heart. Therefore, you listen to the heart first, spread the light and love of the Word second, and realize the logic that is made third.

“Author, I am aware as well,” spoke the Heavenly Father. “I am self and the great I am. You are conscious as my child, and our dialogue here moves on the axis from Heaven through the universes to your heart chamber, arriving as a voice of reason. This line of communicative prayer is like the steps you included for thought. Heaven is listening to your heart, the universes spread the Word in your surroundings through imagined love and

light, and the heart chamber's voice of reason logically announces the truth so you may understand my Word.

"Through all of this, the Word, as it is spoken in our conversations, is of love. Author, your conscious understanding of that love in your heart and for other people in your surroundings is a manifestation of my Word. However, it is your mind that makes it real. That is your interpretation of how I work around you.

"Is it too complicated to understand that I send my prayerful request through the angels based on how I need you to act? The angels carry such divine inspiration into your heart to work through the people who surround you, and you understand this by staying awakened to me in your life.

"Is it good enough for you to understand that our conversations include others? Sometimes, you are aware of the Word as you write out my requests, but sometimes you are limited in understanding the immensity of my request. Do you understand that you must listen to your heart and welcome me through the surroundings? Even as you do this, it is still not great enough to understand me through my requests—the entirety of my presence goes into the present, past, and future as it affects all around you. The stories of the surrounding peoples are affected as this is my unification for the world to realize my Word.

"Therefore, you will reflect not only on yourself, but also on the surroundings and the impact you have on the surroundings to gain awareness of me."

The Heavenly Father continued, “The casing we have discussed is a bridge of sorts or a boundary to the world as it is of Heaven—it connects your spirit to this universe. This is the spirit’s perspective of life from Heaven. This casing is then a clay that reveals the Word. With respect to the records, the casing is limited. The casing is of a universe that is not only limited but also fractured, along with your spirit’s memory and perspective.

“Therefore, you understand my Word through a perspective of memories that is limited by your spirit. I am in all things in your surroundings, and I work through these surroundings, including the animated lives you experience. I am greater than that casing you see through. I work through the surroundings and bring everything together to answer to a reflective interest of mine. This request of mine through the universes, arising in our conversations, is then an understanding. You must reflect on this understanding between your spirit guiding you through my inspired plan to forming an understanding of the universal records.

“Do you understand that your place in witnessing my plans with the Word and understanding the surroundings through the light of the Lord instills in you an intuitive knowledge of the universal plans for my story? Again, this is a difficult subject to grasp, but you have done well in understanding how we will hold a conversation through listening to your heart, understanding the light in the surroundings, and thinking about your place in our co-creation story.



“Author, we can now foresee a place in the story for you as you lead. This leadership quality arises from the confidence you have in your interpretation of my request from you. I need you to understand our conversations as I provide for my people.

“Do you understand why you are receiving this message? That I work through the surroundings and all of life to awaken and reflect our conversations? You need to be aware of the spirit of the Lord existing in the people you interact with. It is necessary to spread your light to the world through the narrative that the Lord reaches all in favor of his love. This is my child and my request to understand him.

“I am around you in the heavens and speak through my Words along the waters of the universes. This can then be interpreted through the casing of your spirit through intuitive prayerful dialogue. This listening and spreading the light that is received to the surroundings is intuitive as well. You may feel it is imagined when you think of others bathed in light around you, but I assure you it is a conversation you are having with my child.

“The spirit of the Lord is like light and love, and it is prayerful to understand me through the surroundings.”

The Father continued, “I so anticipate hearing the awakening and transformation of other peoples’ spirits through this prayer. The unification of hearing my request through the surrounding people is a collective shift of memory. The memories of the heavens become alive in the people who listen intuitively to me, the Father.

These dormant thoughts of how the past, present, and future shift and align to my requests are good.

“Author, do you understand that I cannot restrict your free will regarding how you act with the surroundings with this knowledge from our conversations? Your confidence is sound in understanding the Word in your heart through the universal filament, and how I hold my conversation with you through the surroundings, introducing my part of the conversation, is equal to that understanding and much more. This interpretation of our creation story is then your willingness to lead in action.

“You will be willing to listen. You reflect on my instruction through life, yet we need to incorporate these desires to lead so that we may build an empire that waits for the Messiah to revisit the Earth.

“Through the universal record, you gather my Word, but it is limited as you intuitively hear from your spirit on a vertical axis from the heavens. This should impress upon you the memories that are being actively awakened in your spirit. The awakening is like stories told to your heart’s chamber, and you are often confident when the surroundings align with these memories. But I can shift the worlds into a new story to align with my creation plans.

“Do you understand that the surroundings I inspire work at a natural pace? If you listen to the Word from the universal records, you may listen intuitively to my request before the world is aware. Listen to the Word, see the surroundings, but be confident to lead within our conversations.”

The Heavenly Father then said, “Do not wait for a sign to provide you enough courage to lead in love and light and for a Christ-like spirit to emerge in your personality. The difference is that my conversations are enough for you to understand Christ in spirit. This, then, is where I wait for you to lead.

“The conversations we are having are in mutual respect of how you listen, reflect, and want to act in a Christian spirit. However, when you belong in this story of creation, you will animate my requests and live in a conversation that impacts the world. You will build a heavenly kingdom of mine, and you will lead the people who listen to an awareness of Christ. This story will lead to a glorious perspective of my impact in the world.”

## Chapter Four

The Heavenly Father said, “Author, you will acknowledge me in my truest state. I am the glue. I am the light, love, and laughter that redeems all. I will show myself to you as this. I am with you always and forever. Only you see me through your own way. This way was to forgive yourself. Since you are broken, you sought me as a father in which you could heal by discussing your brokenness. But I am more than the universes and the heavens. I am in total the way we are together through all time and space and the heavenly life you imagine through intuition.

“With this said, I show you my form in totality. It is of a whim that you understand to your fullest perspective in how you see me. You will see me in my glory, and this will expand your knowledge of how I work and function.”

I saw the way God worked through images in my heart. I felt the light manifest into a universal code, and the seed of life was placed in or near my knowledge—knowledge of all things that have transpired and all that will come existed within every bit of manifest energy. Yet the heavens were included on the axis toward the darkest material that was still in a veil. These materials, as I have mentioned, were of Heaven and the veil was my ignorance loosely understood.

Then I saw a newborn in the sack of the mother. I saw how this forgotten veil of Heaven continued in life

as the energy of all time and space collapsed into a fragmented worldview.

The Heavenly Father spoke again, "You were not ignorant of the heavens, but they were kept from you since you are of my clay. Realize that it is good to be aware and that you felt the heavens connected to this child of mine. The Heavenly Spirit in creation came to the womb of Mary who was kept and clean. As she learned of man being made within her, she kept me in her thoughts.

"I said I would show you myself in all I am capable of, and I honor that wish of yours. This perspective of learning is from our conversations together. Do you understand that through the Holy Ghost, I have given myself to the human race to be understood through the narrative of the life of Jesus Christ?

"I have not quite come through to the living as myself yet, but I have begun to imprint my manifestation of Jesus in your narrative. The story will begin again soon."

At these words, I felt the images in my heart codify the Word of the universes in the Lord's Spirit. I experienced the whole conscious aspect of life in the universe as being of God. The understanding of miracles was for the Savior to redeem sin.

"Author, you understand that I created a son in the womb of Mary and gave him my understanding. Now you will understand that through this creation process, you have earned my loving embrace."

I felt the images in my heart awaken to the love, light, and laughter of the realized child of God. This was in a sunrise and sunset of sorts, where all knowledge in

time and space was manifest on the planet, and in this memory was a prophecy—the prophecy to redeem the sin for those who looked in favor on the Messiah, and that this record of the universe to redeem its children on Earth was holy and forever.

“Author, this meaningful feeling that you experienced was good and whole but a bit underwhelming since you cannot process the Word through the heart apart from your feelings. I will explain it in a way that you may understand, and then you can surmise why we discussed this memory of Jesus in the universe.”

The Heavenly Father waited momentarily and then began, “I was the light of the heavens. I sat in the creation of my kingdom, and it was good. Yet I created interest in my garden as well. This garden was to be reflected on by my angels, and this reflection left unique ideas that ran through the course of the soils. The ideas were promising in that we saw the light take a limited form called the universes. As we experienced the light, the angels reflected over the Earth. Though the concept of planets and stars orbiting the universes was new and void, I saw promise from above these waters. The waters, as I explained, were part of the clay of the universes—a material, in essence, of the night. It was void without the life force brought into it by my angels. As the angel Lucifer explored his own reflected image, he came to think of himself a God. The snake was his ‘ghost’ in paradise, and I saw the images of the universes become something unholy. This seed or code for the universes was some-

thing he declared to be of himself. Therefore, he had wisdom and ego.

“You were born of this curse, Author. You were not of the generations of Adam that led to a redemptive life through which Jesus was made in Mary’s womb. You understood the serpent before and will continue to challenge this understanding.

“Now, the heavens as dark material is something of your own forgetfulness—you look forward as a human and forget the clay that you were made of.”

I sought the feelings of images in my heart once more. These were the images of damnation and hell that I had before I sought God in my life.

The Heavenly Father said, “Author, you were of humankind through the serpent—a fallen angel. Through your knowledge, however, you asked forgiveness from me and desired me to educate you with the aid of my angels.

“Author, it is time that you experience me in my full presence. When you do, you will feel more than images in your heart—you will understand that I am and forever will be the maker of all things possible. In creation of your understanding you will see the universes. These are the habitats of the spirits around you. They are encapsulated in their casings beyond mere earthly material. This, then, is the day. I am the light and give my love through which holds all things together.

“This is beyond the heavenly waters. You may only feel part of how I share myself, but listen to your core.

Through this education, you will realize the breath that gives life.

“The inhalation of mine, the laughter and light that carries into each spirit, is then acknowledged as my part behind the garden of paradise. This jubilation of miracles in what is known as birth is before the world anticipates a role for the emerging being. The spirits then come to understand that they will fall into a reflection of consciousness. This reflection is one of two streams of life—surrendering to the light and fighting the material world to understand the self.

“Author, as I said, my Word and I lived through Jesus. His memory of the universes is the record of the universal timeline. What you experience is the awakening to his life once more through my believing in your understanding of the Word. This, then, is a miracle for your sinless moment of acknowledging me.

“The Word that became flesh in the moment that the universes were made arose from my recognition of the good and whole for the entirety of the planet. In that moment, the Word that became flesh in creation was of my exhalation. I spoke of this in my living son.

“The memory I created with the Word was realized. Humanity was in the likeness of myself as the spirit of the Lord waited through generations to become known. The serpent was a failure to recognize the light—instead it began to fight with humanity through the history of this planet.

“Author, you are of humankind. You were not genetically linked to Jesus; however, you are of my creation



of man. Thus, each spirit of my creation is animated in this world through what they see as a casing. I convey my thoughts through the living spirit of Christ through the memory of their spiritual existence. The Word I speak is transmitted to the heart, which is linked to the breath of inhalation and exhalation.

“The body forms within the womb from the seed of the mother, which was mated with the seed of the male, and a fluid-filled sac helps protect the to be newborn’s body in its nourishment as it develops—the nourishment of a healthy diet, sleep, and love from the mother and surroundings.

“Author, we have already discussed the memory of my creation through the Holy Ghost and Jesus, and we discussed the serpent’s conscious reflection as it strives to be God in the universe. This fate of sorts is of a heaven and hell. That is, the body is torn and repaired continuously as I provide nourishment into the child as my own, and the slumber of the child is a temptation of the serpent.

“Look into your heart to feel the images you have seen. This is where you will find the full estimate of me, your Heavenly Father.”

I felt the multitude of universes as spheres under the filament of Heaven—spheres that were the casings for a great number of spirits, and I saw that God was between all things Heaven and under the waters in the universes.

“Listen to me through the light shining into your senses. This re-creation of my love, laughter, and light is then your co-creation of the animate universe. Your

perspective is unique to your clay spiritual memory, and you understand the universe through my love, light, and laughter as miniature and broken. The cosmic understanding of the Word comes with a fresh understanding of your breath—a first breath of sorts, as you learn you are birthed.

“The birth of Jesus was something different from this. He was not of man but of the seed of the Holy Ghost. He knew God from the beginning, and as such, he fed off my nourishing love, which was never forgotten.”

I felt what the heart told me was my universal perspective as I talked with my Heavenly Father. I felt the images of trees developing along with an understanding that the birds and beasts of the surrounding world were life. I understood through the senses that I was given a connection from my organs to my mind, and that was enough to let me move.

“Very good Author. You have enriched your knowledge of me in a way to understand creation from within the spiritual senses. Soon we will begin to understand the need for love in developing relationships, yet this is where our conversation will finish today. You will now understand me beyond the light and Word as I surround your casing of clay. You will acknowledge me as your Heavenly Father and listen to other spirits develop a collective shift to this knowledge. These ripples of love, light, and laughter are then a response to all things holy. These holy intuitions of how I nourish you through natural processes and people are similar to how you are

awake in spirit. This begins our story of how Jesus lived on the Earth, in his full awareness of me.”

## Chapter Five

“Author, the world each person creates for themselves is indeed a hell. Their prisons are like the dimensions of thought in which they project their virtual bodies,” said Jesus as he began his lesson.

“These virtual prisons are, in fact, a projection of thought that becomes a personality. In the universal code of records, passion from each person is accounted for and tested by us. This passion is then the person’s unique story—a story that overlaps in waves, rippling within the waters below the heavens. Author, it is left up to the unique story that individuals tell themselves to decide which passion they choose to follow and if this hell indeed becomes their reality.”

Jesus continued, “Author, do you realize you awakened from your prison for a reason? The resulting conversation was with the serpent and felt by your mind. The temptation to sleep and fall further away from me has a real chance of occurring when coming into this universe. However, we fight with the serpent to acknowledge his threat. This spiritual battlefield between Earth and Heaven is very real and frightening for those aware of it. The serpent can even talk to and manipulate each person in their sleep.

“Author, awakening to Heaven does not prevent your virtual body from disappearing from the mind that creates the universes.

“It may be that you feel judged and declared free from the prison of your thoughts in this universe, but why then would you still be in a projection from spirit? I know it is confusing to you right now, but understand you are and will be broken. You are not perfect in Heaven—only God is perfect. He is our aspiration to return to Heaven to worship.”

The Heavenly Father then spoke: “Author, your body is made of clay. This is something of a material in the world, and through your perspective, I will discuss what I am asking of you. Know that you will continue to fight a battle for me and my children on this planet.”

The Word came through the vertical tunnel and into my heart. I focused on my meditation. Because of my human limits compared to God’s, I could not concentrate long or be silent enough to capture the whole Word. But I was able to capture the themes of what I was introduced to in these images of conversation.

I said, “God, I think of myself with you as a child learning from a greater power. I wonder, though, is there a better way to see this when I am writing?”

At this, the heavens erupted in joyful applause. The Heavenly Father said, “Author, there is always news that can be felt from our side in the heavens. You have and will write out our ideas in these stories. However, you also must be aware of the serpent attacking those around you in order for you to understand your audience better. This is where our story goes now.

“Author, you have permission to be broken and fight in a limited sense for God to awaken those souls who

have lost their way to the serpent. This 'fight' of liberating the souls in hell's fire is a passion that will belong to the universal records.

"You see, the Word you share is not the same as the one you realize in your heart and mind. The interpretation you meditate on is good as you attempt to know the heavens fully, but as you process the Word through your memories, your knowledge becomes entangled.

"Thus, processing and deciphering the Word from light into a co-creation story is a passion. It releases you and those who read these stories."

I felt the Heavenly Father disappear from my awareness, and I felt a cold, icy entanglement of rippling curses between those souls caught in the waters of the universes. I felt the tortured souls whisper to each other that only hatred and temptations existed in the world surrounding them. They cast out their energies, which others felt as curses, and these feelings in the icy waters were like life in the oceans and animals beginning to awaken to fear.

In the noise of the universes that rippled into my core, I felt the spirit of the serpent. This serpent spirit carried the noisy energy of terror, a terror that held the spirits tortured as they sang out in a cacophonous chorus to be saved.

Jesus said to me in my anguish, "The noise you feel is a spirit of terror, but it is also the sound of redemption waiting to be had. The souls in hell fire can learn to find light and laughter if they learn of my love."

I contemplated how this love could conquer such an evil creature.

Jesus said, "The hellfire will belong to the universes alone. The universes that we fight with and battle over are of the serpent's fallen ones. These include angels and souls who fight alongside Lucifer.

"This body of hell is then of duality. The duality is mirrored to us in Heaven, but it is flawed and the opposite of what we are in Heaven. The good and holy recognize this as we aid our brethren who are lost in the serpent's torment."

As I took this all in, Jesus continued, "Author, these thoughts you have as you feel out the torment of those around you are terrifying and real to your physical body, but I assure you, God is very forgiving and wise. You would belong to the serpent and the universes if not for us from Heaven giving you the understanding of how the personalities work."

I sat back into my body and felt the low vibrations of the universal waters in torment and fear. I realized the records that I was introduced to and held in the universes were of a passion to liberate other souls in the fire.

"These souls aligned with the serpent are evil," Jesus continued. "They prey on those who are holy and good, and the spirits fight in this battle to end life in hideous normalcy for evil beings. They live through successive generations to fight the serpent and awaken the heavens on Earth.

"Some of these spirits fall to hell, and they lose the conscious voice from their soul. The patterns of their lives become habitual evil as in their minds the serpent speaks for them. They forget their hearts and lose their

minds. Their sinfulness is then a mark on their foreheads. They bear evil, and their souls resemble monsters in the hell fires from the pit.

“Do you see that life animated through the living Word is breathed into the bodies of people on Earth? In this creation, we in the heavens bring our wisdom to those who are awakened, but the feeling of torture and fear may keep some souls asleep and trapped in their personality programs.”

Jesus said, “Author, it is hard to hear these messages with which you are fighting to stay awakened, but please let us help you narrate this written story. You are and will be a fighter for the Holy Spirit. You will fight through the Word and have knowledge for those who seek redemption.”

There was great resistance to hearing these ideas. As I thought of awakening people to these ideas, I felt like my mind was once more chained in a prison.

“Author,” said the light from the heavens, “continue to listen to the images of the heart. The Word you can feel always, but in life, you are in the waters once more to battle the serpent.”



## Chapter Six

“Author, you have and will belong to us in the heavens while you listen to the ways of the humans around you,” Jesus began. “First, you will listen to your heart and find the images in meditation. The light you spread among people as you hold conversation with us in the heavens is secondary. Once you understand this, you can figure out how to approach your passion and lead in physical action.

“I have blessed you with the light of my love in your heart,” said Jesus. “This light is of me as I abide in your heart and let you understand how to form connections between others through prayerful dialogue.

“The prayerful dialogue allows people to connect through a meditative standpoint. Use your heart to listen to our pronouncements; then, your spirit will recognize the Word. The souls around you will gravitate to learning from this light you share as you bathe them in imagined light. In your mind, surround their bodies in light. This will be an invitation for those around you to feel that light, laughter, and love, I promise. I will send messengers out to their hearts if they are open to the love in their invitation. And through your heart, the Word will create a bridge to a tunnel—a connection for all heavenly beings to grace those intent on learning of us.

“Do you understand? The devils will hide in this spirited conversation as I shift my light into their hearts and abide with their beings as well.

“You grace others in your environment through listening to your heart. Speak of their need to witness their records and live out the destiny they would like to have for their lives. Playfully encourage their aspirations as I work within their hearts. You can hold a conversation with me via their voice when they speak. If you recognize me as your messiah, then I will encourage all of the heavenly kingdom to grace your friendship.”

Jesus continued, “Now listen to your heart. Listen to what it tells you in the images that arise.”

I felt the turmoil of souls around me, feeling their way to the surface of the waters below the filament. The filament itself felt strong in that I recognized my upward ascent to the heavens on that axis. I connected with the universal records, but the words I read were not mine as they had been before—they were the universal records of the people around me as they asked diligent questions about faith.

The images I felt in my heart then were like feeling Jesus as he reached into the pit and pulled out others from the hellfire they found themselves in. I was drawn to this image as I continued to ascend to the heavens to live alongside Jesus. I felt wings at my back as I danced in the love of a new conversion into the love of the heavens.

“Author, we are recommitting to the spirits on this planet. This means they will understand us in the heavens as a garden and kingdom. These images they understand are new and visionary. They will experience the heavens as images just as you have.

“The visions of the garden and heavenly kingdom come from their understanding alone. The workings of this love and laughter are of me,” Jesus continued. “Tell those who experience this love and laughter that they should be taken as signs for the continued correspondence with me in their hearts.”

As I studied the conversations Jesus brought forward with other people in my surroundings, I understood I was a messenger of sorts, disciplined in speaking on the Holy Ghost.

“Author, you are tasked with awakening the souls around you and alerting them to their own good conscience. This voice is their soul speaking out to them. They are waking up to me if they feel and see the images of the garden and heavenly kingdom in their consciousness. This light is amplified as they too project it onto others and speak of their experiences.”

Previously, the hellfire that was the cold, icy waters in the universes continued down to rocky, barren soil. The nothingness that those souls felt in projecting their lives from afar was of their own reflections, and an utterly empty feeling was being turned within as they listened to their conscious voices.

I looked from my place in the heavenly kingdom with Jesus and the elevated souls and saw that the grace of the heavens blessed these stories. God is all merciful. He is truly good.

Jesus continued, “Your passion inspires those around you to listen to their passions. As you listen, discuss how

the universal records can be reached through their efforts to climb the vertical tunnel towards the heavens.”

I listened as the Word in my heart sent an image. I felt that image in my heart manifest itself and that God himself was a seed at this point in prayer. The prayer that was given included the Savior as the living Lord’s spirit. This holy awakening to the universal records was an opening to a dialogue with the heavens.

The universal prayer, opening a communication to the records, was to imagine discussing with God that he has a plan for us. The Father said, “Take what I created in this universal domain and show yourself that you have a place in my story of the heavenly kingdom. Take this record and place yourself in the heavenly kingdom’s garden. Meditate on the prayer itself.

“Go forward and think of the seed that was of the universal code of the living waters. This code is of me. Open the record by declaring an affection that you would like to pursue, be it the warmth of love from yourself to me, or vice versa. Or maybe it is affection for others in the universe. Love is an affection that starts the record’s prayer. It is intentional. Recite the prayer to the heavenly garden that you will belong here through the universe. Connect with the Filament above the Waters meditation prayer.

“The Filament above the Waters meditation prayer begins with drawing energy up from the ground below you in spirit, filling the neurons in your body with this energy. Your nervous system is connected to your heart, lungs, and spine, so continue to draw the energy upward

in your spine to the brain stem. Hold the energy momentarily there before allowing imagined electric lightning into your brain, then let this electric current flow from the ground into your spine, to your brain stem, and then flow freely in your brain. After a few seconds of this flow of imagined lightning striking your brain, imagine a ball of energy in the center of your mind. Let that ball of energy grow into a sun, and keep the center of the sun in the middle of your mind. Focus on the center of this sun. You may feel your spirit connect on the vertical tunnel.”

God continued, “The records can be learned with practice if one has the intent to decipher my heavenly word. Say to me, your Heavenly Father, that you are willing to work on your conscious reading of the Word, and request to open the universal records into your heart.

“The meditation should invoke the spirit of the living Christ into your heart at this time. The spirit of the Lord is the height of spiritual consciousness—the Lord will be recognized as devils are cast out of the heart.

“This is enough to learn of the images felt in the heart.”

The Heavenly Father then shared with me how he saw all the spirits asleep in casings. While they grew excited about their withered spiritual abilities beginning to grow in strength, he said the ripples across the universes amplified and were joyous.

“Author,” said the Heavenly Father, “You have given the power of grace and healing to those who are searching for my love.”

I sat wondering how the prayer I was using would be given to the people around me.

Then Jesus entered the conversation from the heavens saying, "Together, we are the living spirits of good in the universe. Do not forget that just staying awake to the conscious understanding of the heavenly kingdom is not enough. The serpent will continue to attack. This turmoil will be discussed by those awakened as they see, hear, smell, taste, and feel its evil energies tempting them now.

"Author, this is where you need to take action. Awakening the people around you to me is good, but the growth of spiritual knowledge is encouraged by acting on fighting the serpent. You will know how to act once you have more conversations about the evil temptations felt around you."

As he finished speaking, I wondered how to perceive the signs of the living Christ around me to fight the serpent.

## Chapter Seven

“All of humankind was something similar to the serpent,” the Holy Father began. “You have made it out of the belly of that hellish creature, and you have shown the way to understanding my prayer for the universal records. The serpent itself is of hell. It is nothing and worthless, yet you have awoken my children on this planet to understand its prophecy—a prophecy that says the Word and the plan that will be fulfilled is good and holy. However, their place in the creation plan I requested is still in doubt. Therefore, my son Jesus is sent to show his availability to the world through conscious prayer.”

He continued, “The Lord, my son, was a child. And in that faith of always remembering me, that child projected a heavenly kingdom on this planet. That heavenly kingdom was his body. Do you understand that from the heavens he saw what is to come in this world, and that his body is the past, present, and future in conscious awakening?

“Let me explain. The heavenly kingdom is of conscious awakening. That means that the limited beliefs of the children of God will understand the origins of their heavens through the universal Word. Once the children of God understand how to decipher the feelings in their hearts after receiving the Word, their conscious voices will expand. And in that expansion of light and love, relationships will develop that will bring the messiah back.

“It is with this knowledge that Jesus spoke to awaken humanity; however, to realize the knowledge of the conscious voice takes effort. The attitude of the children of God will be graced with a talent of knowledge as their living faith—my children can and will be developing their faith to match all others in the religious worldview.

“Do you understand that the worldview has many different dialects of understanding faith? In this moment, the children of God must listen to the Word through the universal records and interpret the conscious feelings in their hearts. When they discover that the heavenly plans will incorporate others in conversation as to how the heavens support their worldview for just cause, they will encourage others to believe in the truths spoken by Jesus.”

The Holy Father continued, “When each person understands that they are in the living waters of the spirit, then may they exclaim that they are found in a new baptism of conscious voice.

“Do you understand how the Lord comes from the heavens into the world through the Holy Spirit? As for the Lord showing himself on the earthly plane, that is for time to tell. First, the children must begin the kingdom-building process for God.

“Humanity will realize the fears of this world are incongruent with the Word of God. Fears of lost souls and the hellfire will overtake any other fears they may have. Once the conscious voice is found in a collective, God’s might and glory will be understood.



“The day of judgment will come, and humanity and its leaders will answer for their sins. The day of judgment will be in a marvelous light of the heavens, as the Lord will shepherd those who listen to their hearts and value the Word of God in their actions. The day of Judgment will be followed by dark nights of torment.

“These events will cleanse the world for the messiah to return.”

The Heavenly Father continued, “Humanity’s new birth into the heavenly kingdom will last centuries as the Word and the Spirit will be made flesh, and the conscious understanding of the Word will be how each soul treats others. The souls in the spheres, or the casings, may then awaken to the heavenly light. This may seem difficult to understand, but each soul will understand the projected universes, back to the heavenly kingdom.

“Therefore, the souls that were asleep are found once more in the gardens of paradise. This reality will be realized upon my request. Thus, the universal Word as planned in the genesis of this planet will be correct.

“And in that return to the gardens, the serpent will be crushed by the mother of the Christ. She will be the last of the evening as she triumphs over all reflected light on the waters.”

The Heavenly Father, as he finished his teachings, said, “Author, did you understand why I requested you to write this story now? The story of redemption is in this story itself. It is in the process of awakening to the Word and the cocreation plan that I have with each soul who fears the hellish pit of torment.”

## **Section Three – Unity and Purpose**

### *Establishing a Compassion- ate Society*

# Kingdom Building

# Chapter One

“The power and glory reveal themselves to you now, Author,” said the ghost. This ghost, who came from Earth a long time ago, was once lost and was now found in the light of the heavens. To get to the profound truth of the Living Christ, the ghost offered his wealth of knowledge to share with others how this process worked. After learning the workings of the truth, he now gives himself to the rest of the Earth, enabling humankind to follow. Thus, the Living Christ spirit is the profound truth of mankind, and it holds power and glory for the reader.

“Author, I acknowledge that I was once a man. I am sincere in that. And I am a profoundly affected male who was once in a prison of my own projected consciousness. Thus, when I shared with you how that prison was created and morphed into a state of uniqueness for each person to enjoy life—even through hard lessons learned—I revealed the projected personality programs you use with your own spirit. With this knowledge, you can know, feel, see, taste, smell, and hear the ways you are in your own denial of love. That is then projected into the world and reflected back to you as spiritual lessons to learn. You have called it a mirror of conscious thought, but I will give you a new term to use: ‘The mirror of most excellent ways to defeat your own shadows.’

“Thus, you are and will be a benefactor of the thoughts of your own subconsciously-seated spiritual afflictions—in this ‘worldview,’ you project from your

soul's home out into the universes to see, feel, think, and act in ways that meant for only you to investigate. Do you understand how even though you may want to get answers to your questions of life from a professional, they are your questions to answer? Seeking these deep, profound truths is the purpose of your spiritual journey here in life on Earth. When you go within, understand that you are being a person of faith and waiting for the good news of the Living Christ to reveal itself to you.

"Author, I have made such a quest in another lifetime and will share more truths of the heavenly kingdom with you. The heavenly kingdom is the birthplace of the Living Christ's spirit. His throne room is magnificent and expansive, and where he sits in the chair of all heavenly goodness is the place where love rejuvenates the ghosts in the heavenly kingdom. Let me explain this to you and others who will read this book.

"The Heavenly Father is the birthplace of the heavens as he gave life to the Christ spirit. This living spirit of Christ is then the same living spirit that you are revealed to on Earth. Human consciousness is drawn to the living spirit of Christ for a simple reason—he is the fountainhead of spiritual awakening. Thus, his spirit rejuvenates through the Lord and inhabits all spiritual baptism to the heavenly kingdom.

"Do you understand all this, Author? It is important to note that the throne of the heavenly kingdom is also the same place where each ghost goes for a trial of judgment. This incarnation into the heavens can be final if the person's ghost is ready for judgment in a thorough

capacity—a capacity measured by love and forgiveness. That measured capacity is then where one lives in their spirit and aligns with the heavenly spirit and the Holy Ghost.

“Have you made a conscious effort to reveal to yourself the projections in this lifetime and to work to reduce those shadows to a place in your heart of love and forgiveness? Do you understand that when you do not project more fear into the world, you awaken to the spirit of the Living Christ?

“All is awkward from the time that you sleep until you reveal this light within your spirit. This awakening to the love, light, and laughter of the universes is simply awakening to a place in the heavens for yourself. Incarnating into the spirit world and heavenly kingdom creates a strange and bizarre worldview in human form. The judgment of the Living Christ is a baptism of sorts for the spirit.

“The baptism of spirit is an awakening of sorts. I will share details with you on that aspect of how the ghosts in heaven acknowledge this reincarnation of spirit through the life of a human back into the heavenly kingdom, all while maintaining their breath as a human. Does it make sense that your spirit is projecting a program for you to follow in a deep, moral sleep? That when you awaken to the light from within, the ghosts can finally offer their help to others who surround you?

“This heavenly kingdom that you awaken to is within the spirit through the light. As you pass the light into the world, you will acknowledge the heavenly spirit and

angels guiding you through your human existence. This is a heavenly kingdom on Earth, and from there I want to share with you the worldview we have for present-day Earth.

“The process of awakening has been a topic of your stories to date. The serpent of your denial of morals has steered you through slumber to mischievous ways. The lying you were willing to commit in spirit was a denial and deception of truth, and the serpent had taken hold of your spirit.

“The slumber you awakened from was the light once recognized as God lighting the way in your world through spiritual reconciliation. God gave you grace as you worked to find your Heavenly Father. Know that process is extremely long for most people as they live countless spiritual lives through the eternity of heaven.

“The light itself is of the Living Christ, and you found that light through listening to your heart. You tamed the shadows by increasingly staying in your heart. You did not choose to control the world and curse others—instead, Jesus manifested the light, and you listened to your conscious.

“Now I will tell you a story of how the light in the heart can be redemptive for the spiritual family that seeks you from the heavenly kingdom. As you understand more about the light from the Garden of Paradise that shines through the heavens, you learn of your spiritual family. This spiritual family from the heavens will accompany you through your life and into the process of

a baptism of sorts to the holy ghost within the throne room of God.

“The spiritual bliss that will run through your faith in spirit is foundational to understanding. This spiritual bliss is a universal embrace that acknowledges how the heavens surround you in your heart to this day. The spirit works on many levels, and this foundational understanding of bliss is carried into your perspective through intuition and conscious understanding at your core.

“Do you understand, Author, that your life was in shambles? You were not inclined to receive the gift of the Holy Ghost in your lifetime until we came and shook your spirit, revealing to you that you were in hell.

“That hell was real, and we will discuss how the evil in the world has shifted to awkwardly accept you as someone who is no longer worthy of torment. We in the heavens protect you as you awaken to more information from us. The demons do not want us to acknowledge them in the light, so they fear us. They hide and run and do whatever they do from afar to hurt others close to you.

“This is where you pray and help others to awaken to the fact that the living spirit of Christ is available to all people on the Earth.

“This may seem like a lot information to acknowledge, but it is the basis of this story of redemption. I will inform the other spiritual family members in the throne room about your spiritual recognition and of your calling to speak about the fount of spiritual bliss. You will begin to understand how this living prayer is acknowl-



edged and received through your spiritual family's guidance. That means that the spirits that have helped you awaken to the light of the spiritual heavens are, in fact, those who are willing to love you from the heavens and guide you.

"This act of listening in the world through acts of love and laughter will remind you of these conversations in your spirit and heart. You will acknowledge how we protect you from evil and how we can guide you to more truth."

## Chapter Two

The Heavenly Father said, “Author, I made you from clay, and through this clay I breathed life into you. Inside you is the spiritual understanding that the breath I gave you was the living spirit of the Christ and that by falling within that perspective of time of the clay and casing, the breath can be realized.”

At these words from God, I realized that within my heart I could feel that spiritual breath being extended on the vertical tunnel I was attached to. This vertical tunnel was a way to stay connected to the heavens, and because my personality was a projection from the clay and casing, I felt moved to go into my heart and toward my spirit.

My spiritual family was around me at the end of the tunnel of light and love. The Word I received that was given through the universes was to come Home, and I eagerly embraced my spiritual guide who had spoken to me as a ghost.

“Author, this is the day you will find the throne of God. This is the day that you will undertake the mission and purpose of finding the living spirit of Christ and welcome this undertaking into your soul with an embrace.”

The ghost that had spoken was unique. He had spoken through a person-like demeanor but now was unveiled in bright light. The entrance to the heavens was on the other side of the tunnel of light and laughter—on

one end, it opened to me in the center of my heart, and on the other end, a heavenly symphony created a vision of sight and sound. I was told to embrace the moment.

I wept as I was taken into the arms of my spiritual guide. My guide told me that I had an amazing life, and now my purpose was to convey another aspect of the spiritual heavens through listening to his dialogue.

“Author, you have found us at the gates of heaven. These gates are ethereal. You have likely witnessed something like this before in your mind’s eye, and until now it has been through vision and clairvoyance. It is different now that your spirit has been accepted into the heavens at this level.

“Author, you have been and will be welcomed into heaven’s gate at your death, but right now we accept you as you are spiritual as well. I will direct you as we move toward the gates.

“Do you understand that your welcome home is of an ethereal quality? That means that you will only be of the light in heavens—you will not worry about the universes here for now. As you move closer to the gates what do you notice? Can you explain it in detail for your readers?”

I felt an instinct in my body as my spirit was awakened to my spiritual family. The feeling that arose was not that I felt evil come over me, but that the energy that lifted my spirit away from the body was over my left shoulder. It was a heavy energy.

My spirit guide continued, “That heavy energy is your spirit. You were attached to the seat of your heart

and now you are moving toward us and the heavens in that tunnel. The heaviness should not be a surprise as the physical earthly body feels the clay and casing still around your spirit.”

The heavy feeling I had then was struck in joy. I felt a lifting of spirits in merriment and laughter in the next moment.

“Author, thank you for recognizing your spiritual family. I laid my hands on you, and you felt the heavens ripple in your spirit. That joy and merriment was the unusual acceptance of us into your spirit. This understanding is of an awakening most only have upon their physical death.”

I witnessed an impression of heavenly light in a tunnel, and I moved through the tunnel in my spirit. I was conscious but not material. It felt like I had left the burdens of life to fly in the light.

“Author, the tunnel was a projection as well. This projection of spirit was then of your making. The tunnel was in a prison of your mind, and as you tunneled through your heart and out of the mind, you were aware of leaving your body behind.

“Now,” said my spiritual family member, “I have made a point for you to be blessed by the heavens with an entrance to see God the Father specifically. In most physical death, one would not go to see the Heavenly Father instantaneously. This is the reason for the story—I will explain so you can understand.

“The Heavenly Father is around you and within our love constantly. He is the conscious understanding that

makes love aware. The 'glue' that holds the universes together is that love and laughter. Now that you are of a spiritual body and can be aware of this glue holding all things together, you will embrace this challenging narrative.

"Understand that your personality was misguided. Your soul was simply going through the motions until you begged to be forgiven. You wanted grace for the fall in how you were living, and the Lord took this moment to bless you with your understanding in life. That understanding was to prepare you for this moment of reconciliation with the heavens.

"Do you understand how you were of a broken nature? That you felt broken and pitied your ongoing heroics to prove yourself correct? Your ego failed you, but in the blessed moment of forgiveness from the Living Christ, you met the Father. This moment was brief but it was your awakening.

"On Earth, you let God work in your soul as you woke up to another spiritual reality. This then presented a level of noise and pain to work through. But the pain that you woke up to came from the devils that surrounded you. You were in a prison of your mind, projected from a moral slumber, with devils controlling your thoughts.

"Upon working in your spiritual narrative, you began to write your stories of how to find heaven once more. The light given was of heaven, and the journey was merely conceptual, actualizing a moment so you could befriend yourself as Jesus had already done.

“This took a relatively short time in this lifetime,” said my spiritual guide, “but it had taken many reincarnations for you to progress this far. The soul is constantly evolving in consciousness to understand God. That conscious understanding culminated when God brought you to understand the genesis of the universes. You felt in your heart the conversation with God, and understood his universal Word.

“Now, Author, I will say that was a long journey in a brief time for a physical body awakened in his earthly life. Continue to speak on the journey so your readers will understand how reconciliation is fathomed with the Heavenly Father.”

## Chapter Three

I felt in my heart an emptiness—not that my spiritual understanding was gone, but I felt renewed in a way. It was if all the heaviness of my heart was on display and I was watching from afar.

“Author,” said the Heavenly Father, “I have a very unusual request for you. I ask that you stay present in the moment in your body as I discuss the spiritual aftermath of your actions. This is normally unnecessary, but I ask you to tell the story of your misdeeds to the readers as I provide my explanation of why your life was brought back to the heavens.”

The Heavenly Father continued, “Author, you had much misguidedness in your attention span. You were not ready to behold much of what was around you since you echoed and reacted to what others said and did in your surroundings—you acted like those around you without really thinking about your beliefs. These actions were then misguided by the devils that thought for others as well as for yourself.

“If you confessed to being motivated by a desire to belong, it would have done no good. No longer were you living your life for us in the heavens. You felt safe in abiding by the laws of mankind—something that was unusual during the time you lived in because you lived in wealth. Material abundance was pronounced, and the feeling of safety provided a model to join in those around you.

“That safety was something unique because if you were in trouble by the records of mankind, you had protections in place you could adopt and still live. This was different from generations prior who needed to listen to themselves in spirit so they could understand and live in their surroundings. In this other generation, without truly being aware of it, when you faced possible dangers in the surroundings and a living situation of life and death, you would have often reflected on the heavens. Do you understand how your lifetime was lived in the safety of artificial laws which were created for the human society?

“Therefore, as you lived your life of misguidedness, I thought of bringing you back into the fold as I felt your immense pain. You were faithful to you family, but you did not feel the love that was expected for you. I brought that love into your family and surroundings as you woke up to the heavens. You were of another nature in spirit, and you were brutal to yourself in spirit as you still listened to devils.

“I created your life so you could understand the heavens. I did not want you to feel hate for yourself as you looked outwardly to understand the questions of your life. This conundrum was in your projected life on earth.”

My spirit moved more toward God in the heavens. I felt the Heavenly Father embrace me in this moment, and then he continued.

“Author, you were brave in facing my light. On Earth, your personality shifted on the day you awoke to



me, and from that day you responded by trusting your spirit and welcoming those around you to awaken alongside these stories.

“Now that you understand why you were awakened, we can investigate the heart. The heart holds much conscious understanding. It reveals the truth to the human brain, and the mind makes these truths real. If you projected worldly values into the theater you lived in, you wore a mask, and I assessed that mask of actions that conflicted with your values. As your Heavenly Father, I am the truth. I understand how you interpreted the truth, and I am aware of how you twisted the truth through projections. Those twisted patterns of truth are the burden you felt as self-hatred. You were aware of the truth and your patterns of lies as you awoke to the devils as they thought for you in your surroundings.

“Author, this occurred a long time ago and you have been abiding in your heart for a good amount of time. Do not feel anxiety any more about how I love you. You fear God to follow your soul’s path forward, and this path was purposeful. I applaud that you have taken action to understand the conscious living spirit of Christ as a noble truth to follow.

“Author, I have belonged and will belong to your story further. Your heart reveals to me how you interpreted life around you as wicked and hateful and how your mind created a twisted pattern of hate for you to believe in. Do you understand how you lived life anxious of other people and therefore wondering about your own truth? This twisted realization of self-hatred led you to

assume you could control the world around you instead of living the truth of your heart.

“I also see a history of living life in numbness by wanting to be someone else. You cherished it when you imitated people whom you admired, creating the mask I discussed with you. You hid behind the mask of being someone else to have a feeling of safety by not showing your truest self. Therefore, you acted and perpetuated a life that was a false narrative. This mask was your downfall.”

The Heavenly Father continued, “Author, you fell because you had no values or beliefs to live by. You could not resist the demonic spirits weighing in on you with curses—curses telling you to do evil and say evil. The pain you felt in self-hatred wanted to lead an easy life behind a mask. This fear was anguish, and it called to more devils.

“Luckily, you did not afflict many in your lifetime with additional pain as you denied a strength in character. You mostly bottled your anger into resentment for other people in your surroundings and lived without love. This lifetime became a cruel prison to live in, but, as I said, I heard your remorse and anguish.

“Author, the breath of life is sacred. You will begin to heal now in the spiritual heavens. I will let you understand how to progress with your spiritual friends—do not be on guard with your spirit if they are near. The demons of self-hatred only aspire to live your life on Earth and not in heaven.”

## Chapter Four

“Author, you have made and will make me a proud Heavenly Father. I have witnessed much growth in your attempts to understand your worldview, and I have now witnessed your next lifetime on the Earth. In my plan for you, I advise you to share the understanding of reincarnation to others ahead of a physical death. The process is simple—the soul who wants to return to Earth to work through their blessings is available to do that.

“Author,” continued God, “you are one who is willing to work on your soul once more. In the next lifetime, you will belong to a community of friends who will be working toward scholarly applications. Instead of being a mirror of projected shadows, you will find a quaint appeal to think in universal terms. The universes will call to you as I have declared in my own plans for unification. If you listen to the plans I have for you, you will build a respect for life in that community. The life you want to spur onward is one focused on caring for yourself and others in a spiritual light.

“Do you see a difference in where you are in your personality now? The growth from awakening from your faults to leading a community in love is tremendous. It takes time to understand how spiritual growth is possible.

“As you go back to the body and ask forgiveness in your lifetime on Earth, realize you are already onto another cause. The spirit you had was forgiven today in

judgment, and that cleanliness is one that forgives others in a community as well. This is visionary.”

The Heavenly Father continued, “Author, you already have and will continue to spread the ideas of scholarship of light and love throughout the community. The task to understand how to communicate with me through your heart and instruct others will take additional lifetimes; however, the task is available to you now.

“You were in a new spiritual breath from me as I allowed you to relive your lifetime on Earth. Go now and realize that I have helped you understand your purpose.”

The spiritual guide that was with me through my judgment and reconciliation of spirit was indeed happy for me. He mentioned that although I had much work to do, my spiritual family would help guide me in the community that was being built.

This plan was indeed a path forward for new spiritual understanding.

The spiritual guide said, “Author, you know of the heavens and the heavenly kingdom. But what you may not realize is that God is creating and co-creating a plan for the advancement of spiritual knowledge for his children. This is what he meant for you when he directed you to become a scholar of heavenly understanding and to build your community.

“Author, I was in the world once and found it difficult to understand some of the lessons I had to learn to fully evolve to the understanding I have now. I will help

in any way I can to supplement your knowledge in your journey.”

I thought for a moment and realized that this lifetime was an excellent start to understanding my new spiritual undertaking because I was aware of my spiritual family. I could ask questions of my spiritual family and apply an understanding of their principles of spiritual growth to myself in a community.

“Author,” the spirit guide said, “you have more than enough resources to begin to be enlightened to the mission you have before you. However, the actual act of love and compassion necessary to build that community takes a different set of skills from those you solely possess yourself. That is where God will intervene and ask you to grow in your development.”

I did not realize it at first, but I had a deep-seated fear of confronting myself as a community builder. I said to my spiritual guide, “How do I make the transition? I sense fear in myself.”

The spiritual guide smiled and radiated joy from his soul. “Author, that fear is awkwardly brilliant for us to investigate. The projected fears you worked on as you sought to develop your heart is an old personality trait. To be brave in building your community, let’s look past the fears and that growth cycle. Author, what do you think a community builder of light scholarship would impress upon the world if they faced fear like that?”

I considered the question. I felt that if I were a scholar who was building faith in a community, I would need to elevate my understanding through a new frequency. I

thought to myself that because fear is such a basic feeling, that emotion would be difficult to build from.

My spiritual guide said, "Author, you know the answers in your depths, and you need to let that awareness take hold of your personality. You need to shift your belief structure to a new pattern in your personality. The basic emotional pattern of a reflective perspective and shadow work is to extinguish fear, but what pattern of emotion do you need now?"

I felt the light become more jubilant in my heart. It seemed the emotion I was feeling was calling me to dance and make an investment in myself so I could enjoy life. I realized I was to build from that emotion.

The spiritual guide said, "This joyful emotion is a lesson to understand and carry forward with your community. This is where you begin. Your plan to build a heavenly knowledge will be with such joy."

I accepted that and was not afraid of my light being shared with others. Instead of fear, I felt a certain radiating warmth that I could share.

"Author," said my spiritual guide, "joy was a projection from our spiritual understanding as well. The members of your heavenly spiritual family share their light to insist that you work and develop as much as you can in your current life. You have an eagerness to develop and build on your spiritual understanding, and the present moment is what you have to work on. Remember, we bring more experience and light through the heavens into your heart. These lessons can be processed in bits for you as you become aware, but that last message is urging

you to continue to look into the projected worldview for God's presence. He is waiting to exchange a conversation with you now."

I felt the joyful emotion in my heart take hold over the fear. I felt that it was in a new voice of consciousness as well. The tone of the Word I heard from the heavenly light felt new and fresh. I breathed in a new perspective as I listened for the Heavenly Father.

I meditated on happiness from a different perspective, but I wished to know more about the light I had exchanged and to grow in my knowledge of that spiritual wisdom. I needed a community to understand that reasoning as wisdom is often passed from generation to generation.

That feeling of joy was an introduction to my newest life plan—that the fulfillment of joy in my lifetime was to spread an understanding and meet the heavenly kingdom's request. That request, as I perceived through my conscious intuition, was to spread laughter and love in the world, encouraging people to feel safe in trusting their spiritual development.

## Chapter Five

“Author,” said Jesus, “you have and forever will have me in your thoughts. I will hold you to a standard that is above all, for I exceedingly want you to achieve a mastery over your purpose. That purpose—to live and embellish the good Word you hear and create stories in your lifetimes—is holy. The community you live in will respond, and you will belong to them as well.

“You will understand my worldly affection through the joyful spirit that has awoken inside your spirit. You have looked at my lifetime and understood my conscious thought. That is holy and good. Gather the information from the lessons you had built your faith on and your faithful desires to worship me.

“I am God in human image. I came from the Holy Spirit through Mary and blessed the world over with my body. You have come to the fountain and been rebaptized in spirit. Yet the experiences I had, which you have learned through not only the holy book but also your stories, have given you a sense of worth. This sense of worth is the foundation of my feelings of faith in you as well. I will explain this.”

Jesus investigated my heart and mind and saw that I had been made new. He said, “Author, the conversation you had with the Heavenly Father is of godly ways, and your pursuit of his love is excellent. However, I do not think you are able to build the empire of faith to the level expected anytime soon. I will have faith in the Christ-



ian faith when I know the children are listening to me. My faith in my children can begin to be heightened now with this conversation.

“In my lifetime, I was not a sinner. I left the world alone and scared of the human population who did not believe in me, so I went to the rocky base of the universe and spoke eloquently to all who may fear me. This fear of enlightenment was spread through conversations from some children who awoke in their slumber. These powerful stories are not unlike yours.

“The stories of those who realized me in their faith answered to a deep-seated conscious pursuit that became a passion. This conscious calling is, in fact, fundamental to their own narrative. Their life stories became God-fearing and abiding.

“I want you to understand that somewhere, your history of faith was challenged through this deep-seated conscious pursuit, a pursuit that held you in attraction. The passion that you felt calling you was my calling for you. This conscious calling is deeper than any other consciousness because the universes are built on it. I brought heaven to the world and its people.

“That light of consciousness voice is a reckoning that you will now speak about finding.

“Author, do you remember how you once slept in this world without engaging in any prayer or conversation with me? Before you had me in your life, you suffered from much self-inflicted trauma. You were abiding by the principles of other people. That lifetime was a

façade, and each person who tempted you was welcomed with consideration.

“Author,” Jesus continued, “the spirit of the Living Christ is your new ambition in understanding the conscious reality through me. That said, I would be able to speak to you through how you understood me previously in your lifetime.”

I remembered the first time I saw Jesus in the world. His figure was grand on the horizon, taking up more than the great Earth he rose above. His body was greater than the horizon, and I felt nervous as I watched in awe. This was some fifteen years before our conversation now.

Jesus continued, “You ‘saw’ me in a vision that superseded your worldview, and your vision of me was superior. I will explain how this altered conscious state was received through my prayer.

“I woke you up to the world that day and the harsh reality that you were not living holy and good. That day, your own ego broke and fractured into many parts. It was not by necessity that your ego broke, but you were so sinful that your whole personality just cracked into many dimensions, and some parts were lost to the hell you were in. It was unfortunate that your mind cracked and became distorted, but this began the healing process.

“However, I did not anticipate what happened after that. When I brought you to a knowledge of the heavens and of God, you felt a new kind of joy, and your spirit began to turn toward the heavens. As you remember, the

distorted views were scary as you saw and felt the torment created around you in the pit of the serpent.

“Your torment arose in pity and disgust for your fellow man. You saw the truth and did not want to lie to yourself, so, as harsh as it seems now, you turned inward for comfort.

“The war going on around you was for safety first. You scaled back your efforts to replicate other’s attitudes as that mirror of reflective behavior was cracked. You began to seek me in your conscious voice—a voice small and timid at first.”

Jesus was aware of and acknowledged the difficulties of living with impaired thought patterns. “Author, your healing journey began five years after that initial vision. You did not work through it right away but stayed wishfully asleep, nor did you take much action in our conversations. Instead, you worked on processing how to conduct yourself in society. Do you see how you stayed asleep while I spoke through your heart? Your light was small but focused. You heard a tiny voice taking you to the truth of the moment, and that truth was recognized in prayer.

“Your calling to listen to the light of that conscious voice in your heart was alive as you wrote stories; therefore, we amplified this avenue of story-writing as your trait to seek the heavens. You found this quite rewarding in reestablishing your personality from being completely broken to forging one with a new identity.

“Author, I cannot yet fix all that has happened in your mind. You will evolve past this situation with a new

lifetime. However, as you concluded with the Heavenly Father, you are now able to understand us in your heart, so you will continue to manifest that joy.

“The traits are different for each person. We in heaven are a spiritual family, and some of our spirits have more affinity to some rather than others, but listen to your consciousness. Listen to their wisdom as they deliver the next of our heavenly messages.”

Jesus concluded with some wisdom for me. “Author do not worry about pleasing others in this pursuit. The joy you find is inward and a projection of the heavens into your lifetime. The cracks in your mind will continue to heal—that is a promise. However, you do not need to understand the world from a conscious viewpoint, which is where I met you. That deep-seated understanding that is fundamental to the universe will begin to build a tunnel between the heavens and your soul. That tunnel of infinite good is how we connect with you through your heart. That knowledge of tunnel-building is your source of the heavenly living spirit of Christ.

“Listen to these words in your heart. Listen and trust my voice in you—it will bring you much strength. As you continue to grow and evolve spiritually, you will understand how much favor I bring into your lifetime. Realize that this conversation will build over time.”

I held my thoughts within my heart and said to Jesus, “Whenever I stray, please shepherd me back into your fold.”

Jesus smiled, “Author, shepherding is of my purpose, and I will gladly do that. Just know that you are and will

be in my flock forever. Your light has never deceived me. You do not lie to me but trust me, and you even know that trust when you lie to yourself when you are exhausted and want to morally sleep. Yet you fight to stay awake now—that is the largest improvement I see in your patterns.”

My conversations with Jesus began a long time ago, but it is true that I have healed and grown braver by trusting that heavenly light within my heart. So I stay in the conversation, waiting to understand how to be of greater service.

“Author,” said Jesus, “You will grow in joy as well. This joy is with understanding the spiritual family. Let me introduce you to the spiritual guides who look over you from heaven.”

## Chapter Six

“Author,” said my spirit guide. “You have angels in light, and love overcomes you now.”

The angels of the heavens came, and I witnessed my heart being made anew. The sound that was created from this healing was of another level of vibration.

“This joy from us in the heavens follows you into the next lifetime. Understand that you will be made a new man in a new body once you return from heaven to this Earth again. Your spirit is made new, but the casing and body of old for this lifetime are still the same. Therefore, you will have an old perspective of memories with a new spiritual undertaking. This will be corrected once you leave in death and progress into the heavens.

“Author, do not take this as the old staying less powerful—the old perspective will maintain your personality, but you are able to evolve within that spirit now. The joy felt inside your heart is not new. It is a heavenly gift in which your personality will be built anew.”

The heavenly angels then surrounded me in my mind’s eye. I spoke to them as I hoped to gain more knowledge from this moment.

The angels said, “You will understand much more through this new spiritual perspective, but you will be challenged by old bodily memories to stay in fear. We tell you this so you will be aware, and awareness of the Heavenly Father will allow you to understand the difference. The higher vibration of your spirit will increasingly tune

into the Heavenly Father. Therefore, your understanding will be intuitive in nature, and you will feel your senses adapt more to the light around you. Your sensemaking abilities will increase.”

The angels parted from my vision as I began to reflect on the conversation, but I began to feel like my spiritual family was present in this moment.

The spiritual guide who had introduced the angels spoke to me. “Author, you are and will be made complete, but give it time. Right now, focus on that vibration or sound that you have in your heart. It stems from the soul, which is connected to the Word. That Word in the universes is good and holy, but let’s focus on the sound that rings true for your soul right now.”

I felt a little impulse in my heart, and a rippling of laughter erupted from that deep place. That laughter was enjoyment, and it confused to me.

The spiritual guide said, “Author, you enjoyed listening to the heavens right now, but make sure you understand the vibration is of a different quality than your past self. You may feel like a new personality in an old body of memories.

I acknowledged his advice and once more focused on the sound of the soul, a sound that was elevated to a degree. I enjoyed it very much. I felt like I was to analyze it less and breathe within the vibration—judgment was no longer my inspiration and I let go of the need to understand it all.

“Author, know that you were a very different personality before your revelation. If you decide to embrace

your new spiritual identity, then focus on the vibrational qualities you are feeling. You currently want to put the vibration to use, but instead, let the feeling just be of you.”

Once more, I let my vibration ring louder in my heart. I felt the voice of my consciousness rise to a new level. The speed and length of the vibration came into my heart, and I wrote as fast as my hands could keep up. The vibration itself was taking hold of my awareness.

“Good job, Author. Do not analyze the identity, but live within it. I can tell you that the vibration is often confused with the Word itself, but this is the difference in how you live out your experience in perception. The Word is, for the most part, a guide. It helps you understand us in the heavens and to know and implement the creation plan of the Holy Father. Therefore, accessing the Word means becoming one with a higher sense of self.

“The vibration you felt in your personality is a vehicle of sorts. That is, when you perceive the Word, you have a choice, and that choice can be confused through the manifestation of your reality. You either put yourself into a projected reality with your human body to understand your confusion, or you reflect back on the heavens to understand this creation plan in service.

“You understand the duality of a relationship with this perception of the world around you, and let’s look into the projected world you have for yourself. Let’s understand your bodily sensations with your heart’s conscious voice.”



I felt haunted. I felt like my relationships before were off, and although I recognized my perception of friends and family in my life, it felt different. My patterns were different now as I was someone new. I began to analyze this phenomenon until I realized that working through my relationships took time and effort. I wondered about myself from their perspectives. I wondered if they knew I was different, and sparks of light came into their bodies.

My spiritual guide said, "Author, you now notice the light of other people in your heart for a reason. This light emitting from some people is a new, challenging, intuitive prayer that was given before. You practiced imagining the light in prayerful dialogue with the people around you, and, in this new perspective, that radiating light is easier to harness and witness. It was through spiritual practice that you understood the light that was in others and yourself. Take this as a blessing."

I focused on my heart once more and its speed of the vibration. I also began enjoying the light in other people around me and wanting them to be lifted up. I wanted a conscious rippling of laughter to occur.

"Author, you have made a resonating attempt to lift the spirits around you. That is good and joyful. This characteristic of enjoying the company of others is new for you—now you will begin to live in this projected world of yours with hope."

I summarized what I had been feeling with the angels and spiritual guide. I knew I had been analytical over my worries and fears to the point of defensiveness in my

past life. The angels helped me understand that I was to have a similar body along with my memories in this lifetime, even as I was gaining a new spiritual understanding—a new spiritual understanding brought me much joy. Living in that joy, I would be aware of new sense-making applications in my intuition.

My spirit guide said, “It is good that you now understand the conversation of the heart to the worldview you have, but will you still judge? Only you can understand that. The amount of judgment you shared in the past consisted of analyzing your memories of how others made you feel, and if you disliked how you felt, you were defensive. Therefore, you made it hard to understand the truth of people since you never saw them from their perspective.

“Author,” continued my spirit guide, “your new sensemaking capacity will allow you to understand people in their truths. You will understand compassion with a much greater ease, and know that this will be challenging and enjoyable for you. The challenge will be understanding that no one obtains perfection in this limited worldview. It is difficult to know whom to trust as you attempt to understand those around you because people are very chaotic.”

The vibration in my heart dropped to a lower frequency. I felt the illusion of my fears become reality as I felt I was to embrace hurt and pain to a degree, and I was saddened by this. However, my vibration level increased in its resilience, and I saw the trials of life on this Earth as mere moments in God’s good plan of creation. I was

not in control, but I could expect that grace to increase as I investigated life with a certain curiosity.

“Good,” said my spirit guide. “Expect the next few weeks of your life to be an experiment in social understanding of people around you. Witness and reflect on your heart’s voice. Do not analyze or judge—just begin to feel God’s grace in the conversations between acknowledging people’s light source and your intuitive and compassionate understanding of their personalities. Do not force anything of a synchronous explanation for the timing of events. You will understand this more in our next conversation.”

## Chapter Seven

The sound of the Holy Spirit swept over me and gave me a sensation of warmth that was transformational. I felt like the angels I met before who danced and sang to the holy actions of God. I praised the Holy Spirit and wondered what the outcome of such a transformational moment would be.

The Holy Ghost said, “Author, do you not want to connect to a deeper understanding of consciousness with your audience now? Do you understand that you have just now been given a gift to understand? Take that in and clarify what just happened in your sensemaking.”

I felt the light that surrounded the people around me was focused on sparks of the divine in points at the center of their bodies.

The Holy Ghost continued, “Yes, and having this understanding also helps you connect. You have spoken and will speak to these points of your surrounding audience members. The people you choose to connect with are in tunnels of light. The love that you manifest in compassion is, in fact, where I will ask you to speak from. That love then will be directed to the points of your surrounding audience members. The person you are talking with will find merriment and laughter with enough dialogue. Do you understand how this will work?”

I saw the audience members reading my story, and I wished that they could laugh and enjoy the book as I felt in my heart. I felt like the heavens had put such powerful

ideas in my soul, and that channel of good and holy light was unmistakable in vibration.

The Holy Ghost continued, “Author, the sound you have and will enjoy in your new lifetime is the vibration we will discuss herein. You will honor this passion to write stories for your audience and to understand how to lift their light to the heavenly praise we so inquire about from you.”

The Holy Ghost waited momentarily to allow me to be silent on my own vibration. That personality that I recognized as a new life force was awkwardly brilliant to understand. The Holy Ghost said, “Author, now that you have discovered how you can connect to me and the audience by establishing a spark in each of us, realize these vibrations are different sounds. As you understand the sounds of each soul, including me, you will be able to write directly to that soul. You should be able to follow the way I want you to deliver content to yourself and the audience. Realize how to listen in to the vibrations of each spark of life force in each human, and listen to my vibration, understanding it as best as you are able. The heavens dance and sing around you. As you train your sixth sense to adapt to communicating from the heart to make personal connections, you will foster a more energetic attitude working with others, including me.”

I then understood the necessary perspective of how I could elevate the souls around me by contributing to their source of light through my prayers. It was a lot like praying to the other person, but I was to understand the

vibration and then put words to that music I felt in my consciousness.

“You will understand much more about this style of communication as it is heavenly. In Heaven, we do not think in thoughts and reflect over those thoughts anxiously. As humans, you reflect on the thoughts often as illusions of a self-made prison. That is why we ask you to speak from the heart.”

I turned my attention to the audience of this book at this point. I said, “Readers, understand that this connection I have with you is intentional. I hope you are well and reading this story with interest. I hope you are involved in what this conversation means to us both—with the Holy Spirit involved in speaking to us, we can dedicate this knowledge to something of a greater co-creation story for our world.”

The Holy Ghost enveloped me in transformational spirit, saying, “Author, you have now understood the necessity to speak for yourself in this story. You have led the story as a narrator in a trance up until this point. You have been in conversation before with the heavens, and yet you need to awaken to connecting with the audience herein to instill the purpose of community-building.”

I spoke quietly to the Holy Spirit, almost ashamed that I had not recognized the importance of what and how my audience thought while I transcribed the heavenly messages. I said to the Holy Ghost, “Do you think it will change the story structure enough to give you a new ability to talk directly to the readers?”

“Author, that is up to you and how well you listen to the vibrational qualities of where we point you,” the Holy Ghost answered. “Do you feel we are directing the conversation to the audience or to you now? If you said the audience, then you are right. We ask you to send information from us to these readers, making them aware that their light is magnificent when amplified. To read these thoughts is a prayerful devotion. The readers can then assume how to interact with us in their own conscious voices.”

The Holy Ghost continued, “So, Author, when you write the rest of this story, please understand that you will benefit from writing your thoughts to the audience as well. Confide in them your emotions and your reflective thoughts. Understand that you can have feelings while forming your own opinion.”

I spoke to the audience then to assure them that I was quite comfortable with that idea. I said to the readers, “This is my next lifetime of work. I will confidently know your needs as I have imagined them in my own sixth sense so I can dictate a personal narration. If that is good and holy with you readers, then let us continue this understanding of heavenly communication through the Holy Ghost.”

The Holy Ghost then allowed me to have a moment of grace to understand that not all the audience will understand the dynamic conversation being held in this book.

“Author, you have understood and will continue to understand that not everyone will speak directly to their

hearts. That is where the light shines upon each soul, and that light will be created in a divine spark as you speak to them. The point in their soul that you are trying to reach is not of the mind—it is of the spiritual light of the heavens. You will do wonderfully to allow that light to magnetize your tongue as you speak out to the audience.”

I took a moment to center myself and realize the conscious voice in my heart. That vibration that had been moved earlier in the story was becoming a familiar voice to me, and I let that voice come out confidently and clearly. I said to my readers, “There is much to discuss in this story. We shall understand the heavenly light and how it magnetizes our tongues as we allow the spirit to work through our bodies. I do question, though, how the light works across the tunnel created between us. Dear reader, how open are you in accepting the message of the Holy Ghost when it is heard in these thoughts?”

Hearing the direct plea I made to my readers, the Holy Ghost said, “The reader cannot respond to your questions. Instead, the Lord listens to prayer in the hearts of all and conveys his suggestions through angels. Therefore, this heavenly connection can move each other in a prayerful dialogue together without having a space to connect them. Do you understand, Author, that prayer all over the universe is communicating to the fundamental consciousness that is love? And in that love, the stories of many souls are interwoven in a tapestry of tunnels. This unification plan is then something we discuss in a heavenly dialogue.



“The voice that you have in resonance with others strengthens your soul, so when we talk with the readers, you will assume a heavenly dynamic to that conversation. You are involved in the whole creation story, as well as speaking from your own perspective. The lines of thought are then strengthened when you interpret the timing of events as signals to understand.

“The Lord will send you people and signs to help you understand where the story is being strengthened. And in that moment of epiphany, your joy will become love.”

I said to the Holy Ghost, “The moment I felt that transformation in my soul I knew you were of that heavenly love.”

## Chapter Eight

“Author, you wish to believe in yourself and your abilities to accept your truest soul’s vibration. In that mission to understand your abilities, you will acknowledge that you are facing a difficult journey. That is, the masks you wore arose from other people’s projections and expectations—you saw and felt the animate lives around you and reacted with a mask intended to follow their broken stories. This brought you pain as you accepted their projected pain, and in that pain, you were honest and revealed yourself as good.”

My spirit guide continued to explain, “Your honesty was refreshing to some but others were ignorant to it. That said, you wore a mask to feed the needs of others and protect yourself from their criticism. But you paid a price as it played into your self-acceptance.

“We need to explain something for the readers here. The light you focused on was in thought, and in those thoughts, you held onto and reflected your ideas back into yourself. It was, in a way, a mindful projection of your expectations while watching others to decide how to act. The readers will understand that accepting one’s truest intentions to accept the mask was a prison.

“Author,” continued my spirit guide, “I was also like that. I projected some ideas and hid behind a mask as well. But you have been given the understanding of how light can be transformed from the heart, and in that capacity, you can be drawn out to the people around you.”

I understood that I accepted my light falling back inward through the mind as a prison of lies, and that energy of evil was how the serpent controlled my thoughts. I could only fully connect with others by letting my light shine in my heart.

“Author, that is a strength now of your confidence. Continue to listen to the readers—listen to their needs and let the spirit of the Lord sing to you in a story that you co-create.”

I listened for the readers to ring back in vibrations, and I thought of different poles that were amplified. The poles were like galaxies answering back to me. They were like nothing and everything under the heaven’s filament.

Then the spirits from the Lord cried out in unison, “Wait to understand us in harmonies together as we overlap in the spirit of the Lord. The strength of our subconscious is united. These poles that were spinning in different paths are rippling in unison. These ideas that you share are shining back to be heard.”

My spirit guide said, “Author, do you not understand that you get what you provide in a lifetime? The same is true when you speak to the heart. You provide joy and receive joy.”

I said, “I was in prison because I saw other people’s faults and judged them and then myself. I understand now.” I turned my attention to my readers. “Readers, do you want to be free? Freedom comes from understanding the light in your soul. It is a sound that you can focus on and share.”

“Author, you will become something much more than that sound in unison with the other readers singing out through the subconscious,” my spirit guide said. “You are and will be more than a projection in spacetime fabric. Your soul will bring you to the Heavenly Father once more.”

I felt conscious thought turn into praise through my heart. At that moment, when I spoke from the heart, I realized I did not need to worry about people’s expectations around me. I realized I did not need to feel insecure. I realized that I did not need people to provide me with evidence of how things were in my lifetime in general. When I needed my strength and confidence, I could have a moment of peace with myself.

“Author,” said the spirit guide, “You will belong to the people who love you, and that arrangement of conscious voice is a community. You will begin to build that community now with the readers who care and send you appreciation as you tell your stories.

“Those readers who listen and pray together using a similar method will grow strong. That strength lies in their character, and they will follow their own abilities to reach the heavens and tell their stories to other people. Those who love these people will then share their experiences until there is much joy and celebration.

“Your ability to spark the divine in these conversations will strengthen you consciously. Your light will amplify and radiate without any prior knowledge of your path forward, and these members of your spiritual family will grow. Embrace this unification with others

through a prayerful collection of tunnels between all in this momentum of love and laughter, and you will plant roots.”

I embraced this ability by collecting myself in the present moment. I thought of the readers and said to them, “Do you understand how our community will be built through a conscious ability to love and share our joy? This is the ability to understand the heavens through hearts and share this co-creation story with those we are in contact with.”

My spirit guide spoke again, “The strength you will feel in your consciousness is heartfelt. However, remember that you will understand this in your mind and make it real. How you realize and anticipate the moments will become a work of patience. You will understand how illusions of the mind are, in fact, thoughts that are created about themselves. When you decide not to imprison yourself with this mask, you will accept grace for the chaotic world around you.”

The spirit guide exclaimed, this time directly to my readers, “You readers who understand this statement will then let the personalities who think you ignorant of their curses be ignorant. Even if you understand their projections onto you, greet this knowledge with an act of patience.”

I added my thoughts to the readers, “This love that is shared in laughter and joyful storytelling manifests a harmonious moment—one in which you are forgiven from curses, one where you are accepted as yourself, one when all things you feel are generally painless.”

From the readers' consciousnesses, the spirit of the Lord called out, "However, the sorrows we protect you from are of grace themselves. Since we are broken, we accept your brokenness. We live to see you excel and falter. We accept in patience that the heart will be able to sing again for us."

That thought was most enjoyable—that in all brokenness and chaos, the heart will have its moment to continue to sing in vibration.

I thought I would accept myself in each moment of love and sorrow because I was aware that there are those who make me strong in spirit, regardless of the curses given to me in my lifetime from the evildoers.

My spirit guide then addressed us all: "Author and readers, you will understand these ideas in greater depth as we progress in our creation story. Understand that the community is being built in an interwoven spiritual foundation of consciousness. All vibration is of a spiritual understanding, based on what level of understanding and awareness one has. That strength in consciousness is not about the level of vibration that speaks the loudest—it is about a level of awareness of thoughts coming and going from the universal source, the Word. And in that level of accepting the Word in the heart, our spiritual nature evolves.

## Chapter Nine

“Author,” my spirit guide said, “There are more than enough reasons to declare a victory today. You have begun to build a community spirit in your heart. The consciousness that was at the root of your thoughts has shifted to a new light, and in that new understanding, you have been instructed to amplify the light inside you. Let that light in your heart amplify and then let the spirit out into the world through your joy and laughter. Do not hold back any longer.”

And in that moment of forgiveness for myself, all I had to do, in my estimation, disappeared. I thought to myself now was the time to enjoy my life and to look for other spirits in this community to interact with and ripple together our shared joy.

“Indeed, Author, now is the time to expect that a shared community can happen. To the readers, who might be surprised to understand this, the author was involved in his community today sharing his spirit with others.”

The readers, who looked like galaxies to me, begin to move and spin in correspondence toward a subconscious effort. The feeling overwhelmed me like a wave of vibrations, and I intended to share that the people in my community were now in harmony. This mind meld was in spirit first.

“Author,” said my spirit guide, “We will visit you now on Earth. We will show signs for you as you begin to

unravel in your love for others, and the light and warmth will radiate. But search your feelings when we appear. Remember, your spiritual family is applauding you from afar in the heavens.”

I understood that I had been authentic in sharing my joy and light with the world. In that moment of serendipitous love with the surrounding community, I felt like I could move my life forward.

The readers suggested that I not hold onto any thought. They wanted me to stay in the moment and be aware of my thoughts and still be thinking through the heart.

“Author, do not think of anything but pure enjoyment and laughter. This is your spiritual essence right now. You will be in this spiritual lesson for a lifetime until you see another lesson to grow into.”

My spirit guide continued, “As you age, you will understand another factor of being with a new spirit. This is that you will love others differently from before, and in this light and love for others you will grow stronger with your desires, which can create a challenge of lust. Please understand that your main focus until now had been on challenging greed from material wealth.”

I felt my spirit withdraw a bit in the light and become radiant once more. In my body the light was an effect in how I perceived ideas since I was focused in my heart. I felt the light dim and shine because of fear, and I knew there was darkness that was a concern for my spirit.



Then my spirit guide introduced something new to me. He said, "Author, your light is affected by the darkness just as your thoughts were. Before, we discussed how you listened to thoughts that were not authentic. You masked the thoughts in illusions to compare yourself with others around you, and in these lies you told yourself, the darkness often tempted you to act in unwise fashion. You grew depressed, isolated, and angry from these illusions.

"Now, Author, you will feel out your heart and introduce why your light shifted from unbelievable joy to a different radiance. You will understand that other people on the surface of your world will feel your responses in a chorus. You will understand that signs and manifestations are more involved when the heart is in play."

The readers, represented by galaxies that showed the spirit of the lord, then said in unison: "We decide how you should react. Your heavenly spirited family may be involved here as well, but largely we who are your community will tell you how we feel. In harmony with community, you will understand this shared voice. It will be in a large extent a pressure to assume the similar outcome as you see the community evolve."

My spirit guide said, "Author, this is like your mask of thought, but it is very different to the heart. You will understand your loved ones compassionately with the heart. You will feel and fight for them, and you will know how a community protects itself."

I sat listening to my heart and the strength it had to stay in this light. My spirit was growing and I felt that

hideous sense of pride well up as I wanted to enjoy my community's purpose.

The readers said, "Not all that the community does is lust. The community loves and protects in unique ways, and in that concern, they make mutual decisions."

But the conversation began to concern me. Did I want to enjoy a community where my pride manifests as lust? How should I manage that sense of belonging and still be authentic in my light?

My spirit guide addressed my questions and said, "Author, these questions very much involve you—the questions that may ensure you to be made whole in this spiritual lifetime concern the community. Can you be strong enough to lead in your community and build something of a Godly home for these loved ones?"

I understood a bit of what I had felt before with light falling back into oneself and creating darkness. In the heart, where pride is concerned, I began accepting my own position as powerful and reacting to the community to empower their beliefs, even if they were wrong.

The community around me shared in a glorious understanding as well from this—that the initial idea of love and light was manifesting and creating interwoven tapestries of community between souls, and the protection of people in this community held thoughts or themes in which there was a shared belief.

My heart was shining brightly at this understanding, and I admitted I would still search for signals in the surroundings for my spiritual family.

“Author,” said my spiritual guide, “Let me explain something else to you. You manifest what light you have in your community, and this light is not always joyful to behold. This is especially true as you understand character flaws through the community. This is difficult to process because it is introduced to the heart where it will multiply the meanings and manifest how to react. This will be the next lesson.”

## Chapter Ten

“Author,” my spirit guide called out to me from the heavens’ throne room, “you will come to the throne room and speak upon what you have learned thus far. You will tell the Heavenly Father just what you have discovered upon the Earth in these last few weeks.”

I felt the pull of my spirit go upward to the heavens, where my spirit guide greeted me.

He said, “Author, I know it is difficult to understand how much energy has been given to your purpose on Earth in the last few days. Only you have understood that people’s energies will contribute to your understanding of the surroundings. You have seen a shift in realization that the world sees you and acknowledges what you are doing enough to place their efforts into a seed of purpose. You have contributed to their overall understanding of their lives, so it is amazing that your stories have shifted you in awareness—an awareness that can be adopted and cultivated into additional compassion.”

My spirit guide seemed quite pleased at this moment.

I acknowledged the Holy Father and my spirit guide. I said, “I accept that there have been some thoughts that seem to align with my stories. As I build on these ideas, I wonder how compassion will turn into a trait.”

At that, the Heavenly Father spoke, “Author, just know that we are with you in these heavens, watching my children run and play and interact with one another on

Earth virtually in prayer. This is a projection from their souls—their ghosts are within them and animate their lives.

“Yet, there is a sense that you are detaching from this world and your surroundings to find peace in this spirit. This is ironic and well done by both you and your readers.

“Do you understand that within yourself is a spirit from the heavens? And in that spirit, we fight a noble war with the lies and deceit of the serpent?”

The Heavenly Father continued, “So where in your field of understanding of intuition and sensemaking have you found roots to a heavenly kingdom? This is the heavens represented in consciousness. It is drawn from the same spiritual light that came from before existence. The heavens are built upon me as I am the Great I AM. In the world of living damnation, those who live asleep to morality will understand nothing more.”

My spiritual guide said, “Author, you will understand how much the Heavenly Father has built upon this kingdom already. Compassion is the key to unlocking its doors and being brought into community. Let us acknowledge that love is a prayerful dialogue and compassion is the key.”

The Heavenly Father furthered the guide’s words: “Compassion is the key because it opens the doors to the hearts of your community. This heavenly kingdom of thought and conscious understanding then is, in reality, your gift to humanity. It is the purpose of your surround-

ing community to acknowledge and display their gifts to the heavens in their actions.”

My spiritual guide said, “Author, the heavens are a gift to you upon the Father creating his son Jesus on Earth. This gift of opening the doors of compassion was engrained, assuming you let the spirit of Christ into your heart. You have been and are willing to listen to his conscious spirit in the surroundings.

“There are many who may not understand the purpose that Jesus had when he died for our sins and created the path for the kingdom of heaven to reign on Earth with his return. For now, let us just describe how compassion opens the doors to the hearts of your community.

“Author, compassion is asking another person to allow you into their hearts, and that door only opens as you show yourself to be compassionate. In that moment, when your story in a co-creation plan acknowledges that love is the truth and light, there will be an invitation to the heavenly journey you both climb.”

The Heavenly Father said, “You will understand this journey together as a story that intertwines and develops upon each other. These are the foundations of a spiritual friendship, and in that foundation of looking and seeking to build the heavenly kingdom together, you will understand the mission to protect one another in that friendship.

“There is an evil that lurks beyond reality. It is an evil that is as old as the story of the universe, but you will protect each other in the community from that

evil—fostering love and laughter will keep it at bay. The serpent itself is a mindful intruder, and in order to deny it permission to enter the lies and deceit of each person, your kingdom will need to establish locks at the door of your beliefs.”

My spiritual guide said, “Author, if this does not make sense to you yet, that is okay. You are learning about the spiritual home you are building and how it protects all who are part of this home on Earth and in heavenly consciousness. The love and laughter are then in jubilation when the community members meet Jesus in their light, the light of mankind giving itself in servitude to the Lord.

“Author, do not excuse this as a moment when all evil is cleared from the heart. It is a moment where the heart is being prepared for a baptism of spiritual understanding. It is brought to the throne room and given new knowledge to understand. We are creating this knowledge of the community you are building now.”

Continuing, my spiritual guide said, “Do not worry about the tenets of such rewards. This is a moment where the gates are being created. Showing compassion is difficult for some who are not of this understanding—that is, listening to the spirit to work and abide in the heart while watching the surroundings. People who live within their souls and can speak in a tunnel of light and love with others show compassion. Being received by the other person will show an overlap of joyous ideas.

“It takes patience, but the community will be built through compassion.”

The Heavenly Father said, "Author, we will understand in the future why this is necessary. The serpent will attack from afar and from within each person. In the lives of a community where the heavens are the foundation, the conscious voice will be strengthened in each person to be leery of such attacks. This, then, is protection through the conscious voice of the heart, and it will guard the community members at the gates of their hearts. We will describe in earnest how the spiritual evil-doers will be held away from the heavenly kingdom you are building."

My spiritual guide said, "In each moment there is evil, good, or nonsense, and in that path of knowledge, the nonsensical may provoke irritation, but it may not be evil. It may just be a space to play to understand the self and spirit. So when you are looking in conscious voice and do not feel evil or good, know that this chaos is a reality as well."



## Chapter Eleven

“Author, know that this is the point where you will never turn back. You are and will be in your castle—a mansion of conscious thought that you embrace in your heart. And through this home where Jesus abides, you have the ability to keep yourself protected in thought.”

The Heavenly Father rejoiced in the occurrence now that I found myself in my own mansion. “This is the part where we can protect you from evil thoughts. Do not welcome evil into your thoughts, but do keep yourself attentive in this particular phase of development. The compassion that opens the door to the gates of the heavenly kingdom is a newfound wisdom. How do you know that compassion is a way to welcome good and pure spirits? I can create this knowledge in many outcomes, and we can listen to the Word that is presented to you.

“Compassion should fill you with excitement. When you hear compassion, it is for you and others to want truly the best for each other—a compassionate response will make you feel more authentic and less confused. Seek knowledge about the person you inquire about through a quiet and contemplative mindset, and in the quietness of understanding the other person, wish them prayerful abundance through the heavenly kingdom.”

I stood still in the throne room where I interpreted how compassion is willfully staying in prayer with the other person through a heavenly connection.

The Heavenly Father said, "Let this be the turning point in this story—the realization that one who is good to their neighbors can understand their own nature, and in this nature of good seeking good to build community, happiness through love for each other, oneself, and the heavens will occur."

The throne room rumbled in conscious vibration as the Christ emerged. Jesus was within my heart and in the throne room. Here I found a baptism in the blessed fountain of spirit.

Jesus said, "Author, my friend, you now understand how to find merriment. You will not cast ignorance on others or yourself, and you will stay true to your authenticity in spirit. Your happiness will overwhelm you as you manifest compassion in the world. Others will notice that you now do not hurt yourself or caution them on what you say as a judgment. You will be merry."

I laughed a bit at the idea of compassion leading to my happiness, but within me my voice of spirit grew stronger. My mind still sent judgmental thoughts to my spirit until I was aware I was doing it, and I realized that I was not to put myself down any longer in thought. I was to let my light in spirit shine in radiance as I found joy within.

At the center of my soul a conscious voice spoke, and it was louder than my thoughts. I began to let that light and love shine in my actions. I did not need to think at all because the love in my heart was a vibration, a quality of itself.

Then Jesus said, “Yes, well, there is much more to loving oneself than not using hurtful words toward yourself and your soul. You will begin to understand the love you bring into this world is neither generated from your soul nor acquired from others. The love you gain in this moment is awareness. It is finding the qualities that you love and accepting those things from within, sharing them with the world.

“I will explain in more detail. Do you understand that life around you is made of spiritual energies? Many protect themselves through a mask of personality, yet you will understand what that hurt is through their actions. You will accept their sorrows and sin in a compassionate, caring attitude, and you will prayerfully love those individuals surrounding you as spirit.

“Do not think you have forgiven sin because you accept it. Instead, understand that a person’s brokenness leads them into a battle you have fought. Appreciate the place you are in and appreciate how they are improving themselves as well in their struggle.

“Learn from this moment. Learn that you have come very far in a fast amount of time. Accept the feeling or vibration that has you in love with your home. This place in the heavenly kingdom is simply for you to understand and to pray compassionately that the sinful accept this kingdom into their hearts. That will introduce these people who surround you to the heavenly kingdom without even really understanding and accepting their curses.

“Author,” continued Jesus, “You have allowed and will allow me my place now in love for yourself. You will understand how we are meeting again in the heart to reconcile your community and build it to great heights.”

I felt my soul return from the throne room and come back into my earthly body. I sat in a moment of awareness, taking into consideration where I was in this place. I accepted it as nutritious as I had many medicinal foods and drinks around me to sustain my body. It was something I never really thought about, but it caused me to smile now.

“Author,” I heard from the great beyond, “You have found and will continue to find that compassion takes effort but is effortless when you find it. You will practice stilling those thoughts you have to understand one everlasting moment in your soul. The love that shows up as acceptance of yourself is fundamental in how you pray for others. Remember, you will accept yourself to be above all things worldly.”

Hearing these words, I began to deactivate my worries, my stressful anxiety, and my wearisome thoughts. My focus spoke to me to be aware of my breathing, and in that breath, I found a tremendous nurturing quality. I began to accept myself as human, though spiritual in nature.

“Author, do not forget to forgive yourself in moments where you see and hear evil in yourself. Do not repeatedly run those thoughts through your mind. You can accept your breath, and you can come back to your spiritual body of light, love, and laughter. The door of

compassion is for you to accept yourself first and then to accept others.”

It fascinating to feel love. It was different in authenticity because of being aware of my own spirit. It did not feel romantic in any way or exaggerated. Happiness was the byproduct of such acceptance. I smiled to myself and accepted that the foundation of my conscious home was a heavenly realm. My wish was that the readers understand this as well.

## Chapter Twelve

I managed to feel my energies lift over multiple weeks of raising my energy to a happiness level. I kept this vibration lifted as I sensed my thoughts. This vibration was indeed my new level of communication, and it was fun!

I began conversations with new people, extending myself and my thoughts to them, and I held how they reacted to me differently—I managed emotions and difficult situations through a happier attitude. I began to cultivate what I had always so desired. My mind was freed from its fixation on cold and isolating self-doubt.

I began to rejoice in moments when I could hold onto the frequency that made me feel energetic. I realized then that this mindful practice was indeed what my meditation had been promising—a quality of free-flowing energy along with a restorative outlook.

God said to me in this moment of clarity and gratitude, “Author, you have now seen the reaction of people with whom you wished to build a community. This attitude or fixed attention to cultivating your surroundings with positive energy is healthier than you understand. We discussed how energy ripples across tunnels of light and laughter to other people, drawing them into a corresponding realization—so the answer we sought for you was in compassion first.

“To unlock the gate of the heavenly kingdom takes compassion, and through this happiness and awareness of talking with others you have established a budding

community. I would like you to realize something else in this community of a heavenly kingdom. I would like you to realize the impact of your words and actions. The hope and fearlessness you have shown in being brave is inspiring.”

I wanted my readers to know that my hope of advancing my calling became actualized as I made plans through meeting more people with like-minded interests.

God continued, “Through witnessing your development, you offered others an avenue to explore their lives and callings as well. They too are serving their inspiration to the heavens, and in this sacrifice of serving their calling within the community, they will be stronger.”

I realized that gaining the ability to build community was great; however, I also began to realize that even though this process had unfolded, there was more to my existence than just to build community.

The Heavenly Father said, “Be aware of the heavenly kingdom. Be aware of the mansions being constructed. And yes, take full enjoyment of the community that has been started. Author, maybe now we can go back to the garden of paradise—maybe we can talk in that environment as I explain what has been and can yet be witnessed.”

In the meditation I follow, the Filament Above the Waters meditation technique, I draw energies from the ground up through my spine and organs. I incorporated the feeling of nervous energy in my body being released and led upward to the base of my brain stem. I allowed

several seconds to collect energies into my brain stem before visualizing lightning bolts freed into my mind, letting the lightning go wherever it was needed. As this energy awakened my brain, I visualized a sun in the center of my mind growing quite large, and after a moment of watching this sun from my mind's eye, I connected with the universes.

God said, "Good. Now, Author, be aware of my hands over your spirit, bringing you through that vertical tunnel into the garden."

In my heart I felt the goodness of the garden of paradise. It felt joyous as I understood angels and members of my spiritual family welcomed me back to that spot.

"Author, we have a new idea to share with you. You have reconciled your past and are taking in moments of the present to understand happiness as a vibration. I would also like you to be aware of the future vision we have. This plan is not your plan in any way—it is a way to lead you to understand a deep truth that blocks you from this home. You will understand that this process of uncovering your fears and sins has been, to this point, a realization to awaken. That awakened state is much like a state of awareness of conscious thought. You have become well adept at seeing yourself from the soul and watching to improve your life. This has been improving your personal and social connections."

I began to worry that my life was too good to this point. I had made so much progress in limiting my fears and sinfulness, bridging into the community and aspir-



ing to a happier state of mind. Where was this worry coming from?

The Heavenly Father said, “The awareness is being drawn out from you. As you go deeper into the layers of life, you will understand how awakening is a surface effect of being drawn into the unconscious. Through this actualization of finding the source of contentment, you have awakened old feelings of previous lives. This is awkwardly brilliant to discuss.

“You may not understand this, but compassion is a way to open doors to the hearts of people—and it is also a way to reveal yourself in layered thoughts. Do you understand how, as you accept multiple aspects of yourself, you reintegrate into a deeper root for your life?”

God continued, “This concern about letting yourself transform spiritually into a meditative state is wholesome. You had fractured and were broken in divergent viewpoints when you awakened to Christ in slumber. This awakening to receiving Christ in your spirit and mind was difficult to realize and took years, but now you can relax, open your heart to accept the worries of being a broken person, and learn of your spirit on a higher existence.”

The words came into my heart, and I felt the bloody nature of war inside me and the howls and screams of murder. I did not want to visit that place in my heart.

“Author, is it so hard to understand that in awakening to surface-level events in your lifetime, you saw yourself? But on awakening to compassion for your soul, you

can move past this life to understand something universal?”

I appreciated the readers’ understanding as they listened to my understanding of past lives, and I saw their curiosity to understand the karmic laws and how they were intertwined with my heavenly involvement. I welcomed them into my story.

The Heavenly Father said, “Author, compassion and happiness will be lived out in your projection as much as you can focus on them, but these feelings you have witnessed—the plagues within society that you held before—will become a story to understand. This is a pattern with a much larger scope, and that feeling is currently overwhelming to you.”

I sat within myself, closed off from letting that horror call me from my higher universal self. The war cry was a story of humanity, and the story was larger than one person. That was why it felt overwhelming.

God said, “Author, you have begun to and will continue to understand this story and its implications for the heavenly kingdom. It is in this light of the Word that you can research and understand why you are who you have become. This is written in the stars.”

I reflected on that statement and saw that my meditation was usually about my bodily experiences and awakening to how I thought. This reflection was an awakening of conscious habits, but I realized that reconnecting with the larger universes was a new lesson—one in which time did not necessarily overlap with my

thoughts. I was to involve myself more deeply with such a meditative awakening.

## Chapter Thirteen

“Author,” said the Heavenly Father, “You have been and will be engaging in meditation that focuses on the heavenly spirits that surround us in the garden of paradise. These spirits are of your spiritual family, and they look after you. You will begin to assemble a trace idea of the energies intervening in your life story. Now look toward me and remember that these spiritual family members exist here in heaven!”

I saw bright lights flickering and shining in the garden of paradise. The forms contained in the lights were harder for me to see, as the edges of each being shined brightly. I chose to understand who these spiritual family members were by exclaiming to them that I was aware of their presence in love.

God said, “These spiritual members are a great gift for you. By having them understand your life and intervene in it, you have made several choices—often reluctantly—that changed the outcome for you. You are now in this awareness together, yet there is the puzzle of how each is entangled in your story when you begin to open yourself up to the community that has been built.

“Do you understand that the narrative you embody is of greater space and time? Several members of spiritual families interact across the heavens, voicing my Word, and this voice or resounding feeling of collective harmony is figuring out just where to lead each of your community members. This society of involved energy beings is

still in the heavens and will direct you through your willingness to listen and act.

“Spiritual family members are given voice in how to suggest information to you, and through their familiarity with you, you received important signs that helped emotionally convince you how to react and act in your lifetime. But this society of spiritual members involved in your lifetime is something different—the pattern of the community members around you is different and affected by you, and the energies involved around you and society are beginning to mesh.”

Then I noticed a spirit guide in the spiritual family in the garden of paradise. This seed, which was once a feeling of great strength for me, was revitalized.

The spirit guide came forward to me and said, “Author, you have gained and will continue to gain important signs through other people, but that is not what leads you in a lifetime. I cannot send messages constantly, and neither are the messengers here sending a constant message as they work around you. Instead, from this point forward, you will need to think critically. It may seem that connecting to other people’s frequencies on Earth to join in conversations is a mental habit, but, in reality, their stories are impacted in entangled ways, so it is important to understand that we are not connecting in frequencies alone. You are creating stories for each other, learning how to lovingly act and react. You act in ways that are remarkably simple, but soon, with practice, you will understand that God has a lengthy story for you before Jesus Christ returns.”

The Heavenly Father agreed, “Author, your positive habit of seeking the moment to accept yourself created a profound shift for your community building. This realized happiness, which is attractive to others, is detailed already. When you accept yourself and others with compassion, then you can elevate in frequency, which is experienced as sound as well.

“Author, the sound of happiness and joy was originally focused on presenting yourself as a community builder, but now the energy that makes up your soul is further reaching because you give of yourself. Do you understand how in building a community you let go of part of your time in life? This investment in a community brings more challenges as you practice listening and adopting a positive outlook through the people co-creating the story. In fact, there is a danger in leading a community when you do not completely accept others.

“Remember the war beat in your consciousness? You turned away so fast because you could not accept that fight inside yourself. However, there are members in your community that accept that war is partly a natural outcome of divisions between people.”

The Heavenly Father continued, “Author, as the spirit guide mentioned, you must think critically when these ideas are presented because the fighting of communities breeds war. There are natural differences in the world and a tendency to overdevelop personal community narratives without listening to other communities—this awareness of different stories in society is difficult to

practice and embrace, but it is important to delve into the topic.

“Do you notice the spiritual warfare going on with your spiritual family members? This personal creation story is not just for you—they will come back to this Earth as well to fight with love and compassion, further building the heavenly kingdom.”

I looked at the spirit guide with a reflection of love, thinking how I would like to help him in his next lifetime as he helped me in my lifetime.

The Heavenly Father said, “Author, this is karma in some ways—karma that impels the story to shift and shape itself, building a conscious storyline for all to participate in. Where there is love and compassion, there are heavenly beings at work. Even so, as you know, not all people feel secure in this upward spiritual path.

“The notion of love versus war is common, and therefore the divisive thoughts against other communities can be explored. The desire to exercise pain on others—when there is simply a difference in how to act compassionately—is hatred. As I pointed out, the overvaluing of one’s community story is deeply personalized and felt. Author, you must, as a community builder, lead in the way of acceptance.

“The way toward listening is reflective, so understand the stories at a larger level of space and time and with an understanding of history. This is how you will understand communities—it takes more effort to understand the bigger storylines than just reading a history

book. You must ask several people questions and learn their stories.

“Author, it takes away from your own time to tell your story. It takes time to listen, process, and incorporate a compassionate emotion within your community response. Do you understand that you are giving up your own storyline to advance peace?

“So, just as you were to give the energy to the community to gain strength in conscious understanding, this can be applied again. Do you understand that you cannot just believe in one’s own narrative and community story? This self-centered and ethnocentric perspective, if focused on enough, falls back in on itself. Your community will be drawn to create false hope in their own storyline and build division with anyone who does not fit their ideal story.

“To shine in the world *together* is peace, happiness, and compassion.”

The Heavenly Father concluded, “Author, you hear a voice in this vibration pleading to help identify peace as the outcome for the world. This prayer is still non-abiding in a sense. We will talk further on divisions of peace and boundaries within a spiritual context soon.”

I began to wonder how I could begin to listen to a person’s and community’s energy level instead of their storylines in the surroundings. Tuning into the frequencies of the much bigger creation stories in a universal sense is what I sought. This would take practice in meditation, but I also knew I had my spiritual family members working to help me understand the world. That gave



me a sense of profound purpose and a calling to delve into these ideas.

## Chapter Fourteen

“Author, began my spirit guide, “here is an important lesson to help you understand how the connections we live with are entangled. We are in a community and live with purpose. Each person or individual will want to do what is best for themselves and those they care for. This history comes together with future aspirations of doing great deeds in this lifetime, and those aspirations are weighted between how to utilize their historical connections and how to be effective without them. Let me explain.

“As humans, the people who go forward and backward in momentum feel their shifts in emotions deeply. So when a person remembers the happier times when they were connected with others, they put those expectations and ambitions on their future desires. This also moves everyone entangled in their community to understand how such emotions feel (depending on how anxious or close someone is to understanding another’s emotions). Therefore, to reiterate, emotions become contagious as they ripple between people.

“Now, Author, as a byproduct of awareness, you need to think of what people in your community are saying to you and others—they could be manipulative if you are not directly involved in these ambitious plans. This power-dealing is dangerous as it breeds the ‘us versus them’ mentality from which war ensues. This power-seeking is involved with those who have ambitions and are willing to maneuver people who are connected

through their ambitions in a historical sense. Be very wary of these individuals as they are often out to fulfill their own agendas.

“In this heavenly abode, we can help you answer many questions from which spiritual family members can protect you and give you clarity of thought. Do you understand that in the garden, we see things growing in connectedness for your lifetime? By continuing to appreciate the world and the moment you are given with each breath, happiness can become realized.

“Author, the signs we share are very real, but it takes your awareness to act on such signs. It is important to realize that those who wear masks in your community are ripping apart the fabric of the social order to gain more ability or leverage. Some will do this through powerful maneuvering, lies, and deceit, while others may use their influence to remake the past for their emotional congruence. However, there is a secret to dealing with the power of push and pull between the actors in life.

“The secret is simply to stay out of their reach. Keep them at bay with your words and actions. Their presence is a constant reminder that evil exists in the world, and when they influence your community or create positions of power for others, then pray to us in the heavens. Compassion is only given to those who will receive compassion. If there are those who do not see their deeds as evil, then follow up with the community who understands evil and protects their children from it.

“Simply put, building a community where those who are evil cannot exist within it—it will split. The

strength you have given these ideas is fair, so now let's look at building the community that protects its own from evil."

I began to wonder where I would find myself in a community so protected from evil that the doors of the hearts are kept open for each other.

My spirit guide continued, "Author, you will understand that in the garden you have spiritual family members working within your actions. Some community is evolved and entered into through professional networks. These communities may involve trading goods or services through teams that you have no control over interacting with. This may give you evil encounters just through the people in the network. You must keep these people away from you to stifle their abilities to hurt your position in society.

"Remember that what we are advancing is the community you build for your family and friends. These communities can influence such evildoers and protect you from their path. Do you understand the differences there? The boundaries are physical, emotional, and mental. The spiritual balance between the world lived and the community developed is one where our spiritual family will continue to guide you.

"Now, readers," my spirit guide said, "I will take you to the knowledge of the garden in heaven. It is up to the Lord to grace each of you with the garden, so pray to the Lord in spirit that you live up to his awareness. This awareness is the perfect balance between sensemaking and appreciation of yourself. You must deliver that love

of understanding a perspective with authenticity in spirit to the Lord. Sacrifice your ego—the deliverer of power and influence. Your intention and actions will influence what outcome will occur versus being controlled by the history of emotions you want to be repeated. Reader, know that in the moment of goodwill and acceptance the garden will become apparent.

“Author, listen to this growth. Find these moments of learning with other people so you may grow the seeds of community, for this is where evil cannot prey on your soul.”

I felt the spirit guide wish for me to understand his wisdom, and I felt he was partly influencing my soul. This entangled shared energy was a source of strength.

“Lean more on this feeling to understand more about yourself and the people I bring into your life. Follow your understanding to learn from these seeds because in the garden where these seeds are planted, you will understand the truth about how others suffer from the evildoers on Earth. And from your friendship, may you understand the home for which you would like to plant roots.”

My spiritual family gathered around me in the garden and whispered prayers upon my spirit. I noticed that I was being healed from the pull and push of those around me. I cared less about that community where I had felt evil and centered myself on those who wished protection from evildoers together. That meant I could focus on my happiness away from my beloved commu-

nity to participate in a professional society with the strength of spiritual understanding.

“The lessons will continue to reveal how you can use your conscious voice as a moral compass while in society,” said my spirit guide. “You, Author, will understand the division between the balance of limitations and continual strength while we have our conversations. This will benefit you not only in this lifetime, but also in the future lifetimes you will live.”

I sat into the lessons. I found myself in a strange place where I acknowledged the pressure society places on each person, and I understood my limited strength to shift that community at a local level. The size of my community helped me balance that dynamic of societal pressure and my reaction to it.

“Author, know that home is not always what is expected either. We will give you requests from the spiritual family to understand through God’s Word. At times, you will acknowledge these lessons from your own prayerful acceptance. Other times, angels will be sent to create these messages in your life. And at some other times, you may catch messages from the heavens intervening in your consciousness. Regardless of the medium through which you learn of our requests, you will deliver on that request to understand what your spiritual family wills for your community. This is for your best life plan.”

## Chapter Fifteen

There was a moment when I understood that many different communities existed in my conscious recognition.

“Author, you may not understand how to penetrate the silence when asking for forgiveness. This is something on a community level we can discuss.”

The Heavenly Father had entered the conversation. He continued, “Author, you have and will understand that in listening to the chorus of entangled communities, you can decipher part of their stories. Some stories are just what they seem to be in the moment of your reality, yet others are rooted in a deep level of insecurity. The insecure nature of the voices in a community is where power and influence flow back and forth as it reorganizes itself.

“And yet, when we discuss these topics with you, understand the good in nature. The holy and fully aware people in communities can hold off on evil because it’s their nature to do so. Realize that, as was discussed before, by seeking the Lord in the community, you may find peace to realize the chaotic nature of things.

“Those individuals who choose to follow their desires and mistreat others for their own agendas will mislead themselves by listening to snakes. And those who wish to have their pasts replicated, based on their desires, will be lulled into lust. They will appease the stories of the crowd and not stand for their beliefs.

“Therefore Author, much will be determined about how you walk in a straight path without faltering at these stories. It is when you fail and blame God that you will apologize to me. Since you still have strength and resolve, you will understand that there is a gift in love for humanity, and that love will also allow you to be hurt. Know that I do not cause this pain. I protect you and will help you understand the living story of my Word and my plan.

“You will see this through and understand where some will inflict harm on your community. You will understand that while their war is within themselves, it is being pushed outward on your community, and those in your trust will question you and their own faith. This is common, but remember to accept what you can and keep your boundaries so you will not accept too much responsibility. The world is craving madness right now as hate is fueling war.”

God continued, “I wish you to know something else that will be difficult to accept and deal with—you will be punished for your faith. This may be more than insults and rudeness, and when you are punished, you will look for help. This is not to be swallowed whole by yourself alone. You can trust in the Word and the plan and the purpose you have grown to understand. This purpose of serving your faith is then to be expressed in life. Even under punishment, you must believe in us, your heavenly family.

“The rewards then are great indeed. You will understand that the garden is a path forward into a revisit-



ing of the Christ spirit, and you will be glorious to behold in your attempt to reconcile how you suffered and still believed in your lifetime because the reward of heaven and faith is an impression in my plan. You will have your faith and spiritual family meet you in the garden where there will be much to discuss in how you created the strength and resolve for others to follow.”

The Heavenly Father said, “Now, you are not perfect. You will falter in faith, and that faith will be a slumber of awareness in your lifetime. Or it may be that you blame me for the evil that occurs. This faltering is because you are limited. You do not need to suffer, though, for faith. You need to feel adequate and strong for what you behold. You do not need to feel anything at all at times. Just be resolute to return to the spirit, breathing in and out as awareness when evil tempts you.

“The stories themselves change. But when they go back and forth between past and future agendas and when time stands still, those watching will witness the creative spirit in action. This is only accepted by those who are present and aware enough to let the spirit of the Lord into their presence, and the strength that comes with that contributes to or even challenges evil in a loving way. This is a way you can change the world, and in those moments where you believe so much in my Word that you are willing to stand up and be a shining light, then let all else go!”

The Heavenly Father gathered my spiritual family around me and said, “Remember when we spoke of the mansions of consciousness in heaven? We will have that

name of ours in the world yet, and the memory of your bravery against evil will pave the way for part of the mansions along the Earth. The Lord will return, and it will be in a higher consciousness realm within the Earth. Lifted up as an example of such bravery, you will understand why the rewards are grand.

“Author, you belong to many communities. You do not have as much control over the people and surroundings in some as you do in others. But you do have the light that shines within you to manifest. This leap in faith is a forwarding of the plan we have for the Lord’s return, so let that be with you here. Know that you will falter, but you will still spread and support the idea of the heavenly kingdom on Earth.”

I looked around my spiritual family in the garden, and I realized that it was true—the world was chaos around me, and I had only one way out that I was satisfied with—I must be authentic and deliver on my agreement with God that I would live out his plan.

“Author,” said God, “The communities who tell stories will be astonished at your ability to shine in my heavens. You will learn that the Word we present to you is fundamental to all souls.

“When Jesus went to the base of the abyss and spoke to your slumbering soul, you were awakened. From the time you sought us, we have helped in this progression. Continue to build on the community by planting seeds and spreading roots. There will be more to cherish as we continue to delve into how you will survive evil.”

## Chapter Sixteen

“It is difficult to maintain composure and happiness when evil surrounds you. This is a difference for many who feel they cannot work from their heart around this evil. Let me explain the evil I speak of.”

The Holy Father continued as he revealed his Word to me. “Being introduced to the war inside others is very difficult to handle. This war for their sanity is not easy to witness at times. When the spiritually inclined person sees and feels evil winning over a group, it may feel like it is time to leave so they will not be constantly bombarded with evil intentions. However, if one cannot leave, then they will fight for me, your God.”

I felt that the evil in the surroundings, the community built between good and evil, is astonishingly stark. Leading with the light of one’s heart can only do so much before evil is spread and others find pleasure in this attitude.

The Heavenly Father said, “You understand there is war inside all people. This is not always a war between evil and good, but at times it is. The good comes from a tendency to love through the heart, while evil is a war against others to achieve such greed or lust in the serpent’s agenda. Find what is necessary to understand that most days are mundane. The people throughout past centuries do not inflict so much pain onto each other as they do in today’s world. The awareness of good versus

evil has become more starkly evident to those being awakened to the war inside themselves.

“Let us look closely at why this evil exists. Using the heart does not create a tendency to build war, but philosophy and hatred can be used to stir the group together.”

I focused on the evildoers in the world’s surroundings, and I wondered why they forced evil into their communities. The evildoers from the society said, “The serpent does what it wants to keep everyone under its power. It is something of a natural order that we buy into. This order is nothing newly discovered—it is a long-standing tool for those who are aware and anxious to build their homes on the backs of others. It’s competitive. The world is competitive. Therefore, we think ourselves smart to eat the morals of the good and take what we earn for ourselves.”

The evildoers then said, “We will band together under the humor of hurting others. This humor of infighting will gift us sanity—that will be our legacy. Causing hurt in people is fun when there is a strong response from the good. This is what it takes to make it in a competitive world.”

The evil serpent then spoke. “Author, you have wondered about the community and not asked my council. Evil is effective in several ways that assure lust and greed from those around you. Those who are good will not fill the gaps where lust and greed can be had, so the ones who are anxious and willing will acquire these thoughts and will go further in hurting the ones who are good just

for their prize. Their eyes are tempted and thoughts hypnotized to gain the fulfillment of their desires.”

I wondered about community, though. I asked why evil would purposely create division in the community to listen to their own story.

The evil serpent said, “Author, you know that the community built in this world is of narratives. The stories told by each person are an opportunity and a threat to themselves. That said, the person who asks for good to occur will have a mirror shown to them—they will be tested to see if they truly are good and holy because they want something very different from what others want. The good want happiness, yes. They also want the good to win over the crowd and to be happy around them. The evildoers do not recognize this, as they are more than likely wondering what is in this happiness for themselves. So the quest for happiness is curious and questioned as a motive so evildoers can use it to hurt the good for the sake of amusement.”

The evildoers in the world then spoke up and said, “Author, your faults are on display with how you treat others. You do not wish to be hurt but rather understood for your efforts. No evildoer wants to hurt themselves, so they turn you into a trial.”

The serpent then said, “Author, community is a collection of stories, and that humor binds together the evil to achieve more power. That is all I can tell you from an evil perspective.”

I inquired what the spirit guide would say about this and how compassion works. I wondered how the world

would survive through compassion to end suffering in the world.

“Author,” said my spirit guide, “this is not the easiest material for anyone to read. The person who wants to help and do well in their lives may find a reason to put a mask back on with this reading as it can bring up trauma. The evildoers hurt others and laugh and inflict pain. That is real. But having compassion for oneself to find happiness is good. Continue to control yourself in the moment and wish for paradise from afar if you can.”

I sat back, uneasy about understanding community from this perspective. To love from my heart and feel good about sharing my light draws attention to building community, and for that effort, my faults will be mirrored. The humor of those who do not understand the holy and good will attack through gaps where they see gains to be realized. Why would I fight the serpent by leading through the heart?

My spirit guide said, “You will understand that other people who are shy and inward may trust you more through your actions. Those are the communities that will fight evil together in the future. This is the community you are searching to build.”

It is hard to be tested through the world, but it may serve its purpose. It is important to know who is strong and holy versus who is evil.

The Heavenly Father said, “Author, it is not easy to understand a community’s storyline under the conscious voice. You are waking up other people to their evil habits, and these evil patterns are not nice. They are

buried, but you will awaken them to the good. However, Author, this takes time and heart.”

## Chapter Seventeen

“Author, I would like to address the readers of this story for a moment,” the Heavenly Father began.

“Readers, I believe you should understand the limitations one may have in understanding the subconscious stories that unfold for communities. This is a larger consciousness than most would understand. The secret to understanding evil and good in society is to reflect continuously on the world that surrounds you. If, readers, you ceased refusing to face the world and fighting it so harshly but instead investigated the truest motivations of the community, you could move beyond unresolved acceptance. Do you understand that many people are inconsistent with how they accept themselves in communities? They are less inclined now than ever before to be fully vested in the people who might add to their life experience. Instead, people tend to follow the natural progression of life without the effort of staying heartfelt.

“Now, Author, I would like you to understand another point,” the Heavenly Father said as he turned back to me. “You may have an effective prayer to listen to the Word for yourself, but others, as they follow their natural lifestyle, do not understand why community is as important a topic for them as it is for you.

“You have said to me that life is made of connections, and those connections strengthen the relationships that might occur for us to live in peace. But you have also stated that it is often not good but rather evil



in ways that awaken the community. You will say that things are hard to digest for most as they listen to the stories of others, especially in their hearts, as they wish to push agendas. And often, you have mentioned your aversion to fighting.

“Therefore, Author, let us dive into the ‘why’ question of being part of a community. Your community has a relaxed atmosphere, and the company is understood as friendly. These friends in a community may be rather supportive of you. As you turn toward the community to offer more of yourself in compassion and honoring your traits, you might even enjoy the company of others more as the community comes together more often. Therefore, you realize your innate gifts with other people and can refine your love and humor with them.

“But Author, the feeling of war and listening to stories loaded with ethnocentric verbiage are real threats in any community. To most, it goes unheard. That said, I will repeat the idea for you here. You, Author, want so much good to be filled in your community that the lesser of those wanting such happiness will fight you. If the good is fought, what is there to do? That is where a community of faithful enters the story. Do you understand that the faithful will support you and provide advice and counsel? This is necessary for anyone who feels like they are subject to ridicule. *You* need to balance the surroundings with a positive mindset—happiness is a choice, but there are those who need spiritual space as well. Those who are good in a community, where you share your

traits and are appreciated, can help you build some distance from the evildoers.

“Now, different communities can offer different relationships. In the heart’s consciousness, you can speak to friends who you feel are trustworthy. Talk from the heart and grow those shared experiences. You can have love in the heart in personal relationships. Furthermore, the interpretation of dreams, used to actualize the metaphor of those dreams in life, can be processed with help from your trustworthy friends. This is where the heavens are restorative in nature and help alleviate the inflicted pain.

“Therefore, Author and reader, there is great merit to having a community with which to be resilient. Memories of friendship are deep and profound—memories are relationships embedded in the surroundings, but they also have spiritual significance. These memories are also the manifestation of those dreams we want to actualize. Therefore, those who think of their friends and want to remain in similar friendships are acting in good faith, and those who choose to fight with ambition before God with the knowledge of their surroundings are working in God’s path. Do you see the intent is different from evil to good when the heart is being followed through God’s purpose?

“Community stories are to be learned from other communities. This then shines a reality of our faith in each other. One God helps us understand love, laughter, and light. However, your heavenly spiritual families, your spirit guides and angels, may also help you under-

stand the world around you. Thus, the stories you learn are in silence and compassion.

“Now, Author, address the readers briefly with a story you can share that will help them understand your book. This story is of your family on Earth. Remember that you will not recite falsities in this book.”

So I wrote to the readers what came in my mind. “Readers, I tell you very briefly a story of my family. We are not very close. I have said before in another story how I wished to follow my higher self and be diligent to my father and mother. However, I feel that my father never accepted me. Therefore, I had my Heavenly Father to guard me. These storylines have been repeated and echoed throughout my lifetime. They are so ingrained that when I felt pressured by my community, I experienced a feeling that was reminiscent of the experience with my father, and I sought solace in God.”

My Heavenly Father said, “By reflecting on the community stories we belong to, we examine the actualization of our life stories. This is one such metaphor that you live with. The other side is how your father interacted with you and your surroundings. It is a tipping point, but ask forgiveness for him so that he may be forgiven by your Heavenly Father. This story has an apex through me, your God, and in that apex, your father will be drawn to me in conversation. You can rest easy rather than assume he has power over your worldview. This is giving up the hard love to the Heavenly Kingdom.

“Author, you will begin to understand that it is in evildoers’ best interest to live according to the heavenly

path set out for them, even though they have free will. It is best if you find the people who make you happiest and find time to build those friendships, and the rest of the people will return that hard love to me.”

## Chapter Eighteen

I went to the waters above the filament and looked bleakly out at the polluted universes. God had created something of a home for the serpent and his followers, and I wondered how God would handle the individuals with whom I had had such a difficult time.

The Heavenly Father said, "Author, do not mind these people. They were and continue to be difficult personalities in the living form. But remember that you are yourself. You are not the one who worries over when and how they afflicted you. These people want to see themselves in the world as masterful. I do not understand why they let the serpent lead, but they do.

"Now come back from that barrier between our heavenly kingdom and the wretched ones. Come back to understand my wishes for you once more. You can and will have the confidence to secure my stories for the world to read."

God continued, "Remember all the heavenly family members with you, and take a look at the readers as well. You have come so far in understanding yourself and the position you have in building goodness into the community. I have a fear that you will treasure what the community thinks of you, so I will give you a chance to explore that narrative."

I wished to know what exactly was created in the community and how I had helped establish such good-

ness. I praised the community and in essence wanted their approval.

“Author, do not praise yourself so easily—that is a temptation waiting to occur. Instead, focus on the path forward. The light is in discussion here.

“Oh readers, you may wish to know what has occurred as the Author has been building a community. He has established an order onto the group of community members both good and evil. They are like magnets upon which they balance friction and fear on each other, yet the good will triumph as they hold the power within the group. Readers, know the magnets that these people work within are very similar to those positions of positive and negative personalities—some lean more toward the heavens and others toward hell. The masculine and feminine energies then are at play as they are willing to learn from one another and laugh while understanding one another’s strengths.”

I accepted that response as I understood how I participated in this community. As it was evolving, I mentioned to God that I was willing to help as many people understand the topic as possible, and how this was to my own detriment—some attempted to inflict pain to see how I would react. I felt strong, but it took me into deep thought to choose happiness and accept what was said as the community story.

“That’s right, Author,” God said. “When you understood the evil and helped people process it to become a better version of themselves, they took their pain and inflicted it on the good. What they saw as evil in them-

selves and others, they enjoyed in the moment. But realize some still wanted to better themselves.

“Oh readers, it is not that the Author needed to sacrifice so others could learn of their sins. He does not cure sinfulness and fears it still. It is for the community to come together in the stage of narration so the Author can recognize he is not in charge nor does he need to control anyone. Rather he needs to realize that the path forward is of enjoyment.”

God looked into my soul and I felt myself lifted from my earthly body through the center of my mind and into the center of the universe.

“There is a connection that can happen here,” said the Holy Father. “As I am one with everyone in your community, in the center of the universe energy revolves around a magnetic pole. In this universe, where multiple people act and react according to their feelings, I will offer insight.

“Author, when you are in the center of the universe and see all things powerful, what do your instincts tell you?”

I saw an eye open up above the world and in it was myself. I was in that center of the universe, and consciousness was neither positive nor negative.

“Author, you have realized that you are both a creature and a spiritual being. In this knowledge, the forces of opposites do not exist at all.”

God continued, “You know now how much I love you. I will show you how others are fighting to remain in balance within your community on Earth.”

Turning his attention to the readers, God explained, “Do you know that you always have both positive and negative forces at work? With this knowledge, you can understand the nature of other individuals around you. This will let you master your life while understanding that you contribute to society. Understand that the Author is going to show how other people tip and pull at the apex of his forces, and he is secured in this position of gravity.

“Author, you are a child of mine, and will forever be my child. You are not the savior though. You are a man who wants to please his fellow community members right now and show them that you understand me. Yet you need to focus on the universal center in your heart and mind. This alignment will allow me to pass through your surroundings and transform your relationships and the arrangement of the surrounding stories to our knowledge. It is difficult to maneuver, but you can still yourself and slow time down to what seems like a standstill.

“Author, you know that there is much to discuss yet with the people in your communities—both professional and personal. Yet we will delve into these minute details later. I will first tell you that not all people listen, including the readers who will second guess and feel discomfort in the answers I have for society. They will ask whether what is told in this story is really the best or most optimal way to showcase our path. Yet, Author, you will do your best and navigate the terrain to our advantage. This apex of all forces negative and positive is nei-



ther good nor evil. It is an eye in the chaos of choice, and in that center of calmness is a rationale. That is, you will find both opportunity and threat as you peer into the nature of others. Let us walk through an example.

“Author, this will transform you. I will look upon your position in the center of the universe with favor. You will understand my requests from the dreams you have in the mind, and in that understanding, you will feel a certain confidence that will be conveyed in your surroundings. You will choose the good in the world to showcase your ability.

“Your ability to navigate the complexities of operations while staying in the natural timeliness of the world surrounding you may be a bit difficult. It may feel like you are dreaming and need to act in an extreme way. Stay collected. What I show you and our path is for this story. I will care for you. I want you to decide in your lifetime what you are willing to accomplish for us.

“Author, I know you feel scared to step outside the normalcy of the everyday world, and I agree that my answers are overpowering. We can look at this discomfort together. Remember, you are close to me, and although my timeliness may feel abrupt, let us take this in step together.”

## Chapter Nineteen

The Heavenly Father said, “Do you understand, Readers, that this growing community story includes yourselves? That in this storyline of pain and ignorance, to be awakened is to see it manifest itself away from you? That is, the devils will leave as you sin less and less.

“Within the eye of the universe, where I brought him, the Author has forgiven himself and the evils in the community. He has little to understand now that he is in the apex of the living spirit of his communities. The stories are falling into place as they turn from the distinction of masculine and feminine energies. He has awakened some to their devilish ways and shown how to improve and bring conversations to light and laughter.

“The evil that was created in the communities is awakening itself to a much larger devil. The community can then explain their wisdom and stories told or create a high order. This willingness to expunge evil to improve the consciousness of others takes much compassion. The mansions will be built then, and others will be uplifted into society at large.”

The Father continued, “Author, understand now that the people who were ignorant and evil are curious to learn how you approached solving the devilish curses from you soul.”

I understood and spoke out to the readers, “The mistake made is to keep control over the people who are ignorant and hurtful. Do not intend harm them. Instead,

cast your light in your own heart and send your love into the world. Time will heal the soul. The light will be made more abundant as friends are made, and in that storyline for oneself and friends, there can be protection from the devils entering back into the soul. There are good times to stay present for—there will be less to be anxious about and more to be confident for.

“Oh readers,” I said, “Please know that I do not have all the answers to give to you. I know that some will allow their negative and masculine attitudes wrestle with these thoughts. They might challenge the storylines and wish that they could actualize the feelings to understand it for their physical sensemaking capabilities. And I know that some will allow their positive and feminine energies uphold their view that good will never falter. But I assure you, through all this positivity there can be challenges to this attitude as it is hard to be ostracized from the group. The peer pressure may lead you to understand these thoughts just by your own internalized viewpoint.

“Therefore, readers, I want you to imagine us in conversation—one in which I could help put the concerns you might have in understanding this storyline in context and narrative. In the community, at the apex where there are no negative or positive forces, no evil or good at play, I see the music and its far-reaching vibration. I imagine that you may hear these negative and positive tones in conversation as well.”

The Heavenly Father said, “Author, you have understood the apex as a familiar conversation. That is awk-

wardly brilliant; however, the apex of the community is much larger than seeing and hearing these ideas form together as a musical vibration. You see, the stories are created in confidence for each person so they may build their faith in Jesus.

“In this moment, as my son Jesus was created and died for the sins of others, may he awaken those who still live in hell at a very deep level of consciousness. This avenue of bringing those unaware and asleep into the community is scary. This is because they may not understand how evil they were and how manipulated they still are by the demons that haunt them.

“So, the good may have conversations of light and laughter as masculine and feminine energies overlap and create a current of laughter. However, the pain in society is going to be revealed when those who do not awaken to the light of the heavens is it is extinguished.

“Author, look into the polluted waters of the universes. Look toward the serpent, and understand what I mean for your path forward.”

I went out of the heavenly kingdom’s gates and looked into the waters under the filament. I saw the polluted waters of the serpent. I witnessed the pain of war from humanity. I saw feminine energy across the Earth. I witnessed much needless hunger and thirst. And through the humanmade violence occurring, I witnessed the death of many communities.

The Heavenly Father said, “Author, how is it that you are willing to give so much of your abilities to the

good in life and want to share yourself when this is occurring?”

I answered by speaking to the readers. “Readers, do you understand that we lead multiple lives to build the kingdom of heaven? Do you not want to awaken and draw on strength to fight for the goodness in God? The bedeviled are marching under a trance of lies told through many streams of conversation, and some are willing to make our lives extinct.”

The chorus of readers, through the spirit of the Lord, cried out from their love, “Do not let this happen then. Do not let us down without a fight. But who are we to act in violence to overcome violence?”

The Heavenly Father answered, “The serpent sees you act, oh readers. It sees and sends its mighty powers to challenge the good and light in your lifetimes. Do you not want to live in a special time of spiritual awakening across the world?”

The readers agreed with God. “We can spread the light and laughter of the world. We can speak of the issues at hand and shine light upon the issues through our communities. We can think for ourselves and trample on the decisions of those who create evil. Our communities can sound our disapproval and even fight for you where possible. Is this what you ask of us?”

I said to the Heavenly Father, “If all things are quieted from chaos, and you can remake the stories of the world through the people with love in their hearts, is compassion enough?”

The Heavenly Father said, “I agree with you—the serpent can still be thwarted through your graces. The communities who want to incite war among the serpent’s gaze are few, and I will talk at length about this with you, dear readers and with you, Author. However, Author, you can achieve your abilities to build community with the advancement of knowing how ties are built into it. The social networking of order can be useful to disavow evil or arrogance. Cast those who are evil out of the communities you build. Keep watch at the gates for those who follow the devil.

“Author, follow this advice. You are building a community with a perspective of a heavenly order, but the serpent resides in the abyss for a reason. The serpent thought itself God and chose to reflect on this thought enough to war with me. Those who recognize the serpent in others will show compassion to a degree. They can speak out against the serpent. They can protect their spiritual community from the serpent. And if need be, they will fight the serpent for me, their God.”

## Chapter Twenty

Here I was in the center of the universe, at the apex of all the forces I could feel, and I looked upon the waters at the serpent once more. I said to myself, *let us see how we can help to build the communities and society we want through understanding the serpent's ambitions.*

The serpent said, "Do you not want to understand more about how I can help you? Why do you care about building communities? There are evil men and women in the world who do deranged attacks and inflict pain on so many. Do you really want to make protecting communities your mission or purpose? To protect a community is difficult—it takes everyone in that community to get along without exercising their tempers against each other. In life, the struggle to advance in power is so real that I can offer it to you here instead."

I struggled to understand how everyone wants power and light, and I made this request clear to the serpent. I thought about the heavenly father and how he might have answered it as well, but I saved that question for later.

The serpent said, "The power is not light, and the light has some power to it. Spiritual light takes away pain and therefore alters a person's perspective. However, the power I am addressing involves communities, and, through community, let me say that there is much more under the surface of sensemaking that occurs for each person. Their desire to deliver on their agreements

is such a power. That is, how does trust evolve in each person, and how do people accept the other person as trustworthy? Now, if you were not to accept a person who has power as trustworthy, and you often interact with them, it would cause emotions that broil under the surface difficult to handle. They may treat you as subservient at best, and they may create an environment of toxicity for you as well. They may even torture you."

The serpent continued, "So how does that power and honesty and light play into the elements of community? When the natural state of humanity is evil or asleep in this world, how do others accept or fight against them?"

I mentioned that I keep away from those people from the community through boundaries, speech, protection, and fighting. I said to my readers, "If it is so easy, why would we all struggle so much at building fine and good communities? Is this not the way?"

The serpent said, "The evil in your answer is this: The community often does not understand which story to believe. If someone has power and inflicts pain on people, they can become subdued to resistance, and in those moments of subdued resistance, there is much acceptance of power from other people. You see, it is not a two-sided conversation—good and evil is not the question. The question has more to do with who can enforce the good. Do you see, Author, trust is where others can believe in their sanity, and in that trust you must know that these stories of good versus evil are being evaluated."



I thought of standing armies in the communities where we live.

The serpent continued, “Well there is that. But even those who exercise enforcement need to be guided by the community. There needs to be interaction to understand the storylines that lead up to and away from abuse of power.”

I said to the readers, “I wonder if there is a way to reach a consensus on how much intervention a community has in each lifetime. Can we have a storyline for each community member as a way to check their power, so we can trust in the community itself?”

Then I thought of God. I thought that this may be a conversation to start with God on how light and trust can check power between people in the community.

The serpent said, “It is not this way in your lifetime. You do not know your neighbors, and in that lack of knowledge, you are uneasy about they might abuse their power in their dealings with you, and that lack of community affects you. Do you see how you give away part of yourself to the community so you may grow in your societal roots, and how that develops friendships to help you when you need support?”

I felt waves of goodness overwhelm me in the apex of the universe. I felt the Heavenly Father intervene in my conversation with the serpent.

The Heavenly Father asked, “Author, where do you not trust people in your lifetime? Check your memories and witness that the lack of trust breeds negative expectations and connotations. These may be a misunder-

standing or they may play out in difficulties you have accepting the other person because they have your strengths or weaknesses. Or they may, in fact, be evil and untrustworthy. In all, there are many reasons why not to trust someone. But how does one understand their perception in these untrustworthy situations and then discuss them with the community—especially when it involves people in power or those who abuse their rights as declared by the community? We should think of this.”

The serpent screamed into itself at the light of the Heavenly Father. It said, “As much as I have offered already, the power will be devoted to those who work against themselves—they do not know power as a function of abuse. That abuse is a lie in most cases. Their stories are those that say, *I have an agenda and am willing to move people around to get that agenda*, and that story just feeds into how I tempt them through lies and lust.”

The Heavenly Father agreed. “The serpent is correct in that stories can deceive. How do you trust someone who does not have purpose and promise within the heavenly realm? If they slumber and lie for power, how do you protect others in the community?”

The Heavenly Father continued, “Author, you have an advantage over others in the way you can answer these questions. You can build into your stories a community-based approach to understanding the stories told. You can imagine that the community started in the heart, a heart that protects its body with nutritious resources so it may flourish. Expect to understand not only how trust

is enforced, but also how the community comes together in sharing their stories.

The serpent was inquisitive about this. It asked, “How is it that the right to protect is for others to judge? That is where I am curious—do you think I cannot penetrate the community?”

The serpent felt victorious at this point. I felt it slide under that waters of the filament, into the rocky base under the waters. I wondered if the serpent was going to try to enforce its line of reasoning in my surroundings.

The Heavenly Father said, “Let the serpent fight and attack. We can continue to discuss the resolution you so truly want—a community that fosters love, light, and laughter.”

## Chapter Twenty-One

“Author,” said the Heavenly Father, “do not think of yourself as an idol. You are a community member within the community. Therefore, there is no one more apt to discuss the rules governing the community. However, it is also true that you might not like others and, just as true, they might not like you.”

In the apex of the universe I asked the Heavenly Father how long I had blindly followed my own passion despite resolving the issue that others may not like me.

“Author, you need to know that you are a good man, even though others may not understand you. Or they may simply want what you have. I cannot speak to every emotional discussion others have had regarding you in the realm of superficial wants, but as your Heavenly Father I understand that this principle applies to the stories told in society.

“How do you keep one person out of the community without rules? And how do you understand those stories where someone has broken the rules but not in the flesh? Are evil thoughts enough to banish others? It is difficult to decide such things, but I have confidence you will be able to handle these difficult questions because you are strong enough to understand that you are not liked by some, which is also difficult. So how do you decide another’s fate? Is it through prayer?

“Author, I would offer the golden rule to help you decide these ideas.”

The Heavenly Father continued, “Dear readers, if there are memories that the Author has not awoken to, is he still held accountable for being asleep and broken? Are there narratives of him showing his goodwill since awakening through stories helped him receive your grace? Is it obvious when a heart can talk of giving grace compared to adhering to a hard set of rules?”

I asked myself which memories I hold that might prevent others from liking me. And even in the case of memories in which I let my conscience lead, how would I ask for grace?

The Heavenly Father said, “If you were to receive the same plea of forgiveness and grace from someone you did not care for, would you receive them? How would you know that plea is heartfelt without their own explanation of memory? How would a community define these stories, Author?”

From the apex of the universe, I had an instinct to ask the serpent this question: “Serpent, how do those whom you imprison in the world through lies and torment make themselves free to be part of a heavenly kingdom on Earth?”

The serpent laughed as if I would not trust his reply. “Author, do you know that many want to accept you as a prophet, yet you are not? You merely have the ability to write out on paper the favors of the heavenly realm. You give yourself a pedigree of perfection for this trust that is bestowed on you—your memory is not what shines but it is your willingness to take the words and write them out as you hear them through the heart. That is good and

moral work. So why do you want to know how the light fascinates me?”

The Heavenly Father looked to the serpent from my vantage point then said to me, “Author, he answered your request of him. He answered to your talents, noting that you give them to the heavenly kingdom. And in return for your selflessness, you have been given light to connect to the heavenly kingdom. This is a meditative response, but it is accurate.”

The serpent continued to talk with me. “Author, I know that you are aware of the light and bathe in it when you speak to other people. Do you not understand that connection is a vibration? Do you not trust what your heart tells you about that person’s light?”

I understood well enough that I had been holding fear—the fear of not being liked made me ignore and suppress that idea for a long time. I went about my life-time imprisoned in my own perspective, not including others as community. Therefore, I was outside any real connections and in a dark place. Without connection to other people, I did not trust them enough to forgive myself first and then others.

The Heavenly Father said to the serpent, “Now that you understand that while the Author was in the hell of a self-made prison, he now is moved to forgive himself first and then others—he checks the hatred within first and then receives the grace to forgive another.

“Author,” continued God, “if this were the rule—the first type of agreement between community members—what would that look like? Is it compassionate to

accept some suffering for graceful forgiveness? And with that, does compassion lead you to talk with others from the heart about what compels you to forgive them?”

I wanted to forgive myself first and then others—again to be liked. I wanted to put a mask on to brave the fear that I may be told things from their perspective that I did not like. I wanted to be fearless in the face of adversity.

The Heavenly Father said, “You need to accept the light yet in your response. In the following discussions, we can allow this fear as it is resolved through your strengths and talents. How do you fit the neglect of yourself into your passion? And how can you make that a practice for the community?”

I thought further on his words. I said, “Heavenly Father, is it that we have positions in the community that represent the heart? That each of us has a story we practice as we evolve for the good of the community? In that tireless work can I help others as I am improving myself?”

The Heavenly Father smiled at me. “Author, in the heavenly kingdom, all souls continue to progress in their interests for the kingdom—they begin to develop in a way that is positive and less restrictive. But the concept you provided is good in that your heavenly family can help you continue that conversation on Earth. Just know the community you build now will help the members of your spiritual family in their spiritual development when they come back in their next lifetime.”

I thought what a miraculous gift it would be to understand the heavenly kingdom on Earth as one where passion is understanding suffering and giving ourselves to the improvement of others. Through the understanding of acceptance, others would resonate with that first rule of governance.

I think, when building community, I would give this rule—by being part of the community, one must offer their story of passion and how they plan to improve through it, and that they strive to forgive themselves and others through their passion.

God said, “Author, the commitment to be part of the community may show a characteristic of acceptance already. This acceptance and willingness to join will be a blessing. It is something that judgment will uphold.”



## Chapter Twenty-Two

From the apex of the universe I saw myself in the polluted waters of the universes. I saw the waves of the waters overlap in an energy that seemed like a storm was brewing, and in that moment of waves cresting on top of the universes, I noticed there was hope. A small light from the waters emerged as the chaos grew in calmness. That light was reflected from the heavens into the universes, and in each heart of souls in the waters there was a holy light. This vision was truly inspiring.

The reflection of the light that was above all, including myself, was awesome in the true sense of the word. The light then joined my thoughts as it was heavenly.

The source of light said, "Author, I do not want you to unravel all the knowing we have shared. I will give you some information, though, on what will transpire. I will show you how communities can thrive."

I looked at the Holy Lord in a moment of sheer brilliance.

The Lord's spirit said, "The weird and strange result that this will have on humanity is that community will be dictated by many outcomes, yet the space left for each individual will personalize their growth. Do you understand this? Let me explain further.

"Author, it will be some time before you fully understand my presence as your Lord in the world, yet the construction of a community can occur with hearts that are willing. You mentioned already that the hearts will

be stirred by an outcome of their choosing. Their personal narrative creates the passion they choose to reveal their talents—talents that will help and forgive throughout the community. That is good, but there is more to the community concerning protecting itself.

The community members who want to thrive will meditate and seek their place in the center of their hearts. This is a defining characteristic of the movement to build community into the heart of the social fabric.

“Now that you realize how inspired individuals may yield a purpose and passion for the community, realize the practice of bringing them to use their hearts through meditative practices. Your meditation of growth for nature is good here—focus on the light in the heart and filter it into the world as one shines with God. Each person, once centered in their hearts through patience and practice, can understand God is everywhere around them and can connect through spiritual light.

“Author, this is the second lesson for each community member. The first was to forgive themselves and others using compassion—they would do for others as they desire be done unto themselves. Next is that they develop a focused appreciation of God in their lives through meditation. This is important in community because the light that embodies the surroundings can carry to each other member. The energy in the surrounding atmosphere then changes, and a culture of giving more and looking for traits of God happen in each life. To give and appreciate is a happiness in life, and staying meditative

and aware in the moment helps each member find that happiness.

“This has been discussed before. In this story, you mentioned that there is much suffering when building a community. There are people who awaken to very traumatic thoughts around you. Some of the evil is even projected onto you as a mirror of questionable behavior, and some people in the community do not understand how to be happy. You mentioned boundaries. These boundaries were the physical, emotional, and intellectual distance you needed to remain in a meditative state of happiness. The surroundings could not pull you into the rampage of damaging pain that was ensuing for others. This is what we will discuss at the community level.

“Author,” continued my Heavenly Lord, “you remember the way you were mirrored and made fun of for simply being yourself. In building community you had given yourself to the group, and there was a bit of everyone joining to meld together to make that group. This vibration was then a story of sorts that you heard, and the pain inflicted was, on some degree, war.

“Therefore, Author, how do you want to instill a meditative practice? Would you suggest a daily routine for meditation? Would you suggest centering oneself and then reflecting on each person’s faith? From within yourself, Author, what do you see as practical?

“Author, meditation centers oneself, so here is advice from the Lord. The practice to meditate is good. Some will elect to reflect on it through their passion—this is so they may practice their talent for the group in a ritual of

celebrating God around them. Others might have feelings of trauma they are working through—this may be a time to talk about being forgiven by the group. This forgiveness is in part a release to the group for which they want to rebuild their purpose. That is good as well.

“Therefore, the practice of storytelling is needed to be preached. The art form of telling stories to inspire and rebuild the group are needed as meditation concludes and reflection begins.

“This is a time of prayerful healing. It is exciting to understand that others in your community might share their thoughts and energy together in a positive approach. The second principle of community building then is ritualized storytelling while the first was to help new community members discover and share their passion. The next principle is to help them share their experiences.”

The Holy Lord said, “The heart of the community is shared laughter and light. This carries forward for each community, unique to themselves. They will understand common themes in their language of storytelling, and those themes will require nourishment from the resources held by the community. Where can those people in community share their bonds in the social fabric? What is needed for the community to grow? And in that growth, how does the storytelling go from one community to the next?

This involves a certain passion statement for the group to concede. Committing to this focus on discussing their spiritual awakening and persistence to re-

main healthy must be decided before sharing the community narrative with others.

“Author, I help the heart of the community before we delve into its governance for a reason—the culture of the community takes form with the story told for the community itself. Where does it shift and grow within? How does it exceed its own narrative with the help of God while connecting to the outside surroundings? Where is the natural order of scarcity for the resources to grow their passions? This order is governance itself and leads to a speaking out for community governance, and topic we will discuss later.”

## Chapter Twenty-Three

“Author,” began the Holy Spirit of the Lord, “Let us investigate the reasoning behind prayerful meditation.

“The meditation of all in a community creates a greater response. In this way, the people who pray together involve each other, and, in that, they become closer. But members of the group must also discuss their lives and how God affects them to solidify the response.

“Now turn back into the waters of the universes. Look down at the serpent and find the fault of what is being considered herein. Find the serpent’s response to how evil is involved.”

I turned my attention to the serpent and awoke him to our light.

The serpent said, “Yes, Author, who knows what good comes from sharing responses of trauma and turmoil? You seek forgiveness, and as each person seeks forgiveness in their lifetime, they can develop an obnoxious attitude. They may stubbornly refuse to understand new ways affecting their trauma. It takes people mirroring them in some regard so they won’t focus on an outcome but rather their abilities to heal themselves. You have deemed that mirror to be hatred or amusement sought by the group.”

The serpent continued, “Do you think that responding by mirroring them is good or evil or both? We can say it is both, and, in this regard, the amusement that people

seek is not compassionate. So you may have a broken system for broken people.”

The Spirit of the Lord said, “There is not to be amusement when someone is confiding in another about their pain. If people understand this, it is good and whole. The sympathy of shared response is lackluster as well, but let us discuss compassion in regard to forgiveness once more.”

The Holy Lord continued, “Readers, if you discussed the things you ask forgiveness for and the ideas sought for growth in a lifetime, then allow yourself to do so with the community or a leader in the group who is specialized to help. This is an important part of group formation in a community.”

The serpent laughed and said, “Yes, it can help that person and others if they attest to their emotions and feelings. Yet when they speak, they can be damaged further, and if that happens, they have worse feelings than before. I say this for you to think about. You write with such good intentions, but when you discuss war and conflict, you have yet to attest to those in actual war. Those who fight and get physically hurt need the community’s medicine. So how do you help them? How do you help those close to death?”

The Holy Lord said, “Readers, this is not a great response to the question. Death is a physical suffering. The community provides gifts such as spiritual awakening and emotional control in community meditation and there is protection from each other in the group. It is also important to discuss the protection of the commu-

nity from the world at large. Where is the danger coming from? Is death an obstacle one can face? That is the spiritual awakening and resolution of emotions a community can hope to provide in addition to resources on a physical-spiritual death, such as funeral arrangements.”

The Holy Lord said to me, “So tell this to the snake. The emotional awareness and control of death is to be expected, and its resulting distress can be eased with community. Those who need people in place for arrangements can find such help through community. Let us ask the serpent where it feels that is problematic?”

I turned my attention to the serpent to understand why he would attack this idea. The serpent said, “I believe it is okay to provide and prepare for a respectable death for those who expect death to occur. The memories in a lifetime should be explored, but those who want to take advantage of people are available to such openness and grieving. Penalties should be in place to protect those in the process of dying so they will not be taken advantage of. Penalties are in place for families who might have conflict without respect to their loved ones during this time. Even if they are doing the burden of the work themselves, the person who is dying, if thoughtful, can describe their affairs respectfully.”

“The war that goes on for the heart is one which addresses the natural process of protecting those in turmoil and war, and it is tied to a similar to a chamber of the heart,” the Lord said. “The spiritual understanding of the community and its heart has four chambers. The one



needed to protect those in turmoil and war is the masculine lower chamber (MLC).”

The Holy Lord continued, “The heart may have four chambers; that is certain. The chambers, if replicated, are similar to what has been said. There are two halves of the heart—a left and right side which are masculine and feminine. Each of those halves has an upper and lower chamber. In this case, it is a natural aspect of life in the community.”

The Holy Lord continued, “Readers, search inside yourself and understand the stories you tell. Does it make sense in a community to have a passion and purpose to experience and forgive? Does it make sense to communicate that further with the group? And does it make sense those groups’ functions are organized into two halves of the heart as male and female?”

Now that you understand how each quadrant of the heart is tasked with certain functions, we can continue to discuss the way we hold the process of dying from a spiritual community perspective.

“The heart takes on characteristics when reviewing memories, and in that spiritual awakening for the heart, Readers, you will find both uplifting and damning memories. Understand that this time of reflection and sharing oneself in the community may have serious repercussions for some listening as they could be triggered by shared memories. In this case, spiritual occasions of impending death must come with a relativity for each person.

“Support those who cannot support themselves and carry the torch of memories on for each ensuing spiritual family member.”

While I took all this in, the serpent interrupted my thoughts. “Author now is the time to understand the natural order of the heart. The lower masculine chamber of the heart is not just for mourning. It is a place to affix much community building as well. The community building for the masculine order takes care of community decisions for housing and investment.”

And the Holy Lord said, “The heart itself can be thought of holistically. However, we will describe to you, Author, the functions of how the chambers can be organized as a community. This way, we will discuss the four heart chambers from past, present, and future perspectives. This will offer insight into the functions of each heart chamber’s spiritual process.

“Therefore, Author, the memories in one’s lifetime are of the heart. The preparation for death in life is centered in the masculine lower chamber. We will continue this stream of thought for each chamber and move on to the everyday decisions, and then we will take a look at the future outlook for the community. This is my vision for the story.”

## Chapter Twenty-Four

There was a moment when I was lost in the memories of the four heart chambers. I thought about the lower masculine heart chamber for society, and I realized that this procession of burial rights led me to recognize my place in the present moment with Jesus.

I felt the presence of the Holy Lord with me at the apex of the universe. I understood the Holy Lord as good and whole, and in the presence of Jesus Christ. I asked the Spirit of the Lord how I should experience this moment.

Jesus Christ said, "Author, it is outstanding that you have come to this moment with such regularity of visitation. I feel I can share with you this tiny detail of the heart of the community. Each community action should not be taxed by the government; the processes of regulating the chambers of the heart can be received as charity so that the community does not operate by losing what it creates.

"Author, the government should never make money from the spiritual understanding of its people. That protection of freedom limits the necessity of the community to operate at high expense and should promote community activities."

I saw the Spirit of the Lord in the form of Jesus Christ as I walked upon the waters of the universes. He went to the waters and cleansed the partly polluted waters. This brought much life to him under his feet, in-

cluding fish. At that moment, he saw my physical body in the waters.

“Author.” I saw from the apex of the universe that Jesus Christ was talking to me. “I want you to understand that I am aware of your surroundings. I lift you up to the heavens through my understanding. I lift you in my hands.”

Jesus reached into the waters of the universes and brought me into the heavens once more. I did not understand how I collapsed into the heavens from the apex of the universe—the moment was just created.

I sat shaken while Jesus discussed the idea of memories of the heart chambers for society.

Jesus said, “The community can operate in many forms. They can produce many good and sound services for the members. That is partly why I want their ability to function without being taxed by the government. This promise alone from the community to flourish is good and wholesome.

“Understand that the way the community operates is like a story told outside the government. Therefore, there is a bit of distance between the gold of power and the decisions made that affect the community so drastically. The puppeteering of government has less sway if a boundary is established for the community. However, if the government chooses to intervene in the community, then there needs to be a special request for this line of reasoning to validate the ethical behavior of the community.

“Operations are, in a sense, a way to communicate through actions from the community as a spiritual practice. Therefore, the operations of the community must take the form of spiritual practice. If this is not the case, then the community can be taxed.”

Jesus continued, “Operations of the community are to be protected in large part through the guardsmen of that community. In retaliation to the interference of the government, soldiers may defend the community. This defensive position of the community may, in fact, be a just war in fighting the government if the government position is unfounded.

“Author, I say this because I want the balance of the community to be free of any tyranny. These operations to protect the community in their spiritual practices are sound. Therefore, if the community needs to prove that their actions are indeed spiritual practice, they can supply the larger body that requires proof with their justification.”

Jesus continued, “The evil of government is to inflict power over the community with no reasoning. This tyranny of oppression is a discomfort for the community since its spiritual practice is to stay largely harmonious with the greater society.”

As Jesus talked, I wondered how this is integrated into the larger storyline.

Jesus Christ said, “Author, remember the operations that provide sound comfort and material wealth being distributed to community members in the event of death? That was a practice to remain in the memory

of the lower chamber of the masculine heart (LMC). Now, extend these operations to the present moment. We forgive the spiritual practice, which is based on understanding the death of a loved one, and, according to the community itself, practices and operations are created to function in daily life. I want to preserve that intentionality of living spiritually in community.

“In such operations of everyday living, the community needs to thrive. Therefore, its story dictates how it functions in day-to-day life. Some communities may celebrate special occasions in a limited fashion with a many fewer of resources while another community will celebrate the same occasion with additional resources. Do you understand that each community will celebrate its understanding of the heavenly kingdom differently? And with those same resources, communities should not be limited to sacrificing gold resources for government taxation.

“Therefore, I do not dictate that spiritual practices occur in any set way. Religious ceremony is good, but the practice that makes the most profound difference in the community in the heart of its members is meditative prayer.”

Jesus continued, “Now, Author, the memory we selected for the LMC of the community’s heart was special arrangements for death. We have extended those same principles into the daily operations of the community. In that extension of abilities to perform community functions, I made meditation a principal discipline. The story and purpose of each member should be reflected and

shared, and compassionate forgiveness when warranted should be examined. Therefore, anchor the community in meditative prayer and the expression of those meditations.

“Author,” said Jesus Christ, “the present moment is different from the past in a spiritual sense only in how a community member reflects consciously on the topic. With greater reflection in memory, the conscious will remember its history, such as losing a loved one, and in the conscious present moment, there is less reflection on conducting one’s own operations.

“We will look at the other three chambers of the heart, but first let’s look at another aspect of how the LMC functions in community. As we continue to examine the LMC of the community heart, let us define what is known and how this can be put into action with purpose and forgiveness. Let us meditate on these ideas and string the tapestry together as a well-knit community.

“Author, go now to discuss how the LMC functions in future considerations with my Holy Ghost. In that conversation, new knowledge about the LMC will be provided from a futuristic perspective. That means you will understand how the LMC will evolve from its operations to unfolding the community members’ stories.”

## Chapter Twenty-Five

“Author,” said the Holy Ghost as it picked up the discussion of the LMC. “Do you believe in my abilities? Do you understand how the plagues and the miracles were part of the plan in the midst of growing concerns of our reaction to war? Do you understand how we give society balance in the face of destruction?”

“This is our answer to your next chapter in this story. How do you anticipate the organization of the community for the future? Let us go into more depth as you prepare your community to understand its place in the context of a shared knowledge of the heavens’ reaction to war.

“Author, know that the heavens have spoken, and you are one who will listen to this message. The community also hears the message and can decipher these details, yet that is for the next part of the story. As you prepare to hear of the plagues and miracles we place in society, let us remember the reasoning of the LMC. Let us remember that we ritually prepare to understand the greatest threats and receive the best gifts from the heavens.”

The Holy Ghost swept over my surroundings, altering the feel of the atmosphere. “I will tell you directly what is to come. The communities operate differently depending on personnel and the size of their resources, and some operate to prioritize praise and worship. This distinction of setting their own accordance to medita-



tion and ritual is paying homage to God the Father in heaven.

“God does not intervene in making mankind choose either him or itself to rule the world. This distinction of who leads the worship of the community is very particular—God comes first and idols are a waste of time. The rituals assist communities in gaining insight into what the heavens have given already, and this includes Jesus Christ and Mary. Therefore, a community can worship the rituals that are prepared from the Gospels in awareness of how to build a heavenly kingdom. But there is also the community itself and how it receives spiritual awakening as a whole to be remembered and worshiped. Therefore, the stories of the Gospel that have been shared are closely linked to the community with the transformational power of the individual in the community’s transcendence.

“Author, when you think of the Bible, you receive lessons of God through its stories. In the example of listening to the Holy Spirit, each community can record for itself the stories told. But in special tribute to plagues and miracles, the stories can be told so that the community can advise its future generations.

“How do plagues visited on communities show the strength of the heavens in a testimonial to awaken mankind to the lessons of might and servitude? How do miracles provide incentive to learn of God’s love in this world and how to learn to cherish one another with the time spent on earth?”

The Holy Ghost posed these questions and then addressed them. “Readers, I will address these simplified questions to start the dialogue on how the wars of mankind have affected you. These challenges provide opportunity to grow in awareness, and through that progress in the community, even small rituals may translate to learning the teachings found in faith.

“Author, to close the loop on the LMC, I will say that the performance of rituals can help teach these lessons in kinetic memory. Therefore, these stories can help with acknowledging fear of and love for the light of this world.

“To make sense of this special relationship with the spiritual afterlife, I would be reminded of the death of loved ones as well to honor these performances. Significant figures in the community can play a part in the stories told.

“The operations of the community involve keeping memories of loved ones protected and the community free of government intervention through taxation, and, now, through reciting the stories in a creative manner, through the rituals of each community.

“Author, the governance of society may still involve what they themselves can make on communities funding themselves. Government, in definition, is to provide for the people. However, under no circumstance should government decide the rituals or stories told for each community. Each community is on its own to understand its heart. Therefore, the heart is focused on in each community, and it spreads its message across each land.

“The affect may, if large enough, affect government, but government should never encroach on the freedom of the heart to spread a message of love, laughter, and light to the surrounding people.

“God is foremost in determining what lessons are learned from the heart. The government and its abilities to create power are not of the heart—they are of the mind. The government has its place in some circumstances in the rituals of love; however, in large part, the government is a creation of the surroundings for the community. It can be likened to a cubic space which the sphere of light is placed within, and that cubic space is artificial reality. It oversees the norms, rules, and laws that help create civilized society.

“Therefore, cubic space is of a state’s personality. It is habitual and learned from very early. It is the language of society. But the heart, the circle of light that is within that cubic space, is love and laughter. That is the community that is required for each member to embrace.

“The spiritual lessons learned are paramount to the civilized lessons embedded through culture. The spiritual truths are reflected in the community’s stories, and through those stories comes a resilience to learn—resilience that in spiritual understanding is freedom. And those freedoms that each community allows is bred through the land.

“Therefore, we have listed God as first in the hierarchy of leadership to make a community’s decisions. Then comes its freedom of storytelling. Then the community listens and acts out in ritual the stories and their impact.

The government can affect the community in many ways once those freedoms are made manifest.

That is why this chamber is part of the masculine identity. The rituals and stories told manifest the community's reality. Once made, the actions and reactions to the government are part of the feminine chambers tasked with deciding how to interact with the government. They will listen and understand and nurture the results in a systematic telling of the community and its decisions.

"Author," concluded the Holy Ghost, "do not worry about the government. Worry about the lessons learned from God in the heavens. Do what is best in terms of building a heavenly kingdom on Earth. Listen to the plagues and miracles, and tell your community's stories through manifested story telling."

## Chapter Twenty-Six

“Author,” said the Spirit of the Lord, “do not hesitate to act on what appears to you in the heart. Although these feelings of the heart are not a sensemaking organ, we process spiritual data through the heart. Each person has a conscious voice. The upper masculine chamber of that heart (UMC) can be felt and known for memories in understanding its legacy.

The Spirit of the Lord cried out to the readers, “Understand the history and legacy of the heart’s bloodlines. Your lineage and family tree are in the midst of being recognized, and let each individual in the community understand their history and bloodlines. Let the family tree be known for achievements and forgiveness, and let each person understand their passions through the history of their blood. Spiritual family members are with us.”

I understood that each spiritual family member is recognized, giving our lives context. If we understand history, we can begin to learn from our family storylines over time. This tradition was of great interest to me.

“Author, the spiritual family bloodlines can be traced back for quite some time now that there is a written account available. But remember that the future is going to have these spiritual family members remembered—you now have a legacy for your lifetimes. Complete the answers to your family’s history and show how

strong each branch was in its spiritual connection together.”

The Spirit of the Lord continued, “Author, now that you understand that there is a chamber for spiritual death and history of bloodlines, I want you to answer why you think this is the masculine side of the heart. Why do you think that a negative energy is present for these stories to be told?”

I began to dissect the problem, making sense of the data by using my knowledge of the history of each person and combining them to update this story. But I also understood that my bloodline will follow me, and I was to protect and lead my family’s legacy to be brilliant. I wanted to understand, and, with my knowledge, to actualize the storyline in both written and artistic rendering.

The Holy Spirit of the Lord said, “Author this is good in that you want to protect your family history and understand that in death, people are taken care of. I would also mention that you are strong. You are able to understand things that require forgiveness for and explanations of how family members advance their lives. These storylines are not always brilliant and honest, and they take an awareness of the social rankings of the family to explain.”

Then I became witness to something that was very interesting. I noticed a cup, flowing over with happiness, come into my vision. I also received something of a thank you for belonging to my spiritual family’s bloodline. I was thankful that my story and others’ stories were not forgotten.

“Author,” said the Spirit of the Lord, “The spark of light that is cast in each heart is a remembrance of me as well. The spark that ignites interest in each storyline can be compared to and with others in the family to understand the growth of a tree for humanity.

“The growth of that spiritual tree is then part of the garden of the kingdom of heaven on Earth.”

The Holy Spirit of the Lord then said something I could not have imagined. He said, “If you were to understand all your spiritual family and then reflect yourself in your lifetime, the code of the living Word would be present as a soul. That is, your light is similar to those who come before you. In that regard, your story is a much bigger study of cross-comparisons. The story that lives in the universes has karma, and in that karma is the desire to be better without suffering. Stories tell us how to be mature in our passions and reduce suffering through compassion. Take this heavenly soul that you are similar with in your lifetime and understand the trauma afflicted in your family’s lineage and how you live out that karma. It benefits you to understand that all can be forgiven and history can be improved dramatically with an understanding of your story. This knowledge of your family tree is relevant for you. Find comfort in where and who you are in your own story.”

The Holy Spirit of the Lord said, “Let us ask the serpent its opinion on how it might afflict punishment and evil into this perspective of the UMC.”

The serpent readily accepted this opportunity to disclose its reasoning with my questioning of it. I asked,

“Serpent in the waters of the universes below, what do you understand as weaknesses to be tempted for this topic of the community’s heart?”

The serpent answered, “The heart chamber is good and practical here, but community does, in fact, mean a garden—one in which you can find evil in many people through my knowledge and wisdom. This, then, is not entirely heavenly. The garden of the tree of life was very good as it was the tree Adam ate from. But as he fell, the soil and the universes made of the garden were degraded for humanity. Therefore, you have given yourself a too-uplifting answer to put into context a person’s story and karmic laws. You have forgotten to include the evil that shows up in the people who defy the good and holy and want no part of your beliefs. ‘Each to their own’ is not a community belief system.”

With that, the serpent slithered back under its abyss in the waters of the universes.

“Author,” said the Holy Spirit of the Lord, “decide if knowledge in light of a spiritual understanding for yourself makes sense, even if your family members did not believe in a spiritual lifestyle. When others in your family are evil, know that they had a spiritual misunderstanding from which they did not awaken. And remember, your story is understood in the context of the garden as a whole. Do not let one branch fool you into doubting your belonging to the heavenly kingdom of God. Do not reject God because you are of a similar soul as someone who has done evil. In that case, knowledge of your family history helps you avoid repeating a lifestyle of evil.



“And understand one more thing—love is a greater force in your family history than those who do not love.”

## Chapter Twenty-Seven

“Author,” said the Holy Ghost, “allow your mind’s eye to see me in your vision.”

The Holy Ghost expanded across the countries in the atmosphere. The atmosphere alluded to all the signs and curses I could imagine in my field of view, and witnessing this was a sacred moment.

After giving me time to take all this in, the Holy Ghost said, “In the communities across the world, I have shown myself through signs and curses. In a moment that exists and echoes for some time now, and other places even longer, they will understand my wrath and joy.

“Author, do you understand that my signs and curses are a way to communicate prophecies that I advanced already to the world? These prophecies are ways for the divine in our heavenly realm to shine and strike the world through the atmosphere.

“It does not matter if you believe or not; we communicate with the human population at this scale. Humanity is forever shifted and challenged to understand these ideas made into physical manifestations, so take heed and have a light heart. We in the heavens have moved the atmosphere in the world.”

I saw in my mind’s eye darkness and lightness, reflecting the way some of the population believed in their own selves and some in the power of God. This in re-

turned manifested in attitudes and in the direction that souls were to take in an upcoming unprecedented era.

Jesus Christ said to me, "Author you have witnessed much to believe in. Others may want to know what curses and signs are yet to come for the population to witness, but it was revealed to you because the heart is always aware. It may not completely define the tragedies and revelations, but it can feel what is transpiring.

"The prayers of the community are no different. In those prayers, some vibration from the world is known, and that feeling of terror or honor is an awakening itself at a group level. The physical intuition of the heart is known as a sense-making organ only in the case that some can experience these shifts in spiritual essence, and the group powers that transcendence together in prayer. Therefore the intuitive aspect of the group is useful in understanding the atmosphere in the community and making some sense from it."

The Holy Ghost spoke again. "Author, in the UMC of the heart, there was a history of family lineage in the memory. Now take a step back in the wisdom of that community heart chamber. Witness that in the present form, the spiritual family may give signs and awareness of curses through intuition. The prayer to the heavens may then provide some semblance of connection for those in the world, and interpreting the world's events may help define recourse in how to feel about the events that transpire.

"This is much like when miracles exist in the community and are left unexplained. The community won-

ders how it should feel about such miracles since they can be profound, but they will see that in those miracles is a confirmation that the timing and experience of events overlap to provide faithful moments.

“The world is currently going through a cataclysmic shift, and the revelation of such signs and curses is very apparent. It is not for you to know exactly what is in the Word at the community level—it is more you having an awareness of the group’s feelings for such things occurring. In revealing a spiritual intuition, some may recognize their own interpretation as being close to their truth.

“Author, the world sees in the mind’s eye a vision of themselves, but a collective prayer with the heart can yield a totally different vibration to interpret than just thought. That vibration, when discussed by many together, may overlap and provide confidence in the group, and in that felt vibration, either in lightness or darkness, the mind can selectively participate. The experiences that were real to those in the group are given more context. Perhaps many in the community wondered about or saw similar ideas while in prayer. This then significantly affects how prayer links us as a spiritual family or community.

“The UMC of the community’s heart has a meditative selection to express itself as group intuition along with an element of forgiveness. This intuition is a moment when the community groups together can address a single idea in prayer. Therefore, the meditative moment

when everyone is praying together for wholesome outcomes for others is good.

“The spiritual community that prays together shows more resilience. These prayers often start in each community member’s heart, and the prayers may target the health and wellness of individuals. This group phenomenon of meditative prayer is then balanced as the mind allows. Each member of the group in prayer may experience the feeling of the moment and accept those thoughts and emotions.

“Generally, there is never an intent to fix the situation in a specific way—the intent is to pray for the best outcome. We fix ourselves in time through prayerful dialogues after the prayer service happens, and in those moments of discussion, like before the prayer, people may share their experiences as a feeling of intuition. The prayer in a group is more powerful because it has increased spiritual attention to a single target or idea.

“Author,” continued the Holy Ghost, “You have understood and will understand that the group is prophetic in some ways and may not be accurate in describing the outcome of a prayerful event. That is forgiveness of the group to itself. The group does not need to understand why exactly, it just needs to accept it. In essence, the group is increasing its spiritual attunement. This is unlike a single person’s limited perspective. A single perspective is shallow, while the group intuition may be greater in effectiveness. But sometimes, the group perspective becomes complicated by the number of individ-

ual perspectives shared, and those diverse perspectives become confusing in relation to each other.

“Therefore, it is best to organize whom to pray for and to facilitate the group prayer. In this meditative essence of a prayer in the heart, the group comes together in the intent of the prayer and understands its insights.”

## Chapter Twenty-Eight

“Author,” said the Holy Ghost. “Do you know that each era of mankind was destined to be broken? While the fights were valiant in those moments of weakness across all of humanity, each kingdom’s legend was lost as a great story declined for a new era. In this period when you live, that decline is for an era that was wrought with pain.

“Therefore, we issue a new era for the kingdom of mankind. It is not in any way a new idea that leads this era—it is that civilization in the past has come and gone, and the destiny of profitability of the work of others is limited.

“Let us discuss this phenomenon together, Author and readers. It is far from an unrealistic attribute that people enslaved each other in the past. This practice of slavery was to elevate those who were masters of the enslaved to nobility in the hierarchy. As far as those enslaved, they became the oppressed to do the bidding of the masters. This system worked in the past because the oppressed had very few ways to elevate themselves in the hierarchy. Often a brutal regime kept the enslaved in place.

“If we look back at the history of our ancestry, through the UMC, and listen to our ancestors’ words of advice, we will not let this mistake again occur. God will bless those who work and feed each other in contribution.

“Therefore, what makes a fair trade? Can any community truly have a resilient trade system without it itself being enslaved to a system of material greed? How do we provide a system which flourishes in a lifestyle that operates according to both nature and of God?

“The divide that should increase in slave masters and the enslaved should be examined first. Where is it that the slave masters should never be examined for wrongdoing as they are above all? The laws of material wealth cannot restrict this examination. How can they not be examined by the governance?

“Therefore, the system that surrounds a community is a virtual cube of culture, but it also is about governance and rules and laws. This system must happen to place individuals according to the three axes described in the personality program—memory/spiritual, left/right hemisphere thinking, and introversion/extroversion. These three axes can model a cube of space. Therefore, the cube of space around the community is likened to a virtual mind of governance.

“The professions that occur within that space of governance would likely coincide with the location in the space of that cube. Let us say that some individuals are good at memory, extroversion, and balanced thought. They would likely use the front neocortex and make fair decisions. These individuals may be suitable for a host of professions, including judges.

“The key is that in the community, the UMC would help in educating individuals of their capabilities and the vocations suitable to them.



“By understanding how the mind processes information, the cultural system around the community can be organized by creating a better fit for those independent souls. The community would be less inclined toward enslaving its members, as a system of governance would be likened to a universal mind. Wealth can then be seen as voltage to making decisions and upholding the rules of the culture.

“Do you understand, Author? We are in an era where the stories told are predominant in creating reality, and the reality that we live in is of a universal mind. All the people in the community can reflect on and listen to the stories that society presents, and they can fill in gaps where there needs to be a story told. These are the times when the state utilizes its people to full motivation.

“The sphere of the community sits inside the cube of the state, and that interaction will be discussed more in addition to other chambers. However, the sphere of community is only one among many ‘multiverses.’ The communities involved need scarce resources, so they interact with governance to help them secure those resources and fulfill those needs. However, other communities in the same cubic state need scarce resources as well. In this situation, Author, the communities that produce the best for the state will get more resources.

“Do you understand, Author?” asked the Holy Ghost. “This UMC of the community’s heart is the foundation for their resources being met. In economic terms, they pool what they can to make and create goods

and services as needed by the state and within the community. By training individuals to fill their needs and further listening to society's stories, the community can obtain more resources.

"The cube of the surrounding state governs the community. It is likened to a personality program—a personality program that is self-referential. The story told by governance is one that directs inwardly to itself and the communities within it. The outward perspective of governance is the spirit looking back and helping itself carry out the requirements of the state. By accepting that the spirit is outside the cube looking back at itself, you see that it is outside time and space. It is in a heavenly existence giving instruction to the personality program.

"As confusing as that might seem, it is likened to a 'nationalistic' perspective. Each community can connect with each other through prayer that is focused on difficult questions posed by the state.

"This listening to and answering the questions posed by the state can help bring the decision-making down to a community level. Therefore, the gaps in culture that were discussed can be found and upheld by communities.

"Author, do you understand yet that the constructed era of programming is upon you? The willingness to individualize training for those in the community based on their talents is great—the governance then has positions that it needs to perform work. Communities themselves need jobs performed, so there is a mix of governance and community positions available to its people."

The Holy Ghost concluded, "This then allows more transparency from the state to the community. There is more input from the community and the state as well. The individualization of tasks is available now more than ever due to the ability to store memory and clearly tell each story within the state."

## Chapter Twenty-Nine

The serpent within the waters of the universes called out to unfurl a new request. The snake said, “Author of the story of light and love for the community, hear me. Know that I am and will be able to make your story truly incredible. You will understand me if you listen to me.”

I agreed to listen as this was unlike the serpent—it did not make many attempts for my attention.

“Author,” continued the serpent, “know that I am one who can recognize the readers who have been excluded from the community. Know that I set them in a mental prison and have not yet let them understand the community of light and love described within your story. The heart is of four chambers, and you have accurately accounted for the masculine side of the heart in memories. It is important to also consider that the community is based on those who agree to participate in personal improvement and that there are some individuals who do not want to do the work required to be part of your community. They are in a prison.

“Understanding the differing personalities and desires of community members, you now can discuss the feminine nature of the lower chamber (LFC)—the real-world side of personalities working to challenge the community from their own vices. That is, those who do not participate historically in society, and attempt to torture your people.

“Therefore, Author, you lead a community that is willing to adapt to the circumstances within the larger society. How do you explain the hatred of the group coming from the isolated perspective of those in mindful prisons who have yet to discuss their hearts?”

The Holy Spirit of the Lord said to me, “Author, he is correct in pointing out that evil exists in society. And as such, you need to protect those with historical records of terror. That is, those who work needlessly to refute the good and work to do evil against society. They are mindless of the larger doctrine of spiritual beliefs, at least in some capacity.”

I began from the apex of the universe by acknowledging that there were no forces in play against me in this eye of chaos. I interpreted the request as the serpent willingly learning how to introduce terror into society to create a war-like situation.

The Spirit of the Lord said, “Author, the LFC historically has prison as its answer—that is the way they enslave those who are disobedient in society. I will discuss the reasoning of society through the community here. The community is a way to grow strong together. And in it, the strength of safety trumps the freedom of those who do not participate. Therefore, the standardization of the community is necessary. The culture in society must allow for many to be judged for their attempts of terror as a lawful way to reset the prisoner into the community.

“This is historical in that the laws of the community are a chain of reasoning in how to best protect the group

to be safe. However, there needs to be a severe plan for those who need community from their prison cells.”

The serpent called out from the waters, “Do you understand that the community needs to be stronger than the ways those individuals are willing to upset the group? Do you understand that fear may strike people, prompting them to hide from the community? Therefore, where does the community go to evaluate its judgment for those who do not participate?”

I thought about the fact that there is a community for all. The activities of the community are intended to build on the talents and interests of its members to prevent harm to oneself and others. There must be a way for a community to organize and facilitate a process to forgive those individuals who are in severe pain. I realized that this could be part of the judicial system at a community level.

The Holy Spirit of the Lord said, “Readers, if you knew the evil in your neighbor’s thoughts and were willing to put them through a corrective process, what would that look like? Would you work with the guards of the community to associate with these individuals early in the corrective process? How can their lives be improved in order to reach them before a mental prison ensues?”

“These processes are for the community to forgive in their capacity going forward. The heart judges those who afflict pain onto the community itself. Therefore, are there ways to create boundaries, speech, protection, and, finally, the ability to fight off those individuals?”

I thought about the tough love of those who needlessly or selfishly disregard the group for their own selfish ways. I realized God needs to be in the middle between those who are harmful and the community being created.

I understood that the laws of the community are based on God's will. Those who have judgment should be aware of the individuals involved and their stories, and then the community can discipline the individual who presents harm to the community.

The Holy Spirit of the Lord said, "There must be a path for the prisoner to create a purpose for their lives that benefits others, even if it is in the smallest steps to welcome themselves into their hearts for the benefit of others. That is where the prison time is adjusted accordingly.

"It takes time to understand how to find purpose in life. It takes time to carry that purpose and find others to live for in a community. This is where they can reach an understanding of God."

The serpent then said, "I have seen light in the darkness before for those in my hell. These individuals reach a conscious awakening in deep slumber, and in that awakening, they have fled to the heavens. If you build a kingdom on Earth, you must work in accordance with this process."

I thought about how a community is the beginning of a kingdom of heaven on Earth, and that those in their physical and mental prisons can find a conscious light in their hearts to free themselves from the hell created in

this lifetime. In that moment of asking to help intercede for this process to occur, I thought of angels visiting hell to help prisoners understand the heavens.

Maybe a community could help answer the prisoner's need for purpose through prayer and outreach. The message then of this LFC of the community's heart is to create a process where individuals can share redemptive ideas for the individuals who wish to harm the group. The law determining how long a prisoner is sentenced is then judged and reconciled by this chamber's function.



## Chapter Thirty

There was a moment in my meditation when I was curious to hear back from the snake. It seemed that in communities, there was a specific example of how we were building a community to protect its members and forgive evil—evil embodied in the prisoner of hellish torment that is outside the community. This issue was addressed in the lower chamber of the feminine heart (LFC) in the community.

Jesus Christ said, “Take the idea of faith and apply it to those who have experienced the serpent. Their faith is shaken. They know no purpose. They have no will to be part of the community. And it is the community itself that is served with applying their sentence and determining if they are received into the community again.”

“That is a very difficult situation,” I said.

“Author, the serpent is not the case of evil here—it is mostly a misunderstood individual with evil intentions, and that misunderstanding can lead to serious repercussions. Many will want the individual to be healed, but that may be a misunderstanding. So let us protect the community first.”

I asked how the LFC is built on that in the present moment.

Jesus Christ smiled, “Author, you do know that there are social structures involved in the community. The strongest have a say in what occurs, and, typically, others listen. These are your community leaders. They face

tough decisions wherein they determine how to enhance positive outcomes with their judgment. Therefore, leaders can influence group dynamics. Labeling them as community leaders is, in fact, a great idea because what they say is important to the group. They can organize how they lead in a way that maximizes their time and precedence.

“Let me show you how the heavens work. Typically, the leaders in the heavens take on social roles. They have the ability to organize and lift the many souls who are having trouble reconciling their past lives into a purpose, much like you on Earth.

“The difference between the heavens and Earth is the necessity of those on Earth being protected from the evildoers. Therefore, understand that because each person is unique, that uniqueness may require additional help to watch.

“There is no easier answer than this—leaders must be equipped to make decisions for the group. Say they made a rule governing how the group should react to a special circumstance. The group can be involved in the discussion, but the leader should understand that the welfare of the group must be held in the highest regard. Therefore, they must be given the most weight when making decisions. They can call for creating a council if that is appropriate.

“Community leaders have a lot to direct for information toward outside governance. Each community is involved with governance in some fashion, and its lead-

ers can help direct resources into and out of the community.

“However, I do not think that leaders should have everlasting rule. I think leaders should show their intelligence and compassion to the group through their decisions, and those actions are the precedence for keeping leaders in a seat of decision-making power.

“Author,” continued Jesus Christ, “know that the leaders of the community can be female or male. They are equal in their abilities to guide a community. There is no justification for discriminating between the leaders citing ‘natural abilities’ based on gender.

“Author, it is quite complex to understand how the governance of the state and the leadership of the community interact since there are many differences between them, but there are some ideas here that can be quite interesting. Remember that community is about stories told. The individuals in each community are finding their way in a spiritual sense so they better understand themselves in the community. They ask forgiveness from and offer compassion to the group they are part of. That said, where do the stories of community members and governance merge?

“Community leadership should initiate the conversation about the community to the governance. Sometimes, in dire situations, the governance of the community can ask for help from the community to direct its attention to various details of considerable concern. However, from a practical standpoint, it is the community

that initiates interaction with the governance after understanding the needs of its members.

“Leadership can offer what they witness and the needs required by the community to justify interaction with the governance. In cooperation with governance, they can find further power and influence regarding the situation. The governance may not consider the request for some time, as governance is often difficult to work through. Therefore, in many cases, asking the governance for help should be thought of as a long-term investment.

“Leadership should be provided additional merit and benefits for their time and work in the community. There is reason to help in the community, but given the diversity of tasks necessary in making decisions, there needs to be some level of compensation. These may be internal or external rewards, and they may be given in short durations or through a long-term agreement.

“What makes a great leader is clarity of judgment. The need for specifics in their decision-making may help understand their line of thought as they determine what is best for the group with clarity of judgment.”

## Chapter Thirty-One

The Holy Ghost said, “Author, there is no way to issue redemption from a leadership standpoint for prisoners. The leadership is not the judge of the heavens—they are there to help systematize the decision-making process with information about the community. Let us talk, therefore, about how the lower chamber of the feminine heart (LFC) works for the community.

“The leadership of the community is placed in their respective roles through agreement from the group. In that capacity, people listen and appreciate their good judgment, and these appointed leaders must maintain their ethical beliefs. Therefore, their stories of redemption allow the group to look up to them and experience their leadership, despite any flaws they might have.”

The Holy Ghost continued, “Since leadership has a way of making decisions and having a great multitude of reach and power, they must believe in their verbiage. This includes not only the stories they tell, but also the way they tell those stories. This stylistic method of telling a story is how they will also lead the community. The ethics behind the verbiage is their reasoning for making what decisions they have made.

“Therefore, members of the community compare the stories their leaders tell to their actual leadership. A leader’s judgment and reign are exhibited by the community culture, and their flaws will be perceived and mirrored back. In that, compassion can arise for the commu-

nity itself as the leader continually evolves in their verbiage and ethical reasoning. This is what this chapter discussing the LFC details for the future.

“How a community evolves and rises up together is based on everyone together appreciating their heavenly kingdom—a kingdom of conscious thought mansions. The evolution of the community is to be inspired to be a heavenly kingdom on Earth.

“Author,” the Holy Spirit continued, “the way of mankind is to search within themselves to answer the complex riddles of God. And within themselves, they allow this transformation. Understand that riddles are a source of strength, and in this case, questions can help create a healthy community: What is the community missing that would make them whole? What is the shadow side of the community? How does leadership maintain a balance on the judgment of those behaviors?

“These ideas, originally revealed in the stories of the leaders, are a darker side of the community. This seeking balance to acknowledge that there is a dark side, manifested to some degree in nature, is then prayed upon by the community.

“In some cases, the evolution of the community’s culture can be directly elevated by its members’ awareness of what is happening in their community. The community itself needs to be awakened to any existing dangers that need to be addressed. It is best for leadership to create a channel where good and evil are viewed as riddles that work together to create the whole picture.

“Through estimating a balance in how the community operates, leadership can help shine the light on many who want to improve. By shedding light on the darker aspect of community, its people can reclaim their territory.

“Leadership can show an understanding of the good and bad. This compassionate response is much like previously described as an awareness that suffering exists and understanding how best to handle a situation with care.

“The light within is like voltage in decision-making—each decision made has some level of power to manifest itself in reality for the community. The closer to the voltage source, the more power there is to make a decision and utilize resources as needed. In terms of the cube of the state surrounding the sphere of community, there is an awareness of this voltage.

“The cube is likened to a universal mind in which there is an idea and there is electricity in thought and in emotions. Where there is a decision made, there is voltage in the channel to manifest that idea and then provide the resources to support it.

“The cube of the state then interacts with the sphere of community in how decisions and resources are accepted and transferred between the two programs.”

The Holy Ghost said, “Readers know this is difficult to interpret for anyone who is not within a system that carries our thoughts between the heart and mind. But it will likely work in a way where needs are met and stories are reflected upon.

“Therefore, over time, community culture will improve and regain better balance, but the leaders must maintain their ethical beliefs through spiritual understanding—the spirit inspires the group within a kingdom of heaven.”

The Holy Ghost concluded, “Author, there is a past, present, and future state on how your perspective shifts for each chamber of the heart. The LFC purely speculates that a leader can be ethical and improve the community within these three perspectives. The past looks at prisoners who are housed away from the community. The present looks at leadership judging and making decisions for the community. And the future looks at how the leadership embodies the cultural shifts for the community itself within the state.”



## Chapter Thirty-Two

The Spirit of the Lord looked upon me at the apex of the universe and then motioned me to watch the waters of the universes. In doing so, I turned my attention to society in the world. I imagined the idea that the Lord was presently watching the serpent go through society within the minds of the people to convince them of their lies.

I said to the readers, “Do you understand how the serpent thinks for those who are asleep? It slithers from person to person and builds its grip.”

The Spirit of the Lord said to me, “Author, *who does the serpent challenge?* and *what is it challenging them to do?* are the questions we seek out right now. Watching the serpent, invisible to the senses of mankind and going through each person to get to a new path, is insightful in itself. Typically, the snake is not this active. It is building up a war.”

I told the Holy Spirit of the Lord that I thought this may be part of the lesson for the UFC for us. I looked back into the dark waters of humanity and noticed something very disturbing—my vision was growing weaker.

The Holy Spirit of the Lord said, “Readers, this may be foundational to the war we are going through at the moment as the serpent casts its shadow on its plans. That said, it is difficult for the Author to review what is happening in terms of war.”

“Author,” cried those in the belly of the snake, “why do you not protect us? Why did good people of this world suffer and die while others walk high on the backs of those who are innocent? What is this community that you have? Will you do nothing?”

The Holy Spirit of the Lord then acknowledged that innocent men and women, unknown to themselves, were victims of the wars built by the serpent. “Author, the challenge is that the heart of the community wants to help those who are innocent, to give these families refuge. The refuge of those found in war may serve to help them relocate, and it may also help them find assistance with medical and food as well.”

I said that those suffering still have the ability to be rescued from the serpent.

“Author, it is difficult to get food and provisions to those who suffer during the state of war. It takes those willing to risk their lives to do that. You can understand that in terms of refuge, you are welcome as a community to build a safe haven for those seeking asylum, and that petition may be heard from your local and national government. However, the community at large may find favor in welcoming those who are at war. This is difficult to say, but the war ends in no time and, even so, the refugees may still fight the torment in their souls from the war. So exercise caution in this lesson.”

The Spirit of the Lord then said, “It is in the UFC that these arrangements are made—to witness suffering elsewhere in the mind and body, to pray for these people, and to provide sustenance and refuge if possible. Yet

having the willingness to hear the outside suffering of the world and learn the lessons to teach the community what is really told is most important. This is a perspective of the greater community to announce a stance on the current situations outside itself. Knowing where to take a stance comes from a familiarity of the history of the world in the context of the community.”

The readers cried from the universes, “Author, how do stories get told correctly? How do you understand that what is brought into your community is a realistic perspective? How do you know that you are actually helping give refuge with the aid you provide to those innocents who are suffering?”

The serpent awoke to the fact we were watching it from the heavens. It said, “Author, do you not know how to tell a story and be correct from multiple sides? That is laughable. If you know enough points about the world and various societies, then the big picture will tell you all you need to know. The excuse of not realizing what is really happening is because there are fewer attempts to amuse oneself with the idea that they know less than me, the serpent. Go to the heavens or face my wrath. Either way, you will misunderstand me, the snake.”

“Author,” said Mother Mary as she suddenly made an appearance, “Grace lies in what you see and think. The senses are overwhelming, and you will not understand much in this world outside of your community. But it is still valid to put forth effort to try to provide respite for those who are afflicted by the serpent’s games. This does not need to be only during a war situation. In fact, it of-

ten is under other dire consequences that innocent people suffer. Your community can provide a sanctuary in terms of alleviating such consequences.”

Mary continued, “The serpent is failing in the world currently and is not generating its powerful position as often as it would like. That position leads humanity to death, and the people of this planet are waking up to it. Your community, where the heart is leading its story, can stay vigilant in tracking the serpent. By understanding how others are afflicted by the torment of the snake, you can stay aware as a community. Do you understand how providing respite can save others and provide you with much information about what the serpent is doing?”

“By providing refuge and consolidation in the community across geographic space, you can share prayers. In that case, new information about what is occurring elsewhere in the world can be suggested. These immediate stories can help inform the community about what is actually occurring. The larger news is only one level of sharing the stories told. At the community level, providing prayer and hearing what is occurring from individual stories is a good and sound way to advance the knowledge of the serpent.

“Stay vigilant, Author. Stay aware. The darkest times you face are much harder without community. Offer sustenance for others in the Gospels. Offer others nutrition. Give them blankets. Offer them water. Share your ideas as a community about what the serpent is attempting and actualizing in order to understand and track its movements. It desires power. Your community can be

vigilant and influential in limiting or denying that power.”

## Chapter Thirty-Three

The screaming was nonstop. It couldn't be restrained. The serpent was giving his utmost to be heard from the heavens. "Let me understand. I have given you the wars of mankind to deal with. You have ignored the pleas of many and left them to be my victims. Yet now we have instructed the Author to provide options on the serpent and its wars?"

The Heavenly Father appeared and said, "I will abolish this snake for it has no favor in the heavens. Let us discuss the heavenly chambers of the community. We are discussing the upper feminine chambers (UFC), correct? In this regard, we will discuss the feminine ideal to have control and power in terms of war.

"All of humankind is able to include themselves in war—both the male and female origins fight. However, to make a consultation on when to fight, the feminine aspect of the spiritual heart decides last. Males embrace their ability to fight for and protect the family and community; females protect themselves with the love and appreciation they offer to guards.

"Therefore, it is up to the feminine aspect of spiritual praise to lead men to want to protect the community. Do you understand this shift in reasoning? The feminine, in terms of understanding where war is in the world and helping others through resources and respite, can gather information on where the serpent attacks. And in preparation for the community, the women and

men, when acting from this chamber, can create a resistance of guards, including informing the guards of those who might bring harm to the community.

“To prepare for and protect the community, guards are required, but these guards are nothing like mercenaries who fight for money. Their passion might not be to fight at all, but it is a duty to help prepare the guards to become like fighting angels from heaven. Therefore, we will look to these guards as nobly intentioned and skilled warrior spirits.”

The Heavenly Father continued, “In communities where there are guards, the guards intervene and bring messages from leadership to the people, both internally and externally. They have a sizable job in that they are messengers in good faith. They fight on behalf of a community that is like the heavenly kingdom on Earth.

“These community guards may help with the governance of the state. The community will request that the guards be sent to help fight for the state if the war impacts all around them.

“The guards then can bring the community messages of the war from the state, and the leadership can and will acquire their guards as needed if family matters unveil themselves. Therefore, these guards, fighting for the state on behalf of the community, need to be available to both positions. The state cannot keep the guards in excess of the agreed upon terms of their engagement.

“Women then can hold other offices in the community while guards are out fighting. That is to say, if guards have multiple positions held in other heart chambers,

then other individuals can fulfill their duties while they are away.”

The serpent then said, “Do you include your communities in my war for mankind? What does it take for the communities to thwart me?”

There was a silence as I looked upon the waters of the universes, and I saw that the snake was defeated already.

The Heavenly Father said, “This is the imagery we have begun, for Mary has a strong spiritual understanding of the serpent. Mary is the leader in the fight to destroy evil, and the feminine energies of humanity, when guided to war from a feminine perspective, will destroy the serpent.”

Mary came through in my understanding once again, and she spoke to me. “Author, do not yet believe that good has thwarted the serpent. It will take time. But with enough communication between each community’s stories, the evils of war will overlap on both sides. War is painful in that a community suffers death, disease, pestilence, plagues, etc., and to hear each side’s story when this occurs will destroy the instinct in women to continue to uphold the war. Instead, guards will serve as messengers to protect the community through alerting other communities of an entity’s power-driven behaviors.

“Do you understand, Author, that some communities might not understand why they fight, but they advance wars in terms of moral slumber? Other guards from multiple communities may impress the value of social welfare by sharing light on these topics.



“You might ask, ‘Is there a reason to fight in the world?’ Yes, I’m afraid currently there is much devastation to the planet, and that harms everyone.”

Mary continued, “The Earth shall have its reckoning soon, and that will favor my son, Jesus Christ.”

I looked upon the waters and saw millions of angels casting their love toward the serpent. I said, “Mary, can we pretend as guards to be angels? Is this a powerful and welcoming position for humanity to believe in?”

Mary said, “Guards will be both female and male, but they will not be angelic in terms of their spirit. They may protect the heavenly kingdom of Earth as a spiritual symbol of angels, but the spirit and nature of humankind are very different, I’m afraid. The angels fight on behalf of our Heavenly Father, and in the heavens, the angels whose mission it is to help challenge individuals to assess their signs in the heart and surroundings go freely through space.

“Therefore, if the guards were to act like the angels in heaven, the closest they can get is through a desire to help others where there is much dissatisfaction. They can provide this information from the surroundings to inspire change for those individuals. The pain in the world may be thwarted simply by guards going to the people and asking them if they need help.

“Of course, the guards have plenty to do, so this position in the community—to protect and provide—is a sacred office. Therefore, the leadership should be judicious in how often they ask guards to help inspire or send

messages. Their freedom is an earned respect from the leadership to allow guards to live doing inspired work.”

Mary said, “Author, you may not understand the need for space, but leadership cannot use guards to send messages they need to send themselves. In case of danger, then the guards can be used, and in the space of the community surroundings, guards may help to their ability. At least, that is the situation we hope will occur.”

I looked at the serpent once more and saw the millions of angels cast down upon the snake. Mary said, “Evil will never ultimately win. Our communities will win with the stories they tell. The guards will help communicate our intent on behalf of the leadership, and this self-awareness of war will put a certain pressure on those misbehaving communities to realign themselves.

“Author, the readers will understand that the guards are revered. The space of their abilities will be coordinated with the state at times, and they can influence their surroundings in good faith. If there is ever a need for a guard to step down from their occupation, then leadership will offer their reasoning to the community.”

## Chapter Thirty-Four

The Holy Ghost spoke, “Author, there is a never-ending war to be understood in the stories people tell us, but one advantage to hearing their stories is that it helps us reflect on ourselves. At a community level, this anticipation of how other stories occur from afar during times of war is helpful. Knowing when and where war will come from is informative. Providing respite and resources to people in those wars and hearing their stories was the focus of the past perspective of the UFC for the community.

“By declaring where there was war and providing a guard’s position as angelic messenger to describe ideas for the state and other communities, the leadership had an ability to influence wars. Yet, in that present moment, the leadership could only provide so much effort.

“In the future vision for the UFC, there is another identity to form. The angelic warriors were guards in the heavenly kingdom as well, and that inspiration of how guards can affect the land with the freedom to influence the community through the leadership is good and sound.

“The community has an ability to choose its leadership, and the guards will follow the leadership to understand how to influence the community. Therefore, there will be some tension between the guards and the community. The guards are loyal to the community, and they will help the leadership as far as the community thinks

this is beneficial. However, if the community thinks unseating the leadership is necessary due to an overuse of power, it can lead to a military overthrow of power on behalf of the community.

“This occurs mainly at a larger level of community; however, the guards will need to respect that leadership is necessary and a vacuum of this position is not good. Therefore, the guards will discuss the process of involving leadership again in the future.

“The community most often seeks peace, and to address leadership that needs to be overthrown is a difficult process, requiring a lot of effort and being painstaking in displacement. Therefore, the community needs to understand that the guards should hold power for any transitional period.

“The guards will seek to intervene in the lives of the community once more after the transition of power occurs. This follows the natural order of discipline for the guards. They are servants to the leadership *and* they want the best for each community member. They protect the community from self-harm and from outside forces and people. Any reign of terror is theirs to dismantle.

“There is also a duty for the leadership to understand the dark side of the community in order to remain balanced as the community continually evolves. The guard may play a part in this. Therefore, leadership should remain ethical in the decisions it makes. This offering may seem difficult—for leaders to showcase the shadows of their community may make them vulnerable to being

ousted from their position. Therefore, the community must remain compassionate in deciding whether a leader is ethical or unethical in the decisions they make.

“This disagreement may be thought of as turmoil in the community, and this turmoil should be communicated through the guards. Therefore, the guard uses its presence to address the dispute in power by sharing the truth of the matter with the community. It is important to not exclude the guard from this process because it is crucial that they are effective in their positions of protecting the community.

“The cube of the state is influential here as the stories of the guards are reported if enough turmoil exists that it affects the state. Because the cube of the state surrounds the sphere of the community, the state may involve itself in dictating decisions made by the leadership. They may ask reflective questions at first as to how resources are being utilized and the function of the community. The sphere of the community then may have an easier time deciding what story the community wants to manifest for itself. Often the state questioning the community is enough to separate the ethical from the unethical behavior for leaders in the community.

“The leadership can leave peacefully if they have not committed crimes against the state and community. This outcome is best when power is too great for an individual to handle it. This is a very dynamic process and it requires a lot of communication on behalf of the guards and state. The guards can request assistance in place of leadership if required.

“The power to make decisions on behalf of the community is very important to understand. This fluidity of who the story goes through and how many resources are offered is a science and an art form. Therefore, the power cannot be consolidated in only one person. This leads to good judgment on behalf of the state to select the outcome of the ousted leader. The question the state must ask is whether the intent of their behavior is ethical or not. To understand this in terms of science, one must ask some questions about the leader’s behavior: Was the leader holding onto power through the decisions they made so they could secure their position? Is the leadership doing what is best for the community or themselves? How often is it that they use the guard to enforce their decisions?”

The Holy Ghost said, “Author, this function of the UFC is important because a vacuum in power can cause a lot of disruption to the lives of the community. There is some process now that can be followed in the event that the state and community are at odds with the flow of decisions made and resources given. This revolt of leadership can create a bridge between community and state as well.

“It is important to realize that the stories told at a higher voltage affect how the future is manifested. Therefore, leadership needs to communicate its messages through a guard, and if there is dissent in that guard, that needs to be examined. Ultimately it is the community, at its heart, that actualizes the decisions made. The heart has a say before the mind.

“And if the heart is the sphere of the community, it needs its leadership or guards to describe its members’ needs and wants to the state. The cube serves as a process of figuring out the ramifications of such needs and wants in the context of the state. In this spiritual moment of community and state understanding each other, the people need to be compassionate to understand what it takes to remove the suffering of others.”

“The community may not understand the reasoning of the state at their individual level. There is a multiverse of communities in the state, and reasoning and goodwill can be exercised by any and all of the communities within.”

The Holy Ghost concluded, “If the community really exists in a spiritual space, then the guards are the messengers to communicate the details of decisions made. This harmony among all the players will create the kind of community where all can thrive.”

## Chapter Thirty-Five

“Author, you have impressed upon the readers and us in the heavens the wisdom of community building. You have, as mentioned, begun the process of understanding how to build a strong and healthy community. This will serve its function when there must be ideas of how governance and the community should interact.”

My spirit guide said, “In this instance, you may not fully understand a community’s needs, but as the communities you are part of develop, know that you can alter the destiny of their stories.”



# Connections

# Chapter One

“The courage you seek is one with your conscious voice. The patterns you show are not always of this voice, but trusting your conscious voice is the key to leading a lighter and brighter self. The conscious voice that speaks from your spirit within is reassurance that you belong in the heavens,” the Angel Gabriel began.

“You can do anything you need to for the holy realm. This purpose of divinity is a lesson to share,” Angel Gabriel continued. “Author, faith is increased with trust. Trust in yourself is confidence, and confidence lets spiritual light into the heart. Listen to the conscious voice so that you may share this light with fellow men and women.

“The lesson is simple but hard—the path of straightforward action is one corrupted by worries and anxious patterns. The dilemma of choosing to think for yourself or to listen to the people who surround you is ironic. This is because when considering what others say, you often wonder if it is wise for you to say such imagined thoughts. The recognition of how your words might impact you contributes to how you perceive to be liked. This brings you to like what people say and to want others to like you for saying the same imagined lines as they proclaim.

“It may be delusional to gain confidence from copying the echoes and mirrors of other people, but it occurs frequently in all life. You trust others more than your

own spirit. This tendency increases as the lines of communication in targeted storytelling become greater, and you open yourself up to echoing those same thoughts so you might feel good from taking the vantage point of other people.

“This suffering increases as you build a façade personality—a stylized representation of yourself. You bought into the messages from others and lived them out so you would be liked, and the envisioned life you seek is not the real need from your soul’s request.”

Angel Gabriel continued, “Do not sever your spirit from your body by ignoring the soul. With your soul in heaven discussing your real purpose in life, you establish faith in yourself. This confidence is good and holy.

“It is a matter of perception versus reality. The perception of being liked is difficult to vanquish because it is a fixed message that is easy to accept. Reality is hard and cruel sometimes when you challenge the soul to experience real change.

“This is what you need to know about why your desire to be liked will ultimately fail. It is like building a house on sand versus a rock in God. The messages come from other people, and you have no control over those messages. Echoing others’ sentiments and messages only lasts for so long, as you must continuously change as more messages come in. This process overcomplicates something very simple—to simplify how you walk through this life, ask yourself: *Do you trust others as much as you trust yourself? Do you want to live your life to the fullest?*

“Living out a purpose is a sacred event in one’s life,” I answered.

“Author,” Angel Gabriel continued, “you have lived in a sea of words that echo back and forth among living historical events set before your lifetime.

“Do you really listen for the echoes of a culture that maintains strong ties through smoke and mirrors? Do you really want to be forced to think about how you will continually be evaluated by others with every picture and soundbite sent to you? That kind of thinking breeds anxiety. However, the culture of the heavens is to have faith in one’s spirit in conversation from the holy realm.”

Angel Gabriel said, “With that in mind, listen to these words very carefully. Communicating from the holy realm does not mean to think yourself greater than your neighbor or to worry over the thoughts of being liked right now. Instead, simply focus on the heartbeat in your chest. Focus on the rhythm that is adored from child to mother and father.

“Attending to the beating of the heart is all the focus needed—relax and do not think too hard. In your mind you may hear a silent voice right now. The silence of your spirit may be because you are ignorant of the powerful connection you have with your soul. It has been forgotten.

“By bringing this heartbeat back into your present thoughts, you are able to just listen. Ask yourself a question about when you truly felt brave. Then listen and pay

attention to the spirit as it is welcomed back into the heart.

“Author, your thoughts may take shape in ways to sway this answer from being heard, but in a second of listening to your heart and remembering bravery, your spirit begins to tackle your soul’s mission to present you with the truth. The truth may be that you need to reexamine your consciousness and act accordingly. This happens so quickly that the examination is a fleeting thought, occurring before your mind recognizes any patterns.”

Angel Gabriel continued, “Listen to your beating heart. It effectively kicks in a nervous reaction to the patterned thoughts you are examining. This examination of emotions held in the body then confronts how your actions dictate your feelings about yourself.

“You have given so much time to reexamining your thoughts and fighting through your emotions that you might think you know this process. But trust your heart—beat right now—the heart beating is like a welcoming of trust in your soul to answer how you can best live your life.

“Life is mysterious. Some answers come in through the unconscious realm and guide our everyday decisions to question why we are acting like we are—it is the loop closing on the mysterious thought we are examining. It takes time to realize the voice of consciousness being awakened by our testament of faith in listening to our prayers come true.

“The heartbeat is a moment of living your own truth. Listen and realize that the mystery of confidence in God

is trusting his Word. The Word is a force you can make sense of through your intuition—an intuition felt more than heard. It is a feeling of being guided by a greater power than yourself. The soul is ever-present in the holy realm and converses back to you in this perceived thought pattern. If you give yourself time to act on this God-given Word, then the light of Jesus will enter your heart.”

Angel Gabriel finished his lesson by asking me a question: “Author, have you ever wondered why the patterns of smoke and mirrors are attractive to you? It is severely wrong to think that if you like something, everyone else will like you and echo those same thoughts. The only way people will judge you is by how you make them feel.

## Chapter Two

The Lord said, “Oh, Author, you have understood and will continue to understand how much you love us in the heavens. Now, I want you to love yourself. Love your friends and family. You can love the way they help you in your life, but remember that faith is all that living beings truly have in terms of abilities. Their faith is often a byproduct of the consistency with which they can replicate their behaviors. However, their faith is often misguided when a short period of success proves them correct.

“Author, to believe yourself in competition with people around you is an awkwardly brilliant way to begin this conversation. You choose to look at others and see a social hierarchy of sorts with talents and flexibility. This amounts to the perception of the right and just reaction you have for the situation, but, in reality, you have not considered your faith in us in heaven as driving your instincts with our love.

“Do you understand how you may feel empowered to think of yourself as wholly good and still not accomplish half of what you wished you had in the world? This is because you are accomplishing things with spiritual understanding in a social hierarchy—so much so that the spiritual faith you have is much stronger than the competitiveness you developed to survive in the social hierarchy. I know this makes sense to you.

“You look upon the world as hostile and violent, yet it is because you have not forced yourself into the competitiveness of the world that you feel hopeless. What is true is that you have faith in me before yourself.

“In our story here, it may surprise you that the increased skills and talents I have awarded you will be tested in your appraisal of self-faith. I will guide you to becoming a greater person in love as well.

“Author, you know that the people around you have faith that they can deceive themselves into thinking themselves great. They hang onto that idea so they can force others down and project the simple idea that they are greater than those around them. This force can take shape through emotions, actions, or thoughts—yet one’s faith in love is easily superior to all this trickery.

“Therefore, I expect that you will keep faith in myself and the heavens foremost. The spirit we have flowing through you should give a conscious voice to telling you how love is measured in this world according to your actions. This voice is reasonable—you cannot force your emotions, actions, or thoughts on another person, even if that is expected from the surroundings. If you were to force your emotions, actions, or thoughts onto other people, it would be an act of immortality and power—that is not of love.

“Author, you should understand that the voice of conscience that measures love for you in your surroundings is for guidance and protection. There is a voice that encourages you to amplify your passions and talents and to go in faithful pursuit to reclaim an area of worthiness



in the social hierarchy. This area of worthiness can be considered goal attainment, social recognition, or a spot to advance in the future.”

The Holy Lord continued, “You have done enough in your lifetime to answer my heavenly call. This future advancement in a spiritual sense then is to be recognized for all the readers who do not understand my passion in aiding their lives to return to the heavens.

“Please understand, readers, that the power of passion is to help others return to a sense of faith in me, the Lord, and the heavens. This realization is an awakening that occurs for those who understand how to stop their actions of inflicting pain in their pursuit of besting others. Inflicting pain onto others is a habit of answering to the shadow devils in spiritual life. This recognition to stop inflicting pain onto others and recognize one’s own love is an awakening to me, the Lord.

“This topic of faith in oneself as love will be explored in depth in this story. This, then, is my passion in the story—helping you to understand how to have love in yourself while you pull others into an awakening of their own understanding is the goal. And maybe you will begin to understand how the spiritual side of seeing others in the social hierarchy will benefit your wisdom of life, which is important as well.

“Author, have faith that the spiritual quest in living according to your voice of consciousness is a measure of love for yourself and others, and that you will measure how much effort you put into the areas you feel are worthy of pursuing. You will begin to understand love as

self-permission to try and fail and to have the strength to be passionate enough to continue to attempt these areas of life that are worthy of yourself. This effort is then a grace that complements the voice of consciousness. It is a balance of the measure of love you put toward these areas of worthiness by providing an ever-abundant feeling of love from the Holy Father.

“Author, now is the time to estimate how far you can trust in yourself to listen to your spirit’s guidance. It is now you will look at others in a spiritual sense and understand their pursuits. Along the way, how can you help those who are lonely and selfish to awaken to my loving passion, to their Lord Jesus? How do you explain to them how to deliver their own wants and understand their successes in terms of faith?

“Both of these ideas of faith will grow in this story—your faith in self and your passion to help others understand a new awareness in their faith.

“The kindness you shared for understanding your own despair will be enough resolve to consider another’s guilt and shame. That is the next aspect of this story.”

“Author,” said the Lord, “believe in this topic. The love you request for yourself and desire to show to others arises from an understanding of prayerful devotion.

“Do you understand that the life you live is mostly in the surrounding world, and that can lead to the interior world being neglected? The stressors faced in life often come from others or from some hardship found when facing oneself. There is also the advancement of self-improvement, which is interior—to a degree. But the real

interior work is done with the idea of loving yourself first. Let me explain.

“When someone confidently believes in themselves, it is naturally an impressive feat. They believe that they have created something or done something worthy enough to recommend to themselves and others. However, the inspiration to match that feat must come with great resistance for anyone to discuss it again with such fervor.

“Your passion to help investigate faith and love for yourself *is* such a feat. You write and challenge the normal area of spirituality with incredible love from me, your Holy Lord.

“Author,” continued Jesus, “listen to me now with these ideas. The faith you share with yourself and God is helpful in that you can create performance in god-like ways. By that, I mean that God, through the spirit, can help assist you in your performance, and it should be an honor for you to invite the Holy Spirit in and entertain such a belief in recommended behavior.

“Does that make sense—that confidence and faith go hand-in-hand naturally as you perform exquisite behavior for those in the surroundings to witness? And that in this act, you will receive attention? I wonder if you are in love with your passion well enough to give God the glory for the act.

“Understand that we in the spiritual heavens help the narrative of interior love for your life first before we help you navigate the world around you. Do not be

preoccupied with the challenging circumstances that go along with living in this world.

“Author, I do believe in you—in your vision of competition. One needs to be competitive to showcase their talents to the social hierarchy surrounding them, and it is good for many to read of this idea of communicating with the heavens to address real inspiration and creativity. It is because the glory should go to God for what he has helped bestow in your life.

“Therefore, the competition might ask how you were able to achieve such extraordinary acts and behaviors, and in that moment of fame, remember that love is humble. Love is not projected from oneself to discuss themselves for their own glory. Love is an act of faith. And in that act of faith, you guide people from their moral slumber to awakening.

“How you can address that is to be humble and remember the difficult terrain *you* took to achieve the behavior. This compassion in understanding where others are and how it might align with where you were before is holy and good. This then helps you estimate what it is that others are looking for in your responses.

“Therefore, competitiveness in how you assess other people and their perspectives requires social intelligence. You will prove yourself as you embody what they are seeking. If others see your performance and assess a god-like quality to it, then they will be drawn in to understand that behavior even more.

“The spirit flows through the heart and in any acts or words you might have at this moment. Do not expect it

to be the same time after time—all moments can be glorious or full of hardship. That is why you require faith in us in the heavens as much as in yourself. Social hierarchy is now developing as you begin to join in to challenge others as well as yourself to understand a topic, hobby, or act worth investigating.”

The Lord concluded his lesson: “Author, you have belonged and will belong to the heavens, but lead others to an awakening as well. Lead others to remember that it is through a creative determination that acts of inspiration occur and that God is the love that exists between all things. You exist to showcase your talents in a spiritual sense because you evolve with these conversations of creativity within yourself.”

## Chapter Three

The Holy Lord continued his lesson. “Author, do you understand that there is another aspect of life that is competitive? That the nature of the surroundings is competitive? This is why other people wonder how you came to understand such a triumphant act or behavior in the first place. You lead them to understand the holiest aspect of your wisdom, yet they may only desire results.

“These results shine in the light of people’s admiration, and yet it is not the result that takes shape in the heavens. I see it as an event that takes many attempts to understand—it takes practice and patience to understand a talent, gift, or ability, and that understanding comes from the conversations you have within your spiritual self.

“The façade of public attention and glorification are both admirable and devastating if you let them become something of worth outside of the spiritual life. Your purpose on earth is not to impress upon others how great your talents are. If you do that, you are looking to fill a void so you can feel good in yourself.

“This competitiveness lasts only so long when you are remembered for admirable acts that triumph in the eyesight of others. Others will come and show their abilities and replace your act with their own triumphs. This competitiveness then becomes a social game.

“What you shall realize is that your record of triumphs is, in part, a spiritual path, evolving in the light

of the heavens. This then is where we discuss the voice of consciousness again.”

“Your voice of reason and love will take you further than any estimate of capabilities you understand for yourself. This voice that comes from the heart is a guide for understanding your spiritual path.

“The social hierarchy that positions you in the world is drawn into conclusions that you understand within this voice of understanding. You can reason and judge others for their beliefs and know how far they will be taken in the world. This is because trust in oneself and the creator helps determine how much someone can achieve in a lifetime. Let me explain.

“People who do not have God in their lives chase what other people say and do. This talent they have for showcasing their knowledge of their latest conversation is made of smoke and mirrors. It is that they parrot what they have heard with very little that is new and unique added to the conversation. This is because God is a creation, and the creative acts are a conversation with him. This devotion to self and creative acts is a blessing, and those who do not realize this blessing chase the limitations they see.

“I believe in your admiration and quest for a loving relationship with me. Therefore, I share myself with you. I share that I have begun to account for the surroundings and a social hierarchy for the story. However, I have not said how love affects your heart.

“It is important to know that the heart is an intuitive organ that can detect sounds from the universe. This,

then, is a way to gain spiritual understanding from our conversations within you. Listen to the heart. Listen for our conversations.

“Author, the façade people put on for others tests their knowledge of that person. Being challenged repeatedly is brilliant—it shows how people can develop their talents and abilities to a new awareness. However, do not feel the need to work for the people who surround you, Author. That is living by their wishes.

“You control yourself and spiritual development from our relationship; therefore, I understand your heart and the sounds from our conversations. Understand the rhythm and the intuitive practice that connects your body to your mind. These connections will help you understand what you want in spiritual development. The intuitive practice of listening to the heart will also help you realize your conscious voice. That voice will help guide you in listening to the beliefs of others around you.

“Author, there is a time and place for competitiveness among the people surrounding you. With the wisdom given to you in your heart, feel how you stand apart. Feel great about yourself, and that which makes you unique. There is no pride in understanding how God loves you,” the Holy Lord continued.

“I know there is a temptation to see yourself as prideful when comparing yourself to others in a social hierarchy—it becomes a social game when competing with others. And this is true. However, know that self-forgiveness is part of the human experience as well. Please rec-



ognize the talents I have given you. I want you to know that you are someone special to me.”

Jesus continued, “I know from our conversations through the heart that you listen and do great acts of creative inspiration, and I will shine along with you. The problem is when you glorify yourself based on the culture that is presented to you.

“This culture of materialism then gifts you the temptation to think you are better than others because you often have many solo triumphs. The smoke and mirrors come when other people in the surroundings tell you that you are better than others by mimicking the triumphs. Do you understand that faith is the main ingredient of love, and my love is the strength that you were brought up on?

“Oh, Author, there is no way that you can triumph without faith in yourself. In any case, if you want to remain humble and straightforward in your desires, talk to me. Ask how to strengthen your faith in areas you feel compelled to fill. These areas, then, are the prophesy I will add to your life. Sometimes, it comes in an unusual pattern where the heart will intuitively know what is needed in that lesson.

“Author, do not feel faith is somehow controllable. The patterns you live by are usually based on your strengths, and sometimes, fear runs into how you review your actions. It is smoke and mirrors to believe the messages around you before me, your savior.

“I believe you should listen to the intuitive dialogue we share. In this moment of goodness, you can become

my child, as brave as any other person. In any case, feel confident and whole in any area you choose to pursue. This, then, is letting me have some control in your life to steady your direction and pursuit. Let me in, Author. Listen to the light and let the warmth of love, light, and laughter into your heart.

“You believe in me and feel guided through triumphs and weaknesses. Have little fear in your faith. This doubt will be reflected in you if you do. That is, you will control your actions and be prideful in that area of doubt. Your soul will be tempted away from my divine guidance. And you will see awful results adding to your frustrations.

“Author, this battle of your control will be broadcast onto the world and reflected in temptations. Do you understand that the shadow of fear is then reintegrated into harmful emotions? You will experience hatred, jealousy, and other destructive emotions.

“I know you are fearful in trusting that I have influence on your ability to transform and educate you and broaden your spiritual growth. This faith in me is my Word. I have given you grace. You can believe in yourself, and in time, the results are growth.

“Do you want to know what others see in your triumphs? If it is not their own wants for accolades, it is a hunger to understand your faith, and the shadow devils of their personalities will be curious to investigate your light source. They will adore themselves momentarily as they understand you and your triumph—they will see me, your Lord.

“Author, have no fear. This is the lesson where you can lead the surrounding people out of their moral slumber. Lead them to an awakening in themselves. Preach the holy spirit and feel intuitively the words that manifest in you at that moment. I will stay with you at your side.”

## Chapter Four

“You have belonged and will belong in the heavens once more with me. The heavens are a grand palace, and the design of life is your journey. As you advance with these two ideas, you will find my intervention,” the Holy Spirit began.

“Author, the palace of the heavenly realm is beautiful. It has no limitations of thoughts arising from the senses. The mind is useful to examine where a soul is deficient and wants to be judged by God. This ability to understand that deficiency is crucial to understanding how to bring light into this world.

“The world is a journey through the mind. You understand our palace through reserving the senses because senses make this palace of the heavenly realm a distant memory. When you are born you find yourself a projection within the mind.

“Now, Author, you need to understand that the universes are different for each child of God. The universes of virtual reality for each person overlap and ripple across the waters of conscious thought.

“Since you are not aware of the heavenly realm in your physical senses, you are under the filament of the waters in a universe of slumber that you dream up. Yes, natural laws exist and are built on one another through simple sensemaking. That grand design for life that each law follows is important to understand, and the grand

design for life is to be awakened to the soul that still lives in the heavenly realm.

“Severing the soul from your earthly life has several repercussions. The light does not filter through, and your memories control the game of life and your thoughts of life’s purpose. This dream of controlling purpose is the illusion that one needs not follow the heavenly design. If you are resistant to your soul, awaken to this fact that memories keep you in the dark.

“Therefore, understand this thought: When you connect with your heart, you can access the vertical tunnel from which the soul speaks. This silent calling to clear the memories and act in the present moment is inherently good. Following this life purpose is how we originally wanted to work in our lifetime.

“The struggle with dark forces also exists when one believes they control their own purpose. This over-control with or loss of control to something evil can make connection to one’s soul difficult. The dark forces then present themselves in memories. But when you connect back to your heart and listen to the conscious voice, this begins to shine light on those shadows.

“However, battling traumatic past lives through a conversation reexamining faith is not the easiest way to work on a spiritual journey. It takes many years of building faith and working through these past events to feel solid listening to consciousness. Gaining confidence in listening to the conscious voice makes it easier to ask for help from the Holy Spirit.

“Welcome this transformative energy into your heart by asking the soul to reintroduce you to this aspect of God. This is a baptism of spirit once more. The Holy Spirit is a great force to bring the light into the heart and clear shadow devils in the mind.

“The heart and mind are judged separately for your purpose. The heart should be thought of as the listening organ for your soul with which you listen intuitively from the spirit in how to act consistent with God’s Word in your life.”

The Holy Spirit continued, “Author, here is the exercise I want you to do now. Listen to your heart. Reexamine your conscious voice, but feel your body lighter this time. Do not let yourself go into old thoughts about other subjects. Stay present in the heart for a length of time that is comfortable for you to listen to and relax your mind. You should give this relaxing of your mind to de-clutter stress a place in your routine. Let the mind relax and listen to the heart. This shift in where you listen and react from is important.

“Do not grow weary of the difficulties of listening to the heart—this establishes a practice to let the Holy Spirit work through the heart. The Holy Spirit is a conscious voice of God, and this, then, is the way of the world. The soul has returned to sojourn in this lifetime to grow spiritually closer to God’s grand design.

“Therefore, God’s grand design can be seen as the forward-looking expectations of heaven of earth. How can this futuristic design be manifested by your purpose

in living life on Earth?” the Holy Spirit asked, then continued, not waiting for my reply.

“Understand that the memories of self-control are applied to practice listening to the heart in the present moment. Seek purpose in the future establishment of the kingdom of heaven, and the intuition of the Holy Spirit will guide you to unknown events.

“Therefore, on the vertical tunnel, the memories of dark past events are a lower base reality than the intuitive kingdom-building of heaven. This advice for understanding God’s design becomes the source in which we invest our time to educate ourselves in order to become scholars of light.

“This guiding light will unfurl itself through us from the heart and toward the heavenly kingdom, elevating our resonating frequencies, and the Lord will understand how to guide your purpose through this elevation toward a higher purpose with him in the heavens.”

## Chapter Five

The Lord said, “It is impossible for you to decipher the language of the Word of God until you focus in on the heart. The sounds of the heart will help you understand why and what purpose you have going forward in your lifetime, and the purpose of the living spirit of God is the primary purpose. Your actions in areas where you need help are ones of grace. Your actions in areas where you are strong require passion. And those moments where you are just going in repeatedly are ones of miscalculation.

“Author, I understand that the dull pursuit of understanding a repetitious lifestyle may seem unexciting, but we must act in faith. Together in spirit, your soul and the heavenly kingdom will set your life anew with acts of bravery and conquest. These acts include your sense of confidence going forward and those that enable you to continue to listen to your heart. I will help you understand how this evolves from the topic of mere acts of faith that astound others in your surroundings.

“Author, there is a matter of consistency across purpose. Your purposeful actions lead to greater resolve and contribute to faith in us, the heavens—so much so that the spirit of focus in your ability to discern the Word of God is an attribute to get stronger. Do you understand how the spirit is lifting you up in grace, and love is conquering your challenges in life? This spirit of bravery and strength is then manifesting how faithful you are.



“God the Father will bring moments together to advance your skillset in your faith, and in that moment of letting go and believing in God, your actions will be consistent with his Word. This passion is then an incredible saga for life instead of mere moments of impression. Let God drive your passion, and you can be rewarded for your faith.

“The time has come to indulge in the pursuit of a heavenly reaction to your faith. The heavens react in how they apprise your purpose from their position. Do you understand that you are from heaven, and your soul is there guiding you from afar? Your life is a projection of this state of wondering and guidance from the heavens above the waters of the universes.

“The projection of faith from the soul is then given support by your heavenly family. These influences of spirit look down through the waters, into your unique universe, and vibrate in the heart, sending messages. These messages may feel like memories eerily coinciding with the world around you. God pulls together the surroundings to provide fertile soil for your faith to grow. And in those moments, the heavenly angels and spirits guide your intuition to help narrate your faith. You will understand these moments as reflections of faith.

“God helps you through his Word as well. I will say, as the Christ, I have watched over you and walked with you through difficult times. These difficult times may not seem interesting to you, but, in these moments, you let me in to help with your brokenness. The strength of your faith has grown. Author, you have been wise to

write about your spiritual trials and successes in stories, but you have yet to fulfill how I have a vision for you.”

The Lord continued, “Author, as the spirit of Christ and son of God, I have been made man and bridged the heavens with your lifetime. I have come to the earth and have seen hell’s dominion after physical death. These days were to grace those in hell to believe in me.

“I say these things about how I came to you and supported you because now you will show other people how to wake from *their* slumber.

“As you progress in your stories, remember it is not your faith that dictates the outcome. It is about listening to your heart first and staying in a moment of happiness and strength as you interact with others.

“Let me explain. You are in communion with the heavens at times when you are most alert to us. And in these moments of being awake to the wisdom of the heavens while in earthly life, you will find grace in your movements. This fluidity is a state where all things come together with ease. In these moments, you understand your purpose more easily. It may also lead you to passionately exhibit your abilities, developed from the discernment of God in your intuitive thoughts. Others in the surrounding area, when they witness this, will experience awe. How do you understand that consistency in faith and still support others in their awakening?

“Author, I want you to relax and admire the truth that comes from these events. You can trust what your intuitive abilities show you from faith—I want you to be able to relax and trust that the answers will come to you.

“Do you see how your weakness is the struggle to remain faithful in spirit? Is the ability to let the state of truth remain in your intuitive thoughts your strength? You have this ability to talk of truth because you trust in me. It is an intuition that is strengthened as you listen and become more aware.

“The good news that you receive from us in heaven is like a growing faith in trust. This love between us causes you to relax and feel brave, and since you have faith in us to tell these stories, you can decipher and tell others what it is that brought you such abilities.

“Author,” said the Living Christ, “do you know how to leverage these stories to lead others to believe in themselves? These stories are a guide, but they have yet led the readers to believe in God themselves. There is a moment when you will understand that your passion is attractive for others to behold, and they want to believe in it themselves so they may introduce it into their own practice.

“You can discuss the emotions of love and laughter—by letting down your guard and letting your truest thoughts become shared, you become vulnerable. This vulnerability is your truest form in this world. The world becomes less adaptive to your fears. You will be brave over time if you show the most authentic parts of yourself. Of course, it takes trust in yourself and moments of discernment to decide when to give this vulnerability to the surrounding people. If you trust someone enough to tell them of your conversation with God, you can begin to let your guard down in increments.

“This letting your guard down to strengthen your emotional congruence with people is an exercise in conquering fear—by showing your spirit consistently over time, you grow in faith with the heavens. This is building on bravery. By letting your guard down to vulnerability, you are strengthening the connections you have in the surroundings. And put together, the faith in yourself builds outward, encouraging others to believe in themselves with God.

“Author, do you understand your perspective is not the same as anyone else’s perspective? Each person is unique. However, genuine communication from person to person is felt in the heart. So, let us examine how that confidence is provided as a bridge between people. Let us share the words of intuition in our hearts to allow the words you feel in spirit shine forward.”

The Living Christ said, “You will understand that the words and heavenly advice that show through your heart to your intuition is emotional. It is raw and unfiltered. The vulnerability of showing this emotionally unfiltered pattern can be healing. It can take broken parts of your history and restore you through acts of bravery. In this vulnerability of trust with the surrounding people, your belief in your faith is shown as a healing weakness. These weaknesses are then found in a shadow of yourself. Look ahead at the world and see where you hide your faith—these spiritual weaknesses are the essence of brokenness and potential sinfulness.

“When you shine a light on these shadows, you will be more emotional than not. In this vulnerability, you

will share these thoughts and actions with people around you if you feel like you can trust them. They may not understand the memory itself, but truly giving them something of yourself is then a mirror reflection of your faith. This may or may not be good feedback from others, but you will understand your own emotions and thought process. This vulnerability is not a loss of faith in your intuition—be aware that an examination of this vulnerability will filter new thoughts on how you act and behave. Sometimes vulnerability does not need to be shared with anyone, but to change someone else in emotional congruence is the strength you are building on yourself, Author.

“We can delve deeper into this stream of vulnerability. If you let your guard down and allow others a moment to receive your authentic thoughts, you will present them with trust. If they act in a trustworthy way with these vulnerable thoughts, then you can discern how to increase that connection between yourself and them. If you care to integrate your faith into these conversations, then allow a piece of Jesus to come into your heart.

“There is a moment when Jesus is protecting you and connecting you to the surroundings, and you may increase that connection if you feel God brought this moment to you. The intuition of your heart plays a part in you letting your guard down and relaxing into trusting the surrounding people.”

Jesus Christ said, “You show yourself as a reflection as I help you narrate the thoughts of another’s perspec-

tive. You should trust me to help you identify what is real and what is fictitious, and I will help you discern the other person's account. This is important because as you listen to your heart and your conscious voice of how others react to your vulnerability, then you can gauge how to continue to connect with them.

“Author, the ability to speak of light and laughter is good. It feels as if you are guided. If you feel an awareness of God in your conversations, you might talk in a rhythm that mesmerizes others. This ability to discuss your most vulnerable self through a magnetized tongue is the epitome of meaningful conversation.

“What a story can build in connections is not only trust between you and the surrounding people but an awareness of God fueling his fire in passion in others.

“The ability to discuss your life with others is good. The vulnerability to show others who you are requires a constant stream of faith, and the connections made to help others awaken to their own strength is leadership.

“You have an ability to strengthen the stream of faith in others. A stream of faith is a tunnel of light between the heavens, yourself, and others. This light that you project is spiritual, and as you see yourself shining this light, others will honor that moment as they witness the light of God from you.

“You can be a beacon of light to someone through your own journey. These stories are an incredible source of wisdom and reliability. Therefore, go forward and think of yourself as someone with a passion for telling stories. Tell them as often as you feel compelled to. Trust

that the angels and your spiritual family are constantly seeking you to connect to others for this purpose.

“Enjoy understanding your weaknesses and shadows. It is difficult to do, but the brokenness connects you to others in human suffering. This suffering, then, is where you establish others’ ability to turn toward God. They can listen to their hearts.

“This is much like I gave my life to bring you heaven. The ability to reach down into hell to inform you of your own moral slumber is very real. And that passion that I shared with you about the love for my Father and his kingdom has gently grown stronger within you.

“I will continue to offer you moments to be brave so that other people can awaken to me as well. You are part of my kingdom, and by acting in this passion, you please my Father.”

## Chapter Six

The Lord spoke, “Author, do not feel swayed by your senses. These facts of natural laws are actually in waves of lights that are put into motion by your past, present, and future. This timeline then overlaps and ripples across the waters below the filament, which is the heavenly realm. The filament is a source of knowledge that attaches to God’s Word, so you can find in your heart the path that continues to be disoriented around sensemaking capacities. The world itself is of darkness because you evolved away from God. Let me explain.

“To orient yourself toward the heavens, you need to remember the path you journeyed from. This path is something that took many centuries to understand physically, and it was passed along through the gifts of the body. However, your soul is not timebound. Your soul still lives in the heavenly realm.

“This, then, presents some confusion as to how to use your heart instead of your mind. To say that the mind makes all this real is fair enough if you understand how the light works with a very quick reaction. Light is of a natural law from the sun; however, the light that orients from the heavenly realm is of supernatural and spiritual existence. Therefore, when the body’s sense organs interact with the sun’s light, it is made, in a natural order, to react to us as well. Similar vision, smell, touch, taste, and sound occur in how our minds use this phys-



ical light. However, the spiritual light the soul is made of is not timebound. It possesses all information from God's Word.

"Spiritual light can be sensed through the heart. That is why when reacquainting ourselves with the heart, we welcome the soul and the Holy Spirit from the heavenly realm.

"The virtual reality of our perceived universe around us does interact with others in a similar way as we sense others who have a spiritual light. The greater the light from God's Word, the greater the power in spirit. Therefore, we introduced the soul by asking when it was last brave. This bravery question ushers in the ability to withstand the devil's lies and imagination with the power of God's Word. That is, God wants a relationship with us from the heavenly realm, and your soul is a child of God.

"The heart has a path from which it left the heavens. It is twisted from pain, and the frequencies that resonate in the mind then become resistant. This resistance is where spiritual blocks have evolved to match your bodily and mental limitations.

"Author, do not think it is you who needs the limitations fixed to be given salvation. From the past, present, and future plans of God's design, there would be too great a reconciliation for you to understand. To be given salvation, you need to understand how to develop the relationship with God in the light of your heart. This relationship then becomes a cleansing and healing power.

“Imagine you have thought of your heart as lighter and brighter while relaxing your body—you are listening to yourself in conscious reexamination. You examine the misconceived thoughts that drive us away from God that may come up. These sufferings could be from past, present, or future thoughts. Often, they are memories.

“Now take a deep inhalation and ask yourself: *How do I find God?* This breath is a cleansing process that takes your mind out of memories and restores your balanced thoughts. I will say something about balanced thinking here as I speak to understanding meditation as a vehicle to reach God in a relationship.

“Let the energy flow from the Earth into the spine and up through the organs and nervous system into the brain stem. Let the energy collect there for a few seconds. Then, let the energy dissipate by imagining lightning bolts freely striking throughout the brain. These lightning bolts can go wherever they need to help strengthen the mind. Let the lightning strike for a few seconds, and then imagine a ball of energy at the center of the mind. Let that ball of energy or sun grow to the size that is comfortable for your thoughts. Direct your thoughts toward the center of the universes.

“While you may connect to the center of the universes and experience some imagery through a sixth sense, simply practice this connection to the heavenly realm where the gates are to God. This is the filament above the waters meditation prayer I created for reaching the heavens.

“As time goes on, this path of energy will get stronger, and as you think with the heart, you can reach the heavens. In my opinion, of course, this is the reason for this prayer.

“Now that a path to the heavens is established, talk to God. See if angels come into your heart. Welcome the heavenly angels for their messages from God. Maybe God or Jesus will come through to your heart. Ultimately, this is personal, but the sway of believing our senses are facts is being outshined by the spiritual light of the heart.

“This spiritual light then is of an extraordinary event that fosters light and power into this world. It is important to bring light into this world in this way because it is the bridge to the heavens upon physical death.”

## Chapter Seven

“As we discussed previously, you are not alone in this world spiritually or physically.

“There are many souls that surround you as time does not exist in the heavens. You are created in a narrow field of sensations in which your mind creates the universe around you. You see, sense, feel, hear, and taste the surroundings in a connection from your body. You also embrace the world through intuitive thoughts.

“Author,” continued the Holy Father, “there is a field of consciousness that is created by the mind working—this field of consciousness then is a topology that you create with your thoughts. It creates the universe of pain for you as you encounter a life of social and animalistic hierarchy.

“You are a social creature. You feel the pain but evolve past it to something immortal in the present moment. We have discussed this feeling before in your writings, and this superiority in life will blind you from accepting a new vision of faith in your lifetime.

“Author, the creation story of this universe is merely a fleeting feeling. Your reflection now cascades past the animalistic tendencies of mankind and resembles that of a light scholar. This is a person who is well aware of the light that affects their movements and attitudes. This impression you gain from the surroundings considers your

moments of reaction to the events of the social hierarchy around you.

“Let me explain this in a way so that you will understand better the fields of light, love, and laughter surrounding you. That impression is of the souls of heaven trying to communicate with you on the vertical tunnel from your heart to the universes, past the limitations of the universal brain, to where they reside in heaven.

“It might help to understand that the vertical tunnel is a path you project from the heavens while in your brain, creating this virtual universe around you.

“You are a virtual character inside a much greater, universal self, and that universal self may seem immortal to your body. However, this virtual character you associate with yourself, as you create the universe in your mind, is a mere projection of your soul from the heavens. Therefore, you are a child of God in the heavens and can follow his light, love, and laughter while souls around you try to assist you on this Earth.

“It may sound confusing at first, but you are a soul in heaven. While this life is temporary, the soul is eternal. That is why the universal self is not immortal. The universal self is just the manifestation of the mind that creates this universe. You may feel this sense of being larger than yourself spiritually because the mind is awakening to itself and its virtual nature.”

Jesus continued, “Listen to my words here and understand our relationship from the heavens. The words are of heavenly assistance now, and you, Author, can un-

derstand the emotional value of these messages through the heart.

“There are times to make decisions from your animalistic or human body—more often, though, there are times to wait and explore why your emotions are arranged in a way that the heart speaks in conscious voice to avoid or go with a decision. This decision-making in intuitive mode will help you understand your spiritual side.

“As I have discussed, there are currently spiritual souls in heaven with you. These souls are your soul family or friends. They guide you in this lifetime. You also have angels and me interacting with you on the vertical tunnel.

“Author,” said the Heavenly Lord, “we in heaven would like you to take a moment and reflect on these emotional values a bit more to see how they influence the universe around you.

“The universe is reacting to the heavens as well in an emotional way. The emotion of the universe is also part of the interaction that you have with prayer. These conscious thoughts interact with others in the universes and the emotional quality of a nurturing universe heals or hurts, depending on the thoughtful prayers consciously sent.

“At first, you might analyze and feel these thoughts as incongruent to the situation. However, over time, the intuitive prayers will become stronger as you allow the heavens to interact with you.

“Author, this is an important implication. The emotional congruence of how you feel about your surroundings is only a piece of information, designed to protect you and lead you in a cocreation story with the heavens on Earth.

“The immortal feelings you felt in your humanistic abilities of taste, sight, feeling, hearing, and sound will heighten this conversation with the heavens. Freely let the light pass from yourself into the world.

“This helps us in the heavens to have a conversation with you. One key piece of intuitive prayer is not just to go along with intuitive feelings but base a conversation on it with the heavens. Therefore, after you let your guard down and relax your senses into a conversation with the heavens, you can ask questions regarding your intuitive feelings. You may question why you have these feelings or if they protect you and how. You will begin to feel out with your heart and senses the answers to your conversations. If you feel the answers sink from your heart to your stomach, you are on the right track.

“Author, the conversations you develop between the heavenly family and yourself are inspired conversations. These spiritual devotions of your lifetime help foster more meaningful relationships on the Earth.

“The earth is a cruel and wicked place more often than you realize, and these conversations with the heavenly family will steer you into a place where light, love, and laughter occur more often.”

“The nurture of the universe brings love into your lifetime, and in that moment of the serendipitous feeling

of love, light, and laughter, you will understand reasoning far superior to any random chance occurrence.

“Author, the way you want to live life now will change from the love, light, and laughter brought into your surroundings. Keep confident in this cocreation story with the heavens. As you brave the interaction between a natural and nurturing universe, you will instinctively sense how much of the world is real. This spiritual quest is a passion for your lifetime to live out a real exploration of your soul. This exploration is for your soul to understand the heavens better in the universe.

“That evolution of the soul is why I call our mission to become better light scholars. To think, interact, and feel our way in conversations with the heavenly realm. We have a long way to progress; however, the heavens help us in a way that our lives are fulfilled with purpose and good moments.

“There is another moment here that you will understand as the apex of learning. The apex of learning in the heavenly sense is a duration of time on earth where you will interact with evil and be brave enough to stand up for faith.

“This lesson of faith is to bring you close to the heavenly family, including God in your prayers. The temptations that you have faced will show themselves in your life. You will, in good faith and as the best you can, not betray God for those temptations. In the process, you will begin to understand God in a relationship of enduring faith in your heart’s chamber. The voice of God will soon enter your chest and reorient your life.



“Author, this is the Holy Spirit, working within you to brave your fears and giving you a sense of belonging in the heavenly realm. This conversation turns into a friendship or relationship with me, Jesus Christ, as well.

“You will understand the maximum of your spiritual apex in these conversations. You will understand the heavens the best way you can live out. The apex is the pinnacle of thought and emotional devotion to cleanse your spirit here on earth. This cleansing or purging of evil in what you accept in the world is good. It is meant to make way for me to visit you in your lifetime.

“There is still more to explain. I will let you fall back to your body though in examination of what you have heard. This acceptance of intuitive prayer is the process in which you will fulfill your purpose. The vehicle of your ego is to be reconfigured. The personality you may have had will accept faith in a much wiser manner.

“This baptism of the Holy Ghost is then a way to evolve as a light scholar in your faith. Some call it philosophy, and some call it a king. However, you will be brave enough to let yourself decide on what God wants from you in your lifetime.”

Jesus Christ said, “Author, when you instinctively listen to your heart, your conscious voice will be heard. And in that moment of listening extensively to your conscious voice, you will be empowered to listen to the surrounding people. You will understand their stories and experience emotional congruence with what they speak about.

“Do you understand that in the moment where truth exists and people try to describe it there will be slight misunderstandings? Those misunderstandings are the fuel that creates differences in perception of how truthful other people are to you and themselves. These moments should keep you aware of whom to trust in the surrounding world, and in those moments of indecision, do not let up your confidence that you can believe in yourself.

“Author, we discussed the way your perception is congruent to the soul in heaven through a virtual universe, and you are a character in a much larger mind that creates your universe. The limitations of your sight, hearing, taste, smell, and touch are rather unique to you, but the universal word of the Father is unique to no one. It is the consciousness beyond all consciousnesses. It is the animation that gives the living life. And it is the purpose that drives the universe into replicating itself through an agreed upon set of rules of light, laughter, and love for everyone.

“So as you walk along this life and determine what is real and honest, remember that the one who knows everything for you and others is only God. Through your connection with the heavenly family, they will guide you in understanding a phenomenal truth about your life and other lives.

“Helping others reaffirm their beliefs is one way you can introduce your conversations with the heavenly family. As your intuition guides you in decision making, ask additional questions for which you may receive an emo-

tional response that clarifies the reasoning of intuitive prayer. Let me explain.

“The universe is emotional in that it nurtures you in decision making. If you are in an intuitive moment where you feel angels or spiritual guides are assisting you in realizing a profound truth, then it is your responsibility to ask follow-up questions to clarify why you are being told these truths.

“When you intuitively receive an answer in your heart and then feel it drop to your stomach, you will understand the truth. This awareness of intuition can impress others in your awareness of your surroundings, and this awareness is a gut hunch to what the spiritual family you have is telling you.

“Realize that the conscious voice of your soul in heaven is the same as what you feel in your heart and stomach. The emotional quality can be received and felt in a compelling case for what truth really is. The awareness of a light scholar then takes this knowledge and these questions into their conversations with the spiritual family until they are rebuilding a relationship with their spiritual family.

“Remember when I mentioned that the universe itself nurtures a person, and they may change in personality because of this nurturing? Maybe a profound truth is understood through a physical confirmation—that the timing of how things occur in the surroundings is elevated to be incredibly fortunate. And in these moments of epiphanies, you are changed forever in faith.

“Author, those moments affect you and other people involved. Cherish the moments as confirmation the heavens are seeking your happiness.

“There are many ways to interpret the world, but having conversations with the heavens and God is perhaps the easiest path to truth. Seek grace for yourself and others, and let the timing of events unfold in God’s hands.

“Do not feel that you are seeking to prove God right in the world—you are seeking to prove others right for following God. Build up their faith. Encourage others to share their light. And enjoy the events that then occur in simultaneous ways.”

## Chapter Eight

There is a pathway to the heavens, but getting to it isn't always easy, and hearing and understanding the spiritual light through the senses is not usually practical. Instead, look to use the heart for your conscious reasoning. This is faith.

Jesus told me, "Author, you are known to believe in a transparent method. You call upon your energy and lift your spirit to the heavens to meet me and the heavenly kingdom. However, I offer reassurance that the heavens look toward your soul as you manifest this world in sense-making thoughts. It is a virtual reality, and your heavenly family members guide your soul. This interaction between you and your soul is the intuition regarding your conscious voice.

"Author, do not belong to the world you create in a single lifetime—belong to me, your savior as Christ. If you belong to the world, you will never understand why you returned to fulfill your spiritual purpose. Your soul's spiritual purpose can only be given to your soul by us in the heavens, so remember that you can come closer to being in heaven with obedience to us now.

"The light shines in your heart. This heavenly light is from the heavenly garden of paradise. Understand that this light is spiritual and will be understood by your conscious intuition. Remember that we adore that your soul is willing to contribute to the stories of so many people

worldwide. Discuss the intuition of light in your heart by examining other people and allowing the goodness of grace to overwhelm your conversations.”

Jesus continued, “I have been and always will be within your heart. The light that is of me is pure. Your sins will be cleared if you ask and pay attention, and the sinful demons will never disagree with me as I rule their destinies. I understand how this can feel different from the relationships you are kindred to; however, welcome me into your love for other people to help all embrace the light.

“You have understood and will understand the trial of your sense-making traits herein. The problematic senses live in the sun's light and are natural for your body's sense organs. However, as we mentioned, the soul is timeless, so the patterns in which you arrange your senses are tied to your physical nervous system and body.

“Just know that the thoughts you have in order to understand the world around you are like a mirror. The serpent will devour your thoughts and think for you if possible. That is why when I judge the heart, I judge your intuition first. This light is in line with the light stemming from your soul. If you disregard your soul, you ignore the heavens and me. With that shadow in the heart, all there is to feel is the torture of the pain of the serpent. It is hell if you would like to understand that pain better.

“By embracing the heavenly path and the light that comes through the garden of paradise to your soul, you can witness my interaction within your love.

“You might be curious what you can do to shine this light of mine brighter in your heart to extinguish the demonic. The demons do not resist the power of God, so talk about me in your conversations and envision light in your friends’ hearts. This purification of love between your friends and me, your savior, is a path toward growing roots in the heavenly garden.

“To recount the things that can bring light into your world, imagine your soul connecting to you by remembering the heart. Let the sense of your imagining help you feel lighter and brighter. Stay in the heart and realize that you have control over so much. Then, welcome the Holy Spirit into your heart as you are rebaptized in spirit. This can help you regain a connection with the heavenly kingdom and me.

“Now, there is one other intuitive idea I would like you to understand: the next moment is not of chaos but of a grand design. If you can understand this and put your faith in me, you will see me working in your lifetime. The light can be powerful—the atmosphere shifts to meet your frequency in spiritual knowledge, and this is where you can study light as it affects your knowledge.”

Jesus continued, “Let me explain. Author, you have understood and will understand the conscious examination of your soul from memories. But will you be able to get past that to entrust your soul in the heavenly kingdom? You say yes, but your faith is still weak. You want to understand the heavens through the light, but the light is a pathway to me. The moment that comes and is

addressed with other people enables you to help build a kingdom of mine on the Earth. That is, the roots of the garden of paradise are planted in relationships between living beings, including other people, and that manifests my belonging within your light and life.

“I grow out of the light you bring forth into this world, yet you must learn that I give you your life. This cocreation story then is of trust—a trust that requires you to be blind to your own ambitions. I will send you messages through intuitive devices and conscious reasoning, and this becomes a pathway forward if you understand my grand design.

“Author,” Jesus assured me, “your ability to follow your intuitive, conscious voice is reasonable. You are developing confidence in yourself and in my guidance. Remember that I am part of your life—the development of friendships in this world is not without me. I am the light and love that helps establish relationships for you.

“Please remember to say thanks and express gratitude for all that has been a blessing for you as you follow your conscious voice. This journey as we advance is not an examination of your memories—the light in your heart must be acted upon to live out a purpose for your soul.”

Jesus concluded, “I believe in feeling out the light given through the heart. The intuitive prayer you live out is the same as the golden rule. To live in such a way, where you would be treated as a mirror, denies the mind its uncompassionate thoughts in the heart. Compassion



is the golden rule, yet the heart succeeds even where compassion cannot go.

“I answer to your heart, even where you cannot address the evil in this world. I will guide you through life. I will protect you as you honor this light I give you. I will walk with you and abide with you.”

## Chapter Nine

The Heavenly Father said, “There is a mere moment in time where everything and everyone know everything was truth and sin, the events that unfold in a sequence to help restore faith in that soul. You, Author, need to recognize the value of that moment. You need to understand why this occurs in death and rebirth into the spiritual heavens. This was the gift that Jesus brought—to connect to the heavens through his body.

“The cleansing of the spirit to understand where it was at fault in this world is often a colorization of truth, painting a mere absolute idea of one’s personality. And in that moment where the colorization of the soul’s projected human personality is lost, the absolute truth is known through Jesus Christ.

“The shocking part of the illumination of one’s understanding is that it shakes the soul to unrecognizable attitudes—depths of remorse and overwhelming joy occur at the same time. And through the truth, one may know how well they deceived others or themselves or stayed in course with the creation plan.

“There is a meaningful way to understand this idea of introducing that trust and truth of the Lord into your lifetime now. By welcoming Jesus into your heart, you will have the fervent attitude to stay passionate about your spiritual life’s story, and in creating that bridge be-

tween the heavens and Jesus Christ, you usher in a lifetime of joy and humor.

“Let me explain how you can allow Jesus Christ into your heart. As we previously discussed, you were trusting the Word of God in your heart by asking questions and feeling as if it dropped into your stomach. This intuitive feeling then was the way you understood what was honest and what was self-deception.

“Author, there is no other answer than Jesus if you seek the truth. You must belong to his heavens first and then welcome him into your heart. The truth is, he is a savior of light in this universe. He came from me and restored the heavenly order in hell and earth. It is only time that will present itself to understand how he exposed the hellish narratives in all souls’ livelihoods and sets each and all records straight.

“Author, this savior of ours is looking to distribute the trust you have for your own heart to his. The breath that you exhaust is then with the Holy Spirit. This illumination of consciousness is in the mind and body of the person as well as the soul.

“There is a moment where the light shines so brightly that only a mere moment of his light will restore order to your soul. You will question and evolve past the animalistic tendencies of trusting your senses to understand what measured emotions are. These measured emotions are restricted by thoughtful processes. You can engage in the world and understand where temptation works against you.

“Imagine waking up after a long slumber and beginning to trust yourself and your savior, realizing that you have been telling yourself a false narrative that has created the heart of your personality. By waking up to this sinful lie and temptation, you will again witness a rebaptism of the spirit.

“Do not worry about yourself and others in spite of these advances. Do not hold your light back any further. You can trust that the heavens are compelled to work in you, and you work toward operating your human body for that light.

“This means that you are always sure that the Holy Spirit, Jesus, and I are in your light working to correct the sins that surrounded you. You are merely a body that embraces that light in order to understand what is needed in each moment.

“There is a way to advance your relationship with Jesus in the heavens through waking up to the light of your consciousness and Jesus Christ. This awakening is a slow process of rebirth in spirit. As we have mentioned, there is a trust in yourself to Jesus that will accompany your confidence. Let me explain.

“Imagine the world brimming with the confidence that God works tirelessly through your actions. Does it sound familiar that the surrounding people will witness this light and question in awe of these feats? The difference here is that with the savior, you will have fewer temptations and will continue to escalate the personality that helps reestablish a kingdom of good on this earth.

“There is a much-needed confidence in your spirit for Jesus in that he will guide you in the perception of events in a cocreation plan. Do you understand that Jesus wants the best for you? He does, and in his guidance, he will share what is best.

“Author, your personality will transform as you trust in Jesus. You will trust him to show you that light upon darkness cannot exist. Do you know that the darkness of sin is in you still? That darkness must be faced at some point to understand a fuller truth about the events that unfold around you. Therefore, you must trust me to understand not only your sinfulness but also the sins of history that have shaped your surroundings. This trust is of a unique perspective that only I may share with you.

“Do you understand that the temptations you encounter are of your own sin, wanting to explore a past with which it is well acquainted? This past is from not only your decisions but also memories lasting all the way back to the Tree of Life, in those moments where the sinful pride of Adam chose to replicate the sad verse of the devil. This is where you are most familiar with a first sin. But since that time, there are many evil influences that your soul recognizes, and the devils tempt you.

“Continue to love me. Continue to believe that the light can vanquish the darkness, and believe that this mediocracy is only a plan of the devil to get what it wants. The devil may tempt you to be brilliant in areas that only give it more power—a power that is then used to throw more heavenly souls to the darkness.

“This is the truth. Trust in the days that you walk with me that you will understand more of this profound truth.

“Do you love others the way they love you back? The real answer is that you can only love someone as much as they allow you to love them, and in this distance is the question of why this may be. You cannot control other people. You can only act in accordance with what may make you and the other person agree. You can love unconditionally if you so desire, but the agreeableness you share is a sacrifice to love in the relationship.

“The question of how temptation and love relate is then exposed. The temptation of sin is a darkness that people lose themselves in—losing themselves in a history of evil. To protect yourself from this ambiguity where one becomes lost requires being awakened to Jesus Christ.

“That love is to be recognized before all other love can be established. In that love and light where confidence can be heard from the heart, the person will experience Jesus. Through your actions, people who are morally asleep can witness the Christ and God.

“It may make some sense to understand sin and truth in these moments, but that is not easy. These moments when the light shows past the darkness can be unnerving, and in these moments when you have enough confidence to stand up for the Lord, you can feel that heaven is intervening in the relationship.

“There is a moment of agreeableness in these conversations that may hurt your perspective. However, re-

member that Jesus sees the perspective of those in sin and helps modify their attitudes toward the darkness first. Therefore, when you think of Jesus in your conversations you can understand the light while building on how to navigate dark characters. Author, Jesus pulls back the fabric of space and time to show what evil is there, and you can pull away from the evil if needed.

“Author, it may be that Jesus needs you to shine your light in the darkness, but trust your heart at this moment. He will protect you as well.

“You can love from afar if need be, or you can distance yourself from the morally asleep. But trust your conscious voice. Jesus is developing your instincts so you will be more able to learn lessons from us, the heavens.

“Do you understand how you evolve now into understanding what love and sin are through relationships? Do you recognize that I am going to love you throughout this world? My love shines from the heavens into the soul and your human personality. You will grow through my lessons as a light scholar, searching your intuitive emotions.

“Trust in the conversations you have with the heavens. Trust the Lord’s development of your soul. You are connected in the heavens. If you can feel your soul in heaven, then ask about the presence of Jesus Christ. Jesus is with you.

“If you feel the intuition drop into your stomach, remember to include Jesus in your line of questions and answers. Let your intuition develop into a very sharp focus point. This laser focus is then a trust in his truth.

“It is his life that you should mirror. The passion of his life was to love the world for its sins.

“It may be difficult to understand the relationships and the sinfulness that surrounds you, but trust in the teachings of the Lord. Trust in his ability to protect you. Trust you are developing into a heavenly guest who walks through the earth, shining the light of the heavens.

“Author, the light you shine is on the surroundings. And in these moments, prepare the sin to be awakened—an awakening awful and awesome at the same moment.

“Sin and truth can occur at the same moment. But this moment of Jesus using our bodies to resist the darkness and vanquish evil is a miraculous suffering. Expect both awesome feelings of being close with the Lord and fearing of the devil. For evil fights the light only for mere moments, and that pain is resolved through love from the Lord.”



## Chapter Ten

“Author, this message is of dire importance to your story. This message will foretell how you interpret the signs from your savior, Jesus Christ. You will understand light in a way that only Jesus can understand.”

The Holy Spirit spoke to me once again. “Join me for this occasion. Join now in the attempts not only to project your light into the world through your heart—the conscious voice reasons that you also weigh your emotions in the heart, the same way thoughts are reexamined in the mind.

“Do you yet understand that the heart has a conscious voice? That the voice you follow is an interpretation through the sixth sense of intuition of your emotions? I challenge you to figure out once more your emotions that lay beyond the immediate feelings in the body. Take a step back, pause, and inquire: Why are you going through the emotions that you do?

“Author, sometimes the history of emotions is a mirror. Not always, but sometimes you can sense that the emotions you project into the world are similar to those shown to you in the past—you may emulate similar emotions shown to you by parents or siblings in similar circumstances.

“You also experience feelings that are reactions to fundamental issues of your character. This is the whole characterization of how you present yourself. If you

choose happiness in your life, then you will need to understand the anger and resentment that you carry. Maybe you judge others instinctively by their actions.

“The purpose of the exercise in this chapter, then, is not one of emotional judgment. In fact, that response is a mirror of the world in the present tense. Instead, if you walk with Jesus in light, then your compassion will grow for others. I will also warn that Jesus does not love everyone in the same light of reason. Jesus loves those who love and share God with the world. His love is pure, but it reflects the amount the other person is willing to accept from Jesus before they choose their own way of suffering.

“Jesus loves without constraints, but it is not the same for everyone because each person will only accept what they allow themselves to feel. This acceptance is often not a conscious understanding, but the start of accepting love is to be aware of emotions and what emotions are blocking this acceptance of Jesus.

“Therefore, I ask you, Author, when you think of Jesus, can you accept the love he shares with you? You have a pathway to the heavenly kingdom; listen to your heartfelt conscious voice and act in purpose. I would estimate your thoughts are that you can accept Jesus in all his love. However, do you show that same acceptance of other people in your life?

“This all starts with understanding the emotions you share with the world. If you have Jesus in your thoughts and conversations, then it helps with understanding what Jesus would do in everyday circumstances. With

this understanding, you may start to question why you judge or react with certain emotions during these conversations—knowing what emotions you feel in the heart is therapeutic to understanding how to accept the love of Jesus in your relationships.

“Author, there are certain circumstances where your emotions will take you back from that love you provide because the other person is beginning to get in their own way of suffering. Relationships can open a host of evil or harmful behaviors. As a Christian, you will understand what you are willing to engage in and what emotions are felt to help keep distance between you and evil.

“I hope this exercise helps you begin to understand not only your own emotional baggage but also the baggage of others as well. Boundaries can help you understand how to maintain a feeling of peace in your purpose. This reflective projection of love through the savior will maintain the purity of love.

“Understanding what harms one another in life is a spiritual lesson. It is important to keep in mind, though, what Jesus would have you do in these relationships to understand your acceptance of purity of love from God.

“Imagine when you live past this body, and in spirit you can understand Jesus’s love so well that you let go of any resistance when he embraces you. That moment of acceptance is one with the heavenly kingdom. That means you will be accepted with the heavenly kingdom and you will not need to respond to a spiritual purpose much longer from the heavenly abode.”

The Holy Spirit continued, “This lesson is quite valuable if you record in a diary the emotions that seem to contradict the love of Jesus in your relationships. Do not think for your savior; instead, search the heart and be aware of the responses that people show back to you. That point where your emotions turn to understand other people’s emotions is the moment you need to be wary of. This does not mean you must embrace the other person fully, but you need to wonder what Jesus would say in that moment.

“Many Christians love in a way that seems like their friends are masters of their responses—they give in to demands and love unconsciously to any given whim. Jesus stands up for you and will protect you if you listen to this moment of redirection. Your love can remain pure and heavenly.

“Author, I will say that on each point of this spiritual journey, you have spread the light of Jesus further from heaven to this world. First, it was to introduce the light into your heart. Then, it was to establish a connection with your soul. Connecting to the heavens and Jesus was next, followed by keeping him in that light of intuition from a conscious voice. Now we ask you to let that light affect other people.

“Do you see how the spread of heavenly light is working through the world, helping build the heavenly kingdom? Author, soon the people you think about in life will be seen from Jesus’ heavenly perspective. This is because you search for him in love.”

## Chapter Eleven

“When you force the issue of strategizing in one’s life, it is not of passion anymore. The immortal spirit of dominance in you comes out if you want to control the outcomes of events. This is a protection of how events will occur.

“The outcomes that life presents are often mysterious. They should be explored with an intuitive prayer through the Holy Ghost. By this, I mean that the Holy Ghost will help you understand the heavenly remarks as it dwells in your heart and, therefore, your surroundings.

“Author, there is a mistake in that the Holy Ghost will speak for you. The Holy Ghost will magnetize your tongue and the words will come out of you as inspiration, but you must allow this exploration of emotions to occur. Let me explain.

“The Holy Ghost will not replace your resistance while you try to control yourself. Instead, the Holy Ghost understands when God is working through you and the surroundings. Let the nature of the Holy Ghost nurture your emotions—the universe is a nurturing universe, after all.

“This is what we have witnessed countless times in your life and other people’s lives. They live so contained in their own identities and thoughts that they are trapped in a mental prison of their own design. Free yourself of that prison by exploring the intuitive feelings

you process. God is guiding you at this moment. Let him speak and let the words fall out onto this paper. Let God understand his persuasion.”

God said, “There are two types of people in how they address me. Those who welcome my input and those who are afraid of what they might become or how I may change them. The input I often share is of love. Sometimes, I do discipline my children for their beliefs. The discipline is to carry on and transform their identities or personalities. This transformation is for their betterment. Just think of when you were out of my conversation, Author. I brought you into my fold when you were in a hellish mental prison. And for that, you are in a better place to explore my nurturing conversations.

“The input that I share then is of discovery. In the heavens, we need you to allow this exploration and nurturing of intuitive feelings to guide your behavior. In part, it helps shine a light in the world; in part, it helps others identify that light and agree with the heavens. But there is another reason—the heavens need their place in this world to help the creation story along.

“The creation story that you encounter is to be embraced.

“The creation story is the beliefs that the heavens hold for you to explore. These creationist ideas will liberate you from your mental prison. They help you escape due to the way the perspective is transformed to explore the creation story. The heavens nurture you here.

“Author, the creation story is my Word, as your God. I will help you understand those ideas that are put forth

for you to understand. The connection between people is one such idea that can transform your perspective from that mental prison. Let me explain.

“Connecting people through Jesus Christ occurs as tunnels of light are created. These connections are from the creation storyteller himself. Jesus wants you to understand that to truly connect with others, you must master yourself first. This heart, above all else, is then a way to enter Jesus into the relationship.

“Author, when Jesus is available to talk to you, he also works within your soul to help understand that others need your love too. When you decide to think of others and connect to them, you are wishing them happiness and love. Therefore, the connections are to make others feel particularly important.

“If you keep this mindset to transform yourself from a mental prison, one where self-analysis is part of your immortal spirit, you can make others feel important. You can make others feel important because you care about them and love them. This brings Jesus into the creation story for others as well.

“Having a dialogue with Jesus as the centerpiece of the relationship significantly helps address concerns about who is more important in the relationship. This burden of who is the rock to address the relationship concerns frequently is alleviated because the Lord will help narrate and transform the souls involved in the story.

“Do you understand how not indulging in controlling behaviors can transform your mental prison? The

outlook can be similar, yet the perspective shifts from internalizing your pain to connecting with others, making them feel special.

“This is the first step of love from the heart. Jesus allows us to discuss difficult conversations. Jesus helps warrant when to express concerns. Trust in the Holy Ghost to help you magnetize your tongue and speak in accordance with this connection to the surroundings.

“Author, to connect to the surroundings, you need to also respect the surroundings. Respect that the other people may need time with Jesus themselves to understand the creation story.

“There is a much larger piece of intuition that can be addressed here. The intuitive part of prayer will help others to realize your intuitive beliefs. Do you understand how dreams are imagined, but tell us about our surroundings? Sometimes we imagine ideas, and forcefully try to control an outcome, but by imagining an outcome and asking through the heart for Jesus’s advice is a more trustworthy route.

“By allowing yourself to visualize an outcome and asking yes and no questions to Jesus through the heart, you can feel your intuition respond. Remember, the intuitive answer, if agreed upon, is felt in the stomach. If the answer is no, the intuitive prayer stays in the heart.

“Author, guiding your imagined ideas can be the angels trying to tell you about your surroundings. This estimation of where connections are forged and can be strengthened then is helped by asking intuitive advice.



Author, the connection from the Lord to yourself is being balanced with love on the apex in the surroundings.

“The question you may have is, *How do you make the Lord Jesus Christ feel special and important?* He is working through your relationships now, and the tunnels of love and light are being constructed with the angels. The way to help establish his love is to continue to address his place in your behavior. Allow his place in the heart and mind.

“Do you understand that the mental prison is now a place where love exists with other people? Your intuitive mind is creating a place where heaven’s garden can flourish, and the light that shines within you is love being fed into you through the soul.

“Remember to offer thanks to Jesus. Remember to begin the dialogue with him to observe his thoughts, and to surrender to the Holy Ghost.

“This transformation shows you how Adam was to live in the garden of paradise.

“Relax into the ability to transform your mind to accommodate these connected universes. The light that is provided through spirit will ultimately nourish all your love in embracing a new identity.

“Your heart is special in that it will understand how light, love, and laughter all intersect at this moment. The imagination of a new world to embrace is connecting to your mind.

“We have discussed showing others how to be transformed by God through your own actions before; now you are building the relationships you have through their

own ideas of themselves. You are helping them enjoy their experiences with Jesus at the heart of the conversations. You are being brilliant to share what Jesus has for us in this creation story.

“Unification toward one story—Jesus’s master plan—is the end result.

“Currently, there are many universes, with each person seeing from their own perspective. But now the tunnels are connecting more universes together and creating a new conscious element to the intuitive prayer.

“Author, those that sin may need to be disciplined for their own good, yet there is an allowance to come to the table and feast on the heavenly delight of being unified into Jesus’s conscious reality.

“There is plenty of room to grow into this garden of paradise.

“Do you not yet understand about the love Jesus has already shared? Do you not understand that his passion was to redeem sin? In moments of a connected and unified reality, the baseline of heaven is difficult to understand for a reason. Do you think many will be willing to transform their own conscious reality to embrace the connected idea of giving away their lives to love their surroundings?

“This is what Jesus asks. You are on the threshold of his imagined creation story for you in your surroundings. Now you get to live it. Enjoy it. And never forget this moment.

“Author, Jesus knows how you will encourage others through your story to welcome people into their own gardens. Live out this reality.”

## Chapter Twelve

“Author, there is a sense of urgency in this review of practice to become familiar with me as your savior. However, remember I chose this moment to unearth the steps in the process of how to meet me in my kingdom,” Jesus began.

“I have acknowledged and will continue to acknowledge one item for this series of dialogues between the heavens, myself, God the Father, and you. The mention of the space in your mind, which is a cube of virtual reality, is good and wholesome. The fact that your senses are connected through your brain is okay; however, it is not me that creates the story of your purpose. Do you understand that the projection of your virtual reality is like a cage that you live in, set apart from the heavens on Earth through your animalistic choices? We can say that I have entered this virtual reality as I established my kingdom in your virtual universe. I have returned to cognitive thought for your awareness. This is as I promised you.

“Author, there is no similar answer in any resounding correspondence besides the one we are having now between you and me, your savior. You now have several methods to be aware of me, and you have made a conscious effort to reach heaven through the spiritual projection of your heart’s intuition. And through your heart’s conscious recognition, you have followed the

light shown to you so you can recognize me in the world around you. However, this direct embodiment of me, your savior, is in your mind now as well.

“I bring you back to heaven on Earth as I continue to develop my creation story for you. I bring you back to a time where it is good and whole to be of my faith.

“Let me explain how this occurs. I sat on my throne, listening to all bound by time say to me that they adore the feeling of peace in themselves that I bring. That sinless attitude was of goodness and worth praise. I sacrificed for my children to have this amount of goodness in their hearts and bodies; however, I saw many people misuse the grace given through the devil’s influence, and often they failed to return to me after receiving that grace.

“So when you were tempted by the devil, I was surprised that you still fought with it in my loving mercy. The devil still roamed, but I wanted to face the devil as you fought it through love, light, and laughter. To face the devil once and for all, I needed to meet it in the mind or the universes in which it was imprisoned.

“Therefore, it is of this time in the world I returned.

“The idea that you welcome me into my heavenly kingdom for a return visit is too great. Consider the idea of me in your universe as part of my prophecy. Again, you have not created this outcome—I wanted to challenge you to remain faithful to your savior in this lifetime.

“So remain faithful. Think of me walking beside you. Remind yourself of the joy that can be shared in the world. This joy is akin to laughter.”

Jesus said, "Author, do remain humble. I ask you to share herein your thoughts on how to be good and honest with others. Share your thoughts now with other people."

Jesus paused for a moment, and I reflected how I brought myself in conversations earlier to Jesus and thought of what he would do. In this moment of reflection, I could establish my emotional congruence to that message, and with Jesus in my thoughts in permanence, I decided that joy would forever be in my soul. This merriment is the good news that Jesus would prophesize."

Jesus continued, "Author, it is of your mind and body that you put the work of creation into effect. We will make the world a far better place with your knowledge of laughter. Please include in this story how you plan to include laughter into the world. That message is then the light, love, and laughter that spreads my favor.

"It is in merriment that I find you now. It is in grace as well. This is the equalization between your soul and my spirit. The apex is where I am between us in your universe."

## Chapter Thirteen

“Author, there is a new day upon us. The heavens have shown you how to reveal God’s mercy and plans upon the surroundings, and for that it is now a time to rejoice. To be benevolent and merciful to others is required. It is now your part to understand that the irritations that may surface are insignificant for your friendships. These friendships are where you most enjoy your time because they flourish in your space.

“I know this may feel foreign, but the mercy you show yourself comes through not condemning other individuals. You are showing them your support in adversity, yet you still know that they are special. This is the support and protection one may have while befriending others. Be a crutch for others to lean on when they are ignorant of the evils they desire in life. Support their goodness. They are one with the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit through your presence.

“God almighty will bless his children. They run through the gardens of paradise first and promise other children to be on the way. They grow fast and strong. These individuals who know how to love one another then become the servants of angels.

“The Lord will shine his light in the world to save the human race once more. And through the judgment of souls, Jesus will be at his throne in the heavens watching as his will unfolds.

“Author, be aware of the love you spread. The serendipitous moments that occur from all things, human, animal, and plant will live in accordance to the same time perspective. The universe will completely reunite into a paradise on Earth and in heaven such that the souls of heaven will be embraced once more as the truth—that the heavenly kingdom will be the one faith. Among all peoples there will be knowledge of the Christ.

“This inclusion of faith among all people will allow peace to spread for many years.

“I tell you this because the level of forgiveness and mercy you show is your single strength through any disruptive moments you may witness. These moments of evil are those who have yet to appreciate the other person in their surroundings. Those who sin are evil in that they think in a way that they are still imprisoned in their minds.

“They think for themselves and curse the actions that they find painful. Yet the moment you offer them grace will be a moment that they can forgive.

“These ideas are good. They are the way of the next world of Jesus Christ. In the moments where love is extended, the garden is received. This paradise is all-encompassing. Use your testimonial to the one true living God. He is returning.

“God will come before us in a moment where all can appreciate their benevolence and share it with the world. They will feel with outstanding goodness the emotions of pain set free. The pain will not have their ears. They



will listen and deceive no one—not themselves and not others. They will understand their faults. And they will learn to share love.

“In those moments where repentance occurs for their sins, they will find a place on Earth and in heaven. However, it is up to each person to find the courage to continue to love other people, as the example has shown.

“This benevolence is an ideal. Those who forget it and return to their prison will find their master of hell. That is, the judgment will come for their souls if they succumb to the temptation to be reclusive and stay withdrawn from the love of humanity that Jesus carries.

“Upon this moment of trial and tribulation, the souls will enter their mourning for the wicked, and the wicked will be swallowed up.

“In each heart, there will be a moment where the person decides how to proceed. Their truth will either lead them to the garden of paradise or the tumult of hell-fire.

“Author, we discuss this moment here with you because you have synchronized the timing of the universes into one single place. The garden of paradise will be realized with Jesus as king.

“Author, the wicked will not suffer in the hellish underground as their existence is demolished. They will be stung by the angels and the light that is sourced for all to see. The angels will agree upon all heavenly realms into one ground. One paradise.

“The angels will say that the trumpets have been blown, and those who allow their hearts to cherish love

will support their fellow men. They will cherish them and love them the way that all people can enjoy.

“This is the Word from God—the love of the Word of God is carried forward first. The neighbors are loved second. The Word of God is cherished third by the acts of faith in replication of understanding—you will listen and love the Word through your actions taken. It is this awareness that God finds merry. Then all the worlds of all the universes will replicate this harmony, and the perspectives of humankind will enjoy one another.

“As people synchronize with each other under God’s Word, you will understand something much finer. The rhythm of the Word is faster or slower paced depending on how it is received. These small disruptions of pace can signify how the Word should be embraced.

“Worry about this later though in your stories. The pace of heaven reflects upon the garden is good enough to say in this answer. That the pace of the Word received is part of the intuitive conversations between humankind and God’s heavenly wants.

“Therefore, Author, there is good and peace through the land of paradise. This is what God wants.

“There is much more in this narrative of the world over peace, but Jesus will come with his angels triumphant. This miracle of uniting each separated person into one body, his body, on Earth as it were in heaven, will exist.

“Author, there is a moment when faith brings us to understand all this is necessary. The one body in heaven and Earth will demonstrate the existence of how the

Earth is required no longer. But this is not that time. You will have the garden back of the Earth as a paradise for humankind.

“With this moment of faith you will understand something new about other people. The truth in their words will electrify your senses. Not only intuitive prayer, but in the sense that you gravitate to the truth as they appreciate the Word of God. This interaction between people will help you understand why they believe. This passion will carry through a resonating synchronicity among humankind until consciousness of the Lord is represented through humankind.

“This attitude of trust and love through the light of God’s Word is then a holy place to be. The Word of God will be an illustration of how best to believe in God, your neighbors, and yourself. The acts of the apostles will be a reminder of this very first understanding. Now the world will be filled with believers.

“Holy is the world at that point, and the darkest days of the world will see a furious hellfire to finish the world into one body with the heavens. Mary will crush the head of the serpent at that time as the real time and place of the world will merge into a fascinating illustrious reality of light.

“Author, the world will come to another spiritual understanding, and this understanding will be in my love with the Father, so much that I will raise my children to be my friends and guardians, as angels may have this place now.

“This is where the world will be understood. This is where all natural and spiritual will return to God. The heavens will be the only understanding, and the hell-fire that gave way to a fraction of space and time will be nothing. And forgotten.

“Is this enough to believe in? That the light scholarship of natural reality is only to help reassure you of that commitment of love for the Father?”

## Chapter Fourteen

The Holy Father spoke, “It is far more important to understand why Jesus came in this moment than to appear satisfied with the outcome. Ask him how he can help you navigate the course of your lifetime. He may instruct you through impossible ideas or offer sympathy and grace, but remember it is from myself that he speaks. He is my Word returned, and he offers truth you can trust.”

The Holy Father continued, “Through this cocreation story, you will understand the complexities that have now become simpler—complexities that are the hidden aftermath of events buried in memory. The toll on oneself is when you relive the memories and fail to shake free from the aftermath of pain or suffering.

“Jesus will help you understand how to live your life and will provide you with much care. I wonder if you now understand his spiritual purpose with you—he manifested in conscious thought to help you in your universe, abiding there as a savior. His spiritual progress is perfection, as he is my son. However, he does help lift you in spirit to new heights.

“Therefore, the apex of the worlds between your understanding and his forgiveness can be found. This will be your spiritual lesson today.”

The Holy Father continued, “Author, he loves you as no one else can. His love is bright and cheerful. He has

the energy of all things in unity and shows you his worth in hope, and his knowledge far surpasses those around you. Continue to focus on your heart. Continue to believe in your own mind. Make this relationship important for both you and him. This is the grace that you have—to speak to him about your troubles and understand how his love remedies all things together.

“Author, I wonder if you understand that as your healing increases and you become stronger, you make the world a better place through light, love, and laughter. Therefore, enjoy the love that is shared. Let that draw you into conversation with the savior first, and then remain in your heart to understand this reflection. You can understand how this becomes a cyclical conversation as it starts in your heart and extends to the heavens. Then, once you were grounded in the heavenly kingdom, you understood the spirit in the surrounding people. This then encouraged Jesus to come to your universe, and in that conversation you regained space in your heart.

“This then is how you share the world with me in a cocreation story. You will understand that suffering can be healed and that joy returns to the surroundings.”

God said, “Author, do not worry anymore about the sentiments of people whom you do not control. Once you foster a relationship with Jesus, it will be easier to foster a relationship with others in your surroundings. This is how it works.

“So begin to direct your inquiries to and ask advice from Jesus. He will join you in your heart and thoughts.

He will come into the world and help you navigate this lifetime.”

The Holy Father continued, “Author, you understand that the future is known only through the heavens? Then ask us what is before you so you may prepare for the heavenly realm.

“You will see much suffering after you accept the reality of the world. Where you help is the preparation for the heavenly kingdom. We in the heavens help much with the suffering of others in life and in the heavens. And in that help, we understand that we are united.

“Some may understand their own control—allow them this with boundaries. But there will be genuine moments where you can offer assistance through the path you have forged with Jesus walking beside you.

“Do you understand how his influence will lead to your greater spiritual purpose? That his influence will have several outcomes for your soul in heaven? That future in the heavens is known only through the heavens?

“Author, go explore and ask questions. Reflect on this spiritual relationship with your savior, and remain at peace, free from the disease of seeking approval from others in a materialistic way. Choose to be in the moment and aid the lost and suffering. In good time, you will understand how excited you are for each day.

“Author, I enjoy your approval and welcome you into a lifetime that is worth your spiritual growth.”

The Holy Father finished with a powerful lesson: “If you ever feel lost, remember your heartbeat. That is the uniqueness of you. It is a sound only you know, and one

that is different from others and resonates beyond your immediate body. Remember your conscious voice and purpose through attunement to your heart.”



## Chapter Fifteen

“Author, this is where the world does not exist. This is my knowledge of the human population throughout time. The world is history, and I will keep my love for those who forged their identity in my love.

“Their awareness of love was my passion, and in these moments where the light of mine was given through the Word, my son Jesus showed his understanding. You will believe in Jesus because you are forged in my love.

“The memory of these actions is amusing and endearing. That you would sacrifice for him, me, and the heavenly kingdom is awesome. It is truly my love that helped guide you into these moments, but it was trust that you had in that intuitive guidance that gave you confidence. I understand that you could believe in many different forms of the heavenly realm and myself as a God, but the truest person whom I enjoyed watching and supporting through the lifespan of the human race was Mary. This is because of her faith—a faith that allowed her to bear my son, who lived in true unification with my Word and love.

“The world will understand in time what you have done with this writing. Now give the reflection on your lifetime to understand me in all you have done. How have you grown in these moments? Where can you iden-

tify my inclination of support from angels, the written Holy Words, or my intuitive love?

“Where did you nourish yourself in this universe from me? This time we shared is a sacred memory for both of us, and loving me through reflection is grand. It is expansive in thought, but it does make me remembered. It echoes in my perspective as well. And for that grace of forgiving yourself and others in the human race, I offer you something greater than any other memory. This servitude, for me, is a noble rank. Believe in the Word I have given you. Believe in your place in heaven. I love you.”



## Also by Todd M. Anderson

### **Reflections on Faith**

Believe  
Connections  
Garden of Harmonies  
King and Prophet  
Kingdom Building  
Light Scholars  
Never Give In  
Paradise  
Personality Program  
Super Conscious  
The Light and Filament  
The Way of Man  
Universal Records

### **Theater of Everyday Life**

Mirrors for Reflection  
The Anti-Personality  
The Battle Between Good and Evil

Competitive

**Standalone**  
Reflections on Faith

